# The Gospell by Saint Matthew.

## The first Chapter.

1 The genealogie of Christ from Abraham. v. 17. The marriage of his mother Mary. 20. The Angell satisfieth Iosephs minde. 21. The interpretation of Christs name.

THis is the booke of the generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac. Isaac begate Iacob. Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren.

3 Iudas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar. Phares begat Esrom, Esrom begat Aram.

4 Aram begat Aminadab, Aminadab begat Naasson, Naasson begat Salmon.

5 Salmon begat Boos of Rachab, Boos begat Obed of Ruth, Obed begat Iesse.

6 Iesse begat Dauid the king, Dauid the king begat Solomon of her that was the wife of Vrie.

7 Solomon begat Roboam, Roboam begat Abia, Abia begat Asa.

8 Asa begat Iosaphat, Iosaphat begat Ioram, Ioram begat Ozias.

9 Ozias begat Ioatham, Ioatham begat Achaz, Achaz begat Ezechias.

10 Ezechias begat Manasses, Manasses begat Amon, Amon begat Iosias.

11 Iosias begate Iechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Iechonias begat Salathiel, Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 Zorobabel begat Abiud, Abiud begat Eliakim, Eliakim begat Azor.

14 Azor begat Sadoc, Sadoc begat Achim, Achim begat Eliud.

1.par.3.d 15 Eliud begat Eleazer, Eleazer begat Matthan,
4 Reg.18 Matthan begat Jacob.

16 Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne Jesus, that is called Christ.

17 And so all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteene generations: and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ are fourteene generations.

18 The birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded privily to put her away.

20 But while he thought these things, behold the Angell of the Lord appeared unto him in a dreame, saying, Joseph thou sonne of David, feare not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 She shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for hee shall save his people from their sinnes.

22 (All this was done, that it might be fulfilled, Esa.7.b which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying
Psal.2.b 23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuell, which is by interpretation, God with us.)
Mat.9.c

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angell of the Lord had bidden him, and he tooke his wife:

Mat.5.d 25 And knew her not, till shee had brought forth
28.d her first borne sonne, and called his name Jesus.
Psal.100

## The ii Chapter.

1 The time and place of Christs birth. 14 Christ fleeth into Egypt. 16 The young children are slaine.

WHen Jesus was borne in Bethlehem, a citty of Juda, in the dayes of Herod the king: Behold, there came wise men from the East, to Hierusalem,

2 Saying

2 Saying, where is he that is borne king of the Iewes? for we haue seene his starre in the East, & are come to worship him. Num. 24.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all the citie of Hierusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chiefe Priests and Scribes of the people together, he demaunded of them where Christ should be borne.

5 And they said vnto him, At Bethlehem in Iurie: for thus it is written by the prophet.

6 And thou Bethlehem in the land of Iuda, art not the least among the princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall there come a captaine, that shall gouerne my people Israell. Mich. 5. Iohn 7.

7 Then Herode when he had priuily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently, what time the starre appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go & search diligently for the young childe, and when ye haue found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, & lo the starre which they saw in the East went before them, till it came and stoode ouer the place wherein the young childe was.

10 When they saw the starre, they reioyced exceedingly with great ioy:

11 And went into the house, and they saw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell downe & worshipped him: & when they had opened their treasures, presented vnto him gifts, gold & frankincence & myrre.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame that they should not returne to Herod, they departed into their owne countrey another way.

13 When they were departed, beholde the Angel of the Lord appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise and take the young childe, and his mother, & flee into Egypt, and bee thou there till I bring

Ose 11 2 Num 24. worde: for it will come to passe, that Herode shal seeke the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he tooke the young child & his mother by night, & departed into Egypt.

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my sonne.

16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slue al the children that were in Bethlehem and in all the coastes there of, as many as were two yeeres old and vnder, according to the time, which he had diligently searched out of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the Prophet, saying,

18 In Rama there was a voice heard, lamentation weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for Jere 31 c her children, and would not bee comforted, because they were not.

19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dreame to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, arise, and take the young child, & his mother, & go into the land of Israel: for they are dead f. which sought the young childs life.

d 21 And he arose, and tooke the young child, & his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iury in the roome of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parties of Galilee.

23 And when he was come thither, he dwelt in a city which is called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, He shall be called a Nazarite.

## The iii. Chapter.

Iohns preaching, office, life, baptisme 7. reprehending of the Pharisees, 13 and baptising of Christ in Iordan.

In

1 IN those dayes came Iohn the Baptist preaching in the wildernesse of Iurie. Marke 1 Luke 3 a

2 And saying, Repent yee: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand. Iohn 3 d

3 For this is hee, that was spoken of by the Prophet Esaias, saying, The voyce of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare yee the way of the Lord, make his paths streight. Marke 1

4 This Iohn had his rayment of Camels haire and a letherne girdle about his loynes, his meate was locusts and wilde honie.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem, and all Iurie and all the region round about Iordan.

6 And were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes. 4 Reg 14 Mark 1 a

7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptisme, hee said vnto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the anger to come? 1 Reg 14 25 Luke 3 b

8 Bring forth therefore fruites meete for repentance.

9 And bee not of such minde, that yee would say within your selues, We haue Abraham to our father. For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham. Math 7 c Luke 3. b

10 Euen nowe is the axe also put vnto the roote of the trees: Therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe & cast into the fire. Mark 1 a Iohn 1 d Luke 3 c

11 I baptize you in water vnto repentance: but he that commeth after me is mightier then I, whose shooes I am not worthy to beare: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12 Whose fanne is in his hand & he will throughly purge his floore, & gather his wheat into his garner: but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire. Luke 3 c Mark 1 b

13 Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Iordane vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him.

14 But Iohn forbad him, saying, I haue need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 Jesus answering, sayde vnto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus when hee was baptized, went vp
Mark 1.b straight way out of the water: and, loe the heauens
Luke 3.d were opened vnto him, and Iohn saw the spirite of
Iohn 1.c God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.
Esai 42.a 17 And loe, there came a voice from the heauens,
Mat 17.b saying, This is my deerely beloued sonne, in whom
Mark 1.b I am well pleased.
Luke 3.d

## The iiii. Chapter.

2 Pet 1.b 1 Christ fasteth and is tempted. 18, Hee calleth Peter, Andrew, Iames, and Iohn.

THen was Jesus led vp of the spirite into the wil-
Mark 1.b dernesse, to be tempted of the deuill.
Luke 4.b 2 And when he had fasted fortie dayes, and fortie nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he sayd, If thou be the sonne of God, commaund that these stones be made bread.

Deut 8.a 4 But he answered, and sayd, It is written, Man
Luke 4.a shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery word that
Sap.16.c proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the diuell taketh him vp into the holy citie and setteth him on a pinacle of the temple.

Psal 92.a 6 And saith vnto him, If thou be the sonne of God cast thy selfe downe: for it is written, that hee shall giue his angels charge ouer thee, & with their handes they shall lift thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone.

7 Jesus sayd vnto him, It is written again, Thou
Deut.6.a shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
Luke 4.b 8 Againe the Deuill taketh him vp into an exceeding high mountaine, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them.

9 And saith vnto him, All these things will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

Deut.6.c 10 Then saieth Jesus vnto him, Get thee hence
and 10.d behinde me Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt wor-
Luke 4.b ship the Lord thy God, & him only shalt thou serue.

11 Then the deuill leaueth him, and behold, the an-

gels came and ministred vnto him. 1.Reg 19

12 When Iesus had heard that Iohn was deliuered vp, he departed into Galilee. Mark 1.b

13 And when he had left Nazareth, he went and dwelt at Capernaum, which is a citie vppon the sea coast in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim. Mark 1.b

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, Esay 9.a

15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea beyond Iordan, Galilee of the Gentiles.

16 The people which sat in darkenesse, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death light is sprung vp. Mark 1.b Mat. 1.b

17 From that time Iesus began to preach and to say, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand. Mat. 3.a Mat. 1.b

18 And Iesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon which was called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea (for they were fishers.)

19 And he saith vnto them, follow me: and I will make you fishers of men. Iere 16.c Eze 47.b

20 And they straight way left their nettes, and followed him.

21 And when he was gone forth from thence, hee saw other two brethren, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nettes: and he called them

22 And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

23 And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospell of the kingdome, and healing all manner of sicknesse, and all manner of disease among the people. Luke 5.b

24 And his fame spread abroade throughout all Syria: and they brought vnto him, all sicke people that were taken with diuers diseases, and gripings, and them that were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunatike, and those that had the palsie, & he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Hierusalem, and from Iurie, and from the regions that liebepond Iozdane.

The v Chapter,

In this Chapter and in the two next following, is conteined the moſt excellent and louing Sermon of Chriſt, in the mount Which ſermon is the very key, that openeth the vnderſtanding into the law, in this fift Chapter eſpecially 3 preacheth of the eight beatitudes, or bleſſings.

A 1 When he ſaw the multitude, hee went vp into a mountaine. and when hee was ſet his diſciples
Luke 6 d Eſai 66 a and 7. a came to him.
2 And when he had opened his mouth, hee taught them, ſaying.
3 Bleſſed are the poore in ſpirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.
4 Bleſſed are they that mourne: for they ſhall be
Iere 32 c comforted.
5 Bleſſed are the meeke: for they ſhall inherite the earth.
6 Bleſſed are they which doe hunger and thirſt after righteouſnes for they ſhalbe ſatisfied
7 Bleſſed are the mercifull: for they ſhall obteine mercie.
8 Bleſſed are the pure in heart: for they ſhal ſee God
9 Bleſſed are the peace makers, for they ſhall be called the children of God.
10 Bleſſed are they which haue beene perſecuted
1 Pet 3. c 4. cc for righteouſneſſe ſake: for theires is the kingdome of heauen.
11 Bleſſed are ye when men ſhall reuile you, and perſecute you and ſying ſhall ſay all maner of euill ſay
Actes 5 g ing againſt you, for my ſake
12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen. For ſo perſecuted they the prophets,
Mark 9 g Luke 4 g which were before you.
Ioan 2. c 13 Ye are the ſalt of the earth: But if the ſalt be come vnſauery, wherein ſhall it be ſalted? It is thence
for

sooth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men. Marc 4 b Luke 7 a and 11 a

14 Ye are the light of the world, A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid. 1 Pet 2 c

15 Neither doe men light a candle and put it vnder a bushel but on a candlestick, and it giueth light to al that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your father which is in heauen. Math 1 b and 2 c

17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill Luke 16 d Esai 40 c

18 For truely I say vnto you, Till heauen and earth passe, one iote or one title of the lawe shall not scape till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least commaundements, & shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall doe and teach so, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen. Iames 2 b Ezech 18

20 For I say vnto you, Except your righteousnesse shall exceede the righteousnesse of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heauen. Exod 20 Luke 17 f Deut 5 b

21 Ye haue heard that it was told to them of olde time, Thou shalt not kill: whosoeuer killeth shall be in danger of iudgment.

22 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer is angry with his brother vnaduisedly shalbe in danger of iudgment. & whosoeuer shall say vnto his brother Racha, shall be in danger of a counsell: but whosoeuer shall say thou foole, shall be in danger of hell fire. Iob 42 b

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee.

24 Leaue there thy gift before the altar, and goe thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine aduersary quickly whiles thou art in the way with him: least at any time the aduersary

deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the minister and then thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say vnto thee, thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast paide the vttermost farthing.

Exod. 20 Rom 13. 27 Ye haue heard that it was said vnto them of old time thou shalt not commit adultery.

Ecclu. 41 Iob 31. a Mark 9. g 28 But I say vnto you that whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her alreadie in his heart.

29 If thy right eye offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee, that one of thy members should perish, and not that al thy body should be cast into hell.

Deut 24 a 31 It hath beene sayde, whosoeuer will put away his wife, let him giue her a writing of diuorcement.

Mat 19 a Mark 10. 32 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer doth put away his wife, except it be for fornication causeth her to commit adultery: & whosoeuer marrieth her that is diuorced committeth adultery

33 Againe, ye haue heard that it hath beene sayde vnto them of old time, Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe vnto the Lord thine oathes.

Luke 1 9 a

34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is Gods seate:

James 5 d Esai 5 6 a Mat. 23. c 35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstoole: neither by Hierusalem, for it is the citie of the great king.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thy head becau'e thou canst not make one haire white or blacke.

37 But let your communication, be yea, yea: nay, nay: For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill.

38 Ye haue heard that it hath beene sayde, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth

Exo. 21 c Deut 19. 39 But I say vnto you, that ye resist not euil: but whosoeuer will giue thee a blowe on the right cheeke turne

turne to him the other also. Leuit. 24
40 And if any man will sue thee at the lawe, and Luke 6.
take away thy coat, let him haue thy cloke also.
41 And whosoeuer will compell thee to goe a mile
goe with him twaine.
42 Giue to him that asketh thee: and from him
that would borow of thee, turne not thou away.
43 Ye haue heard that it hath bin said, Thou shalt
loue thy neighbour: and hate thine enemie.
44 But I say vnto you, loue your enemies, bless Leuit. 16
them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, Matt. 22.
pray for them which hate you, and persecute you:
45 That ye may bee the children of your father Rom. 12.
which is in heauen: for hee maketh his sunne to Leuit. 19
rise on the euill and the good, and sendeth raine on
the iust and vniust.
46 For if ye loue them that loue you, what reward Luke 6.
haue ye? Do not the Publicans euen the same?
47 And if ye salute your brethren onely, what sin-
gular thing do ye? Doe not also the Publicanes like
wise?
48 Ye shall therefore be perfect, euen as your father Leuit. 19
which is in heauen is perfect.

The vi. Chapter.

1 Of almes 5 prayer, 16, of fasting. 19, Hee forbiddeth
the carefull seeking of worldly things.

TAke heede that ye doe not your almes before men, M
to the intent that yee would bee seene of them, or
else you haue no reward of your father which is in
heauen.
2 Therefore when thou doest thine almes, doe not
blowe a trumpet before thee, as hypocrites doe, in
the synagogues, and in the streetes, that they might
be esteemed of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue
their reward.
3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand
know what thy right hand doth:
4 That thine almes may be in secrete, And thy fa-
ther which seeth in secret, himselfe shall reward thee
openly.

5 And

2 Reg 18 Esai 29 d

5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the Synagogues and in the corners of the streetes, that they may bee seene of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

4 Reg. 4 f

6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy closet. & when thou hast shutte the doore, pray to thy father which is in secret, & thy father which seeth in secrete, shall reward thee openly.

26 Esay 1. d

7 But when ye pray, babble not much as the Heathen do: For they thinke they shall be heard, for their much babbling sake.

Rom. 8. d

8 Be not ye therefore like vnto them: for your father knoweth what things ye haue neede of, before ye aske of him.

Luk. 11. a

9 After this manner therefore pray ye. O our father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy name.

10 Let thy kingdome come, Thy will be done, as well in earth as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our daily bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debtes, as we forgiue our debters.

13 And lead vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euill: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for euer and euer, Amen.

14 For if yee forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly father shall also forgiue you.

Mat. 18. Mark. 11

15 But if ye forgiue not men their trespasses: no more shall your father forgiue you your trespasses.

Esai 57 a Mat. 6 d Iere. 17 d

16 Moreouer when ye fast, be ye not of an heauie countenance, as the hypocrites are: for they disfigure their faces, that they might appeare vnto men to fast Verily I say vnto you they haue their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, annoint thine head, and wash thy face:

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy father which is in secret: and thy father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 Lay not vp for your selues treasures vpon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt and where

theeues

theeues breake through and steale.

20 But lay vp for your treasures in heauen, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, & where theeues do not breake through and steale. Luk.12.c Eccle.29.b

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

22 The candle of the body is the eye: wherefore if thine eye be single, all thy body shalbe full of light

23 But if thine eye be wicked, all thy body shall be full of darknes. Wherefore, if the light that is in thee be darknes, how great is that darknes? Luk.11.c

24 No man can serue two masters: for either hee shall hate the one, and loue the other, or else hee shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Yee cannot serue God and Mammon. Luk.12.c Luk.16.c

25 Therefore I say vnto you: Be not careful for your life, what ye shal eate or drinke: nor yet for your body what ye shall put on: is not the life more worth then meate, and the body then rayment.

26 Behold the foules of the ayre: for they sow not neither do they reape, nor carry into barnes, yet your heauenly father feedeth them. Are yee not much better then they? Luk.12.c Psa.145.d 1.Pet.5.c

27 Which of you by taking of carefull thought can adde one cubite vnto his stature? Leuit.12

28 And why care ye for rayment? Learne of the lillies of the field, how they grow: they wearie not themselues with labour, neither do they spinne. Lillies.

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his royalty, was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so cloath the grasse of the field, which though it stand to day, is to morow cast into the ouen: shall hee not much more doe the same for you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying: What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke? or wherewith shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentils seeke) for your heauenly father knoweth that ye haue need of all these things.

33 But ſeeke ye firſt the kingdome of God, & his righteouſnes, and all things ſhall be added vnto you.

34 Care not then for the morrow: for the morrow ſhall care for it ſelfe: Sufficient vnto the day, is the euill thereof.

## The vii. Chapter.

1 He forbiddeth fooliſh and raſh iudgement. 5 He reproueth hypocriſie.

1 IVdge ye not, that ye be not iudged.

Luke 6. f
Rom. 2.
Luke 6. f

2 For with what iudgement yee iudge, ye ſhalbe iudged: and with what meaſure ye mete, it ſhalbe meaſured to you againe.

3 Why ſeeſt thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceiueſt not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

4 Or how wilt thou ſay to thy brother: Suffer me, I will caſt out a mote out of thine eye: and behold the beame is in thy owne eie.

5 Thou hypocrite, firſt caſt out the beame out of thine owne eye, and then ſhalt thou ſee clearely to caſt out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

6 Giue not that which is holy vnto the dogges, neither caſt ye your pearles before ſwine: leaſt they treade them vnder their feet, & turning againe al to rent you.

25

Iere. 29. c
Iohn 16.
Luke 11.

7 Aske ye, and it ſhalbe giuen you: ſeeke, and ye ſhall finde: knock and it ſhall be opened vnto you.

8 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that ſeeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh it ſhall be opened.

9 What man is there of you, if his ſonne aske bread will he giue him a ſtone.

10 Or if he aske fiſh, will he giue him a ſerpent?

11 If ye then being euill know to giue your children good gifts: how much more will your father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

Eccli. 31
Tob. 4. c
Luke 6. c
Luke 13.

12 Therefore all things, what ſoeuer ye would that men ſhould doe to you, doe yee euen ſo to them: for this is the law and the Prophets.

13 Enter ye in at the ſtraight gate: for wide is the

gate

gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction and many there be that go in thereat.

14 Because straite is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth vnto life, and few there be that finde it.

15 Beware of the false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues. Deut. 13. 2. Iohn. 8

16 Ye shall know them by their fruites: Do men gather grapes of thornes? Or figs of thistles?

17 Euen so euery good tree, bringeth forth good fruite: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euil fruite. Luke 6. 8

18 A good tree cannot bring forth bad fruite neither can a bad tree bring forth good fruite. Mark. 12

19 Euery tree that bringeth not forth good fruite is hewen downe, and cast into the fire. Matt. 3. d

20 Wherefore by their fruites ye shall know them Luke 5. b

21 Not euery one that saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heauen, but he that doth the will of my father which is in heauen. Matt. 25

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue we not prophecied through thy name? & through thy name haue cast out deuils? and done many great workes through thy name? Luke 6. g and 14. c Acts 19.

23 Then will I confesse vnto them, That I neuer knew you: depart from me, ye that worke iniquity Psal. 6. b

24 Therefore, whosoeuer heareth of me these sayings, & doth the same, I will like him vnto a wise man, which built his house vpon a rocke. Luke 13. Luke 6. g

25 And the raine descended, and the floudes came, and the windes blewe, and beate vpon the house: and it fell not because it was grounded on a rocke.

26 And euery one that heareth of me these sayings and doth them not, shalbe likened vnto a foolish man which built his house vpon the sand: Iam. 1. b

27 And the raine descended, and the floudes came, and the windes blew, and beate vpon that house, & it fell and great was the fall of it. Eze. 13.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonied at his doctrine Mark 4. c Luke 4. c

29 For

29 For he taught them as one hauing power, and not as the Scribes.

## The viii Chapter.

1 Christ cleanseth the leper, 24 stilleth the sea and wind, 29 And driueth the deuils out of the possessed into the swine.

When hee was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

Luke 5 c
Mat. 1. d

2 And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lorde if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

3 And Jesus, when he had put forth his hand touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

Leu. 43 a

4 And Jesus saith vnto him, See thou tell no man but goe, shewe thy selfe to the Priest, & offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a witnesse vnto them.

Luke 7. a
Iohn 4. g

5 And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion beseeching him.

6 And saying, Lorde my seruant lyeth at home sicke of the palsie, grieuously pained.

26

7 And Jesus saith vnto him, I will come, & heale him.

8 And the Centurion answered, and said, Lorde, I am not worthy, that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe, but speake the worde only, and my seruant shal be healed.

Ps. 107.

9 For I also my selfe am a man set vnder authoritie, hauing souldiers vnder me: And I say to this man, Go and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Do this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard these things, hee marueiled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith no not in Israel.

11 I say vnto you that many shall come from the east and west, and shal rest with Abraham, and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdome of heauen.

Luk. 13. f
Mal. 1. g

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into vtter darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe thy

wap, ſ as thou haſt beleeued, ſo be it done vnto thee. And his ſeruant was healed in the ſelfe ſame houre.

14 And when Ieſus was come into Peters houſe he ſaw his wiues mother laid and ſicke of a feuer. C

15 And hee touched her hand, and the feuer left her: and ſhe aroſe and miniſtred vnto them. Mark. 1 a Luke 4. f

16 When the euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were poſſeſſed with diuels: and hee caſt out the ſpirits with a word, and healed all that were ſicke.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias the prophet ſaying, He tooke our infirmities, and bare our ſicknes. Eſay 4. b 1 Pet 2 b

18 When Ieſus ſaw great multitudes about him he commanded them to depart vnto the other ſide.

19 And a certaine Scribe came, and ſaid vnto him, Maiſter, I will follow thee whereſoeuer thou goeſt. Luke 9. g

20 And Ieſus ſaieth vnto him, The foxes haue holes and the birdes of the ayre haue nests, but the ſonne of man hath not where to reſt his head.

21 And another of his diſciples ſaid vnto him, Lord ſuffer me firſt to goe, and burie my father. M Luke 9. g

22 But Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Follow me, and let the dead burie their dead.

23 And when hee entred into a ſhip, his diſciples followed him.

24 And beholde, there roſe a great tempeſt in the ſea, inſomuch that the ſhippe was couered with the waues: but he was aſleepe. Mark 4 b Luke 8. c

25 And his diſciples came to him, and awooke him, ſaying, Lord ſaue vs: we periſh.

26 And he ſaith vnto them, Why are ye fearfull O ye of little faith? Then he aroſe & rebuked the windes and the ſea, and there followed a great calme. Iob 26. 6 Pſal. 107

27 But the men marueiled, ſaying, What maner of man is this, that both the windes and the ſea obey him?

28 And when he was come to the other ſide, into the countrey of the Gergeſenes, there met him two

Luke 8. d possessed with deuils, comming out of the graue, so
cie fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.
29 And behold they cried out, saying, O Iesus thou
Mark 5 a sonne of God, what haue we to do with thee? Art
Luke 8 d thou come hither to torment vs before the time?
y 1 Cor 5 b 30 And there was a good way off from them an
Mark 8 c heard of many swine feeding.
31 So the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast
vs out, suffer vs to go away into the heard of swine.
32 And he said vnto them, Go. Then went they
out, and departed into the heard of the swine, and be-
holde, the whole heard of swine rushed headlong in-
to the sea, and perished in the waters.
33 Then they that kept them, fled and went their
waies into the citie, and told euery thing: and what
Acte 16 g was done of the possessed with the deuils.
34 And beholde, the whole citie came out to meete
Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him,
that he would depart out of their coastes.

The ix. Chapter,

a He healeth the palsie y and calleth Matthew from the
custome.

9 A And he entered into a ship, and passed ouer and
came into his owne citie.
1 And beholde, they brought to him a man sicke
Mark 2 a of the palsie, lying in a bed: and when Iesus saw
Luke 5 d the faith of them, he saide vnto the sicke of the palsie
Sonne, be of good cheare, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.
2 And beholde, certaine of the Scribes saide with-
in themselues, This man blasphemeth.
4 And when Iesus saw their thoughts he said,
Luke 5 e wherefore thinke ye euill in your hearts?
Actes 3 b 5 Whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes be for-
and 9 f giuen thee: or to say, Arise and walke?
Mark 2 b 6 But that ye may know that the sonne of man
Luke 5 c hath power to forgiue sins in earth, (Then saith he to
Iohn 5. b the sicke of the palsie.) Arise, take vp thy bed and
goe vnto thine house.
25 7 And he arose and departed to his house.
8 But when the multitude saw it, they maruelled,
and

and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custome: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

10 And it came to passe as Jesus sat at meate in his house, behold many Publicans also and sinners came, and sate downe with Jesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your maister with Publicans and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them They that are whole need not a physition but they that are sicke. Osee 6 c Math 12 a

13 Goe ye and learne what that meaneth, I will mercie and not sacrifice: For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. ℭ

14 Then came the disciples of Iohn unto him saying, Why doe wee and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not. Mat 11 b Mark 2. c

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride chamber mourne, as long as the bridgrome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bridgroome shalbe taken from them, and then shall they fast. Luk 11 f

16 No man putteth a peice of new cloth in an olde garment, for then the peice taketh away somewhat from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither doe men put new wine into olde bottles els the bottles breake and the wine runneth out, and the bottles will perish: but they put new wine into new bottels, and both are preserved together.

18 While he spake these things unto them, behold there came a certaine ruler of the Synagogue, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead but come, and lay thy hand upon her and she shall live. Mark 5 a Luke 8 f

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

Marke 5e Luke 8f Leuit 15c

20 And behold a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, came behind him, and touched the hemme of his vesture.

21 For she said within her selfe, If I may touch but euen his vesture onely, I shalbe safe.

22 But Iesus when he had turned him about and saw her, said, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee safe. And the woman was made whole from that same houre.

23 And when Iesus came into the rulers house of the synagogue, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noyse

Marke 5d Luke 8g

24 He said vnto them, Giue place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth: they laughe him to scorne

John 15b

25 But when the people were put forth hee went in and tooke her by the hand: and the maide arose.

26 And the fame of this went abroad into all that land.

27 And when Iesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying and saying, O thou sonne of Dauid haue mercie on vs.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came vnto him: and Iesus saith vnto them Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? They said vnto him Yea Lord.

Math 8b

29 Then touched he their eies, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: and Iesus straight charged them saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spred abroad his name in all that land.

Marke 7a Luk 11b Mat 12b Mark 3b Luk 11b

32 As they went out behold they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill.

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe spake, and the multitude marueiled, saying, It was neuer so seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, Hee casteth out the deuils, through the prince of the deuils.

35 And Iesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the

the Gospell of the kingdome, and healing euery sick-
nesse, and euerie disease among the people Mark 6 d

36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moued
with compassion on them, because they were destitute Luk 1 e 6
and scattered abroad, as sheepe hauing no shepheard.

37 Then saith he vnto his disciples, The harueſt
truely is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harueſt that
he will thrust forth labourers into his harueſt.

The x Chapter.

1 Christ sendeth out his twelue Apostles to preach in Iurie

AND when hee had called his twelue Disciples, he
gaue them power against vncleane spirits, to cast M
them out and to heale all manner of sickenesse and all Mark 6 b
manner of disease. Luke 6 d

2 The names of the twelue Apostles, are these:
The first, Simon, which is called Peter and Andrew
his brother, James the sonne of Zebede, and John
his brother.

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Mat- Mark 6 d
thew, which had bin a Publicane, James the sonne of
Alphee, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Taddeus

4 Simon the Cananite, and Judas Iscariot, which 25
also betrayed him. Actes 8 d

5 Iesus sent forth these twelue when he had com-
maunded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Mark 6 b
Gentils, and into the citie of the Samaritanes enter Luke 9 c
ye not.

6 But goe rather to the lost sheep of the house of
Israel.

7 As ye goe, preach, saying, That the kingdome 1. Times
of heauen is at hand.

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead,
cast out deuils: Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue.

9 Possesse not gold, nor siluer, nor brasse in your
purses.

10 Nor pet scrip toward your iourney: neither
two coates, neither shoes, nor yet a staffe: (for the
workeman is worthy of his meate.)

11 But to whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shal come enquire who is worthie in it, and there abide, till ye goe thence.

Luke 9 a and 13 c

12 And when ye come into an house, salute the ¶ same.

Mark 6 d

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthie, let your peace returne to you againe.

14 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor will heare your preaching: when ye depart out of that house, or that citie shake of the dust of your feete

Luke 10 a

15 Verily I say vnto you, It shalbe easier for the land of the Sodomites & Gomorrheans, in the day of iudgement, than for that citie.

16 Behold, I send ye forth as sheepe in the mids of wolues: be ye therefore wise as the serpents, and harmelesse as the doues.

Mark 13 Luk 12 c Iohn 16 b

17 But beware of men: for they shall deliuer you vp to councels, & shall scourge you in their synagogues

18 And ye shalbe brought to the head rulers, and kings for my sake, in witnesse to them, and to the Gentiles.

Math 3 b Luke 12 a Exod 4 b

19 But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought, how, or what ye shall speake: for it shal be giuen you in the same houre what ye shall speake.

20 For it is not ye that speake, but the spirit of your father he it is, which speaketh in you.

Mich 7 b

21 The brother shall deliuer vp the brother to death and the father the sonne: and the children shall rise against their fathers and mothers and shall put them to death.

Math 24 a

22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my names sake: but he that endureth to the end, shalbe saued.

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another: for verily I say vnto you, ye shall not end al the cities of Israel, til the son of man be come.

Marke 2 c Actes 8 a and 14 a

24 The disciple is not aboue the master, nor the seruant aboue his lord.

Luke 6 f

25 It is inough for the disciple, that he be as his master is, and that the seruant be as his lord is. If they

they haue called the Lord of the house Beelzebub, how much more shal they call them of his houshold. Mark 3 c Luke 8 c and 12 a

26 Feare them not therefore, for there is nothing close, that shall not be opened: and nothing hid that shall not be knowne.

27 What I tell you in darkenesse, that speake ye in the light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses. ℭ

28 And feare ye not them which kill the body, and are not able to kill the soule: But rather feare him which is able to destroy both body and soule in hell. Luk 12 a

29 Are not two little sparrowes sold for a farthing And one of them shall not light on the ground without your father.

30 Yea, euen all the haires of your head are numbred.

31 Feare ye not therefore ye are of more value then manie sparrowes. Math 8 b Luke 9 c and 12 b

32 Euery one therefore that shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my father, which is in heauen.

33 But whosoeuer shall denie me before men, him wil I also denie before my father which is in heauen

34 Thinke not that I am come to send peace into the earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword Luke 12 g

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against the mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. ℱ Mich 7 a

36 And a mans foes shalbe they of his owne houshold.

37 He that loueth Father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me, and he that loueth sonne or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. Luk 14 c

38 And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth me, is not worthy of me Math 16 c

39 He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it

40 He that receiueth you receiueth me, and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. Mark 8 d

41 He that receiueth a Prophet, in the name of

Luk 12 d apzophet, shall receiue a prophets reward: & he that
Luke 9 c receiueth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous
Iohn 13 c man, shall receiue a righteous mans reward.
3 Reg 18 42 And whosoeuer shall giue vnto one of these lit-
Matth 9 f tle ones to drinke a cup of cold water onely in the
name of a disciple, verily I say vnto you, he shall in
no wise loose his reward.

## The xi. Chapter.

1 Christ preacheth & Iohn Baptist sendeth his Disciples vn-
to him 7 Christes testimonie concerning Iohn.

AND it came to passe, that when Iesus had made
an end of commanding the twelue disciples, he
departed thence to teach, and to preach in their cities.
2 When Iohn had heard in the prison the workes
of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,
3 And said vnto him, Art thou he that should come?
or doe we looke for another?
4 Iesus answered and said vnto them, Goe and
shew Iohn againe those things which yee doe heare
Mat 15 and see:
5 The blind receiue their sight, the halt doe walk,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare the dead
Esai 61 a are raised vp, and the poore haue the Gospel preached vnto them.
6 And happie is he whosoeuer shall not be offended
in me.
7 And as they departed, Iesus began to say vnto
Luk 11 d the multitude concerning Iohn, What went ye out
into the wildernesse to see? a reede shaken with the
winde?
8 Or what went ye out to see? A man clothed in
soft raiment? Behold, they that weare soft clothing
are in kings houses.
9 But what went yee out to see? a prophet? yea,
Malac 3 a I say vnto you, and more excellent then a Prophet.
Mark 1 a 10 For this is he of whome it is written, Behold I
send my messenger before thy face, which shall pre-
pare thy way before thee.
11 Verily I say vnto you, Among them that are
borne

borne of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: Notwithstanding, hee that is lesse in the kingdome of heauen is greater than he. Luk 16 d

12 From the dayes of John the Baptist vntill now the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, and the violent plucke it vnto them.

13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied vnto John.

14 And if yee will receiue it, this is Elias which was for to come.

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. Luke 8 b

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? Mala 3 d
It is like vnto little children sitting in the markets, Iohn 1 c
and calling to their fellowes. Luke 7 c

17 And saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: We haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not sorrowed.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, Luke 1 c
and they say he hath a deuill.

19 The sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, & a wine bibber and a friend vnto Publicanes and sinners: and wisedome was iustified of her children. D

20 Then began he to vpbraide the cities wherein most of his mightie workes were done, because they repented not.

21 Woe vnto thee Corazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes which were done in you had beene done in Tyre and Sydon they would haue repented long a goe in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shall be easier for Tyre and Sydon at the day of iudgment, than for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which hast beene lifted vp into heauen, shalt be brought downe to hell: For if the mightie workes which haue bin done in thee, had bin done among them of Sodome they would haue remained vntill this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier for the land of Sodom in the day of iudgment, than for thee.

25 At

25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thanke thee O Father, Lorde of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent and hast shewed them vnto babes.

Math 28. Luck 10 c 26 Euen so, O father, for so was it thy good pleasure.

27 All thinges are giuen to me of my Father: and no man knoweth the sonne, but the father: neither knoweth any man the father saue the sonne, and he to whomsoeuer the sonne will open him.

John 3 d John 7 d and 8 c

28 Come vnto mee, all ye that labour for, and are laden, and I will ease you.

Eccles 6

29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learne of me for I am meeke and lowly of heart: and ye shall finde rest vnto your soules.

1 John 5

30 For my yoake is easie, and my burden is light

## The xii Chapter.

1 Christ excuseth his disciples which Plucke the eares of corne.

AT that time, Jesus went on the Sabboth dayes through the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne and to eate.

M

2 But when the Pharisees sawe them they said vnto him, Beholde, thy disciples doe that which is not lawfull to do on the Sabboth day.

Mark 2 d

3 But he said vnto them, Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him.

Deut 23

4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eate the shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, but onely for the Priests?

1 Sam 21

5 Or haue ye not reade in the law, how that on the Sabboth dayes, the Priestes in the temple prophane the Sabboth, and are blameles?

9 But I say vnto you, that in this place is one greater than the temple.

7 But if ye had knowne what this meaneth, I will

will mercie and not sacrifice, yee woulde not haue condemned the guiltlesse.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord of the Sabboth day. Mark 2 f Osee 9 b

9 And when he was departed thence, hee went into their Synagogue.

10 And behold there was a man which had his hand dried vp, and asked him, saying. Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabboth daies: that they might accuse him. Mark 3 a

11 And he said vnto them. What man of you will there be that shall haue one sheepe. and if it fall into a pit on the Sabboth day, will hee not take hold of it and lift it out?

12 How much more then is a man better then a sheepe? Wherefore it is lawfull to do well on the Sabboth daies. Luke 14

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thy hand: and he stretched it forth, and it was restored whole. like as the other. Deut 12

14 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a counsell against him, howe they might destroy him.

15 But when Jesus knewe it, hee departed thence and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all. ℭ

16 And charged them that they should not make him knowne:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, Mark 3 a Iohn 1 e

18 Behold my child whome I haue chosen, my beloued, in whome my soule well delighteth: I will put my spirite vpon him, and he shall shew iudgment to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voice in the streetes. Esai 42 a

20 A bruised reede shall he not breake, and smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he send forth iudgment vnto victorie. ℬ Luk 11 b

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust (sed 13 The was brought vnto him one that was possessed with

with a deuil, blind and dumbe: and he healed him, in somuch that the blinde and dumbe both spake & saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and sayd, Is not this that sonne of Dauid?

Mat.12 d 24 But when the Pharisees hearde it, they saide,
Mark.3.c This fellow doth not cast out the diuels, but by Beel
Luk.11.c zebub the prince of the deuils.

25 But when Jesus knew their thoughts, he sayd vnto them, Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and euery citie or house deuided against it selfe shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, then were he deuided against himselfe, how shall then his kingdome endure?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shal be your iudges.

28 But if I cast out the deuils by the spirit of God
Luk.11.c then is the kingdome of God come vpon you.

29 Or else how can one enter into the strong mans house, and spoile his goodes, except he first bind the strong man and then will spoile his house?

30 He that is not with me, is against me. and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 Wherefore I say vnto you. All maner of sinne
Mat.3.d and blasphemie shall be forgiuen vnto men: but the
Luk.12.b blasphemie against the holy spirit shal not be forgiuen vnto men.

1.Reg.2.c 32 And whosoeuer speaketh a worde against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not bee forgiuen him, neither in this worlde, neither in the
Mat.7.c
Luke 6.f worlde to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good: Or else make the tree euill, and his fruit euill: for the tree is knowne by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, howe can yee speake good things, when ye your selues are euill? For out
Psa.40.c of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
Luke 6.f

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the hart bringeth

bringeth forth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure, bringeth forth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, That of euery idle worde that men shall speake, they shall giue account thereof in the day of iudgement.

37 For of thy wordes thou shalt be iustified, and of thy wordes thou shalt be condemned. 2.Reg 12 Luk.19.d

38 Then certaine of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees answered him, saying, Master, wee will see a signe of thee. Mark 8.b

39 But hee answered, and said vnto them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, and there shal no signe be giuen it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas. Luk.11.d Mat.15.d Mark 8.b John 6 b

40 For as Ionas was three dayes & three nights in the whales belly, so shall the sonne of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth. Ionas 2 c Ionas 3 a

41 The men of Niniue shall rise in the iudgment with this nation, and condemne it, because they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and beholde here is one greater then Ionas.

42 The Queene of the South shall rise in the iudgment with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the vttermost parts of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, in this place is one greater then Solomon. G Luk.11.d 2.Reg 11 2.par.9 a

43 When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Luk.11 a

44 Then hee saith, I will returne into my house from whence I came out. And when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himselfe seuen other spirits worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Euen so shall it be also vnto this froward generation. 1.Pet 2 a Heb.6.a.

46 While he yet talked to the people, Behold his mother and his brethren stood without desiring to speake with him. Mark 3.d Luke 8.d

47 Then

47 Then one ſayd vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without deſiring to ſpeake with thee.

Iohn 15. 48 But he anſwered, and ſaid vnto him that told him, Who is my mother? Or who are my brethren.

49 And when hee had ſtretched forth his hand toward his diſciples, he ſaid: Behold my mother and my brethren:

50 For whoſoeuer ſhall doe the will of my father which is in heauen, the ſame is my brother, and ſiſter and mother.

## The xiii. Chapter.

3 The parable of the ſeede. 24. And of the tares.

A

Mark 5 c THe ſame day when Ieſus was gone out of the houſe, he ſate by the ſea ſide.

2 And greate multitudes were gathered togither vnto him, ſo that hee went into the ſhip, and ſate, and the whole multitude ſtoode on the ſhore.

3 And hee ſpake many things to them in parables ſaying, Behold, the ſower went forth to ſowe.

4 And when he ſowed, ſome ſeede fell by the wayes 23 ſide: and the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 Some fell vpon ſtonie places, where they had not much Earth: and anon they ſprange vp, becauſe they had no deepeneſſe of earth:

Marke 4 a Luke 7. b 6 And when the ſunne was vp, they caught heate and becauſe they had not roote, they withered away.

7 Againe ſome fell among thornes: and the thornes ſprung vp and choked them.

8 But ſome fell into good ground: & brought forth fruite, ſome an hundred fold, ſome ſixtie folde,, ſome thirtie fold.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

Math 13. Marke 4 b Luke 8. b and 19. d 10 And his Diſciples came, and ſayd vnto him, Why ſpeakeſt thou vnto them by parables?

11 Hee anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, Becauſe it is giuen vnto you, to know the ſecretes of the kingdome of heauen, but vnto them it is not giuen.

12 For whoſoeuer hath, to him ſhalbe giuen and hee

hee shall haue moze abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away euen that he hath

13 Therefoze spake I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they heare not, neither doe they vnderstand. Esay 6.c

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias which saith, With the eare ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand: and seeing, ye shall see, and not perceiue. Mark 4.b Luke 8.b Iohn 12.b Act 28.f Rom 11.

15 Foz this peoples heart is waxed grosse: and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they closed: leaste at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their heart, and should conuerte that I might heale them.

16 Blessed are your eyes, foz they see: and your eares, foz they heare.

17 Verily I say vnto you, that many Prophets and righteous men haue desired to see those thinges which ye see, and haue not seene: and to heare those thinges which ye heare, and haue not heard. Luk 10.c 2.Pet.1.c

18 Heare yee therefoze the similitude of the sower.

19 When one heareth the wozd of the kingdome and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth that euil, and catcheth away that which was sowne in his heart: this is hee which receiued seed by the way side

20 But he that receiued the seed into stonie places the same is he that heareth the wozde, and anon with ioy receiueth it: Mark 4.b Luke 8.b

21 Yet hath he not roote in himselfe, but dureth foz a season: foz when tribulation oz persecution ariseth because of the wozde, by and by he is offended

22 He also that receiued seed into the thoznes, is he that heareth the wozd, and the care of this worlde, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choake vp the wozd, and so is made vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued seede into the good ground is he that heareth the wozd, and vnderstandeth it which also beareth fruite: and bringeth foozth some

some an hundred folde, some sixty fold, some thirtie fold.

Mark.4.c 24 Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying: The kingdome of heauen is likened vnto a man, which sowed good seed in his field.

25 But while men slept, his enemie came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and had brought forth fruite, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the housholder came, and said vnto him, Sir, diddest not thou sow good seede in thy field, from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, The malicious man hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we go, and gather them vp?

29 But he said, Nay: least while ye gather vp the tares, ye roote vp also the wheate with them.

30 Let both growe together vntill the harueste: and in time of harueste, I will say to the reapers, Gather yee together first the tares, and binde them in bundels to burne them: but carie the wheate into my barne.

Mark.4.c 31 Another parable put hee forth vnto them, saying. The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seedes, But when it is growne, it is the greatest among herbes and is a tree, so that the birds of the ayre come and make their nests in the branches thereof.

Luk 13.c 33 Another parable spake hee vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman tooke and hid in three peckes of meale, till all were leauened.

Mark 4.c 34 All these things spake Iesus vnto the people in parables, and without a parable spake he not vnto them.

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will speake forth things which haue beene

Psal.78.a

kept

kept secret from the foundation of the world Mark 4.

36 Then Jesus when he had sent the people away, went into the house and his Disciples came unto him, saying. Declare unto us the parable of the tares, and of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the sonne of man.

38 The field is the world. The good seed, these are the children of the kingdome: But the tares are the children of the wicked.

39 And the enemy that sowed them, is the deuill. The harvest is the end of the world. The reapers be the Angels.

40 Euen as the tares therefore are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shall it be in the ende of this world. Apoc. 14.

41 The sonne of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend and them which doe iniquitie.

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shalbe wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine as the Sunne in the kingdome of their father. Who hath eares to heare, let him heare. Deut 12. Sapi 3. b 1. Cor 15.

44 Againe the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure hid in the field: the which when a man hath found, hideth and for ioy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath and buyeth that field.

45 Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a merchant man seeking goodly pearles:

46 Which when he had found one precious pearle, went and sold all that he had and bought it.

47 Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a net that is cast into the Sea, and gathereth of all kinde

48 Which when it was full, the fishers drew to land, and sat downe, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the Angels shall come forth, and seuer the badde from among

mong the iust.

Matt. 22 and 25.a 50 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shalbe waiting and gnashing of teeth.

51 Iesus saith vnto them, Haue ye vnderstood all these things? They say vnto him, yea Lord.

52 Then he said vnto them, Therefore euery scribe which is taught in the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto a man that is an housholder which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

Mark 6.b Luk 4. c 53 And it came to passe that when Iesus had finished these Parables, hee departed thence.

54 And when he came into his owne country, he taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they

Mark 3 a John 6 c were astonied and said, Whence commeth this wisedome and mightie workes vnto him?

55 Is not this the Carpenters son? Is not his

Mark 6.a Luke 4.d mother called Mary? and his brethren Iames and

John 5. f Ioses, and Simon and Iudas?

56 And are not all his sisters with vs? whence hath he then all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus said vnto them. A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne country, and in his owne house.

58 And he did not many mighty workes there, because of their vnbeleefe.

The xiiii Chapter.

Io Iohn is taken and beheaded, 19. Christ feedeth fiue thousand men with fiue loaues and two fishes,

AT that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame

Mark. 9 b Luke 9.a of Iesus,

2 And said vnto his seruants, this is Iohn the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore great workes do shew forth themselues in him.

3 For Herod when he had taken Iohn, he bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his bro-

Mark. 6 c ther Philips wife.

Luke 3.d Leu. 17 c 4 For Iohn said vnto him, It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.

Mat. 21. 5 And when he would haue put him to death, he feared

feared the people, because they counted him as a Prophet. Gen 40. d

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Wherefore he promised with an oathe, to giue her whatsoeuer she should aske. 25 Mark 5. c

8 And she being before instructed of her mother, said, Giue mee here Iohn Baptistes head in a platter.

9 And the king was sory: nevertheless for the oathes sake, and them that sate also at the table, he commaunded it to be giuen her:

10 And sent a Tormentor, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a platter and giuen to the damsell: and shee brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and tooke vp his body, and buried it, and went and told Iesus.

13 When Iesus heard of it, he departed thence into a ship, into a desart place out of the way: when the people had heard thereof, they followed on foote out of the cities. Mark 6. d Luke 9. d Iohn 6. a C

14 And when Iesus went forth he saw much people, and was moued with mercy toward them, and he healed their sicke.

15 And when it was euening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the houre is now past, let the people depart, that they may goe into the villages, and buy them victuals.

16 But Iesus said vnto them, They haue no need to goe away: giue ye them to eate.

17 They say vnto him, We haue not here but fiue loaues and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And when hee had commaunded the people to sit downe on the grasse and had taken the fiue loaues and the two fishes, and lifted vp his eyes toward heauen, hee blessed: and when hee had broken them,

he gaue the loaues to his disciples: and his disciples to the people.

20 And they did all eate, and were sufficed: and they tooke vp (of the fragments that remained) twelue baskets full.

Mark 6.f 21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousande men, beside women and children.

Iohn 6.b Luk 6.c 22 And straight way Iesus constrained his disciples to get vp into a ship, and to goe before him vnto the other side, while he sent the people away.

23 And when hee had sent the people away, he went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: and when night was come, hee was there himselfe alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, & was tost with the waues: for it was a contrary wind.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, That it was a spirit, and they cryed out for feare.

27 But straight way Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good cheere: it is I, be not afraid.

28 Peter answered him, & said, Lord if it be thou bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he sayde, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the shippe, he walked on the water to goe to Iesus.

30 But when he saw a mightie winde, hee was afraid: and when he began to sincke, hee cryed, saying,

Mark 6.g Lord saue me.

31 And immediatly Iesus, when he had stretched forth his hand, caught him, and sayd vnto him, O thou of litle faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the shippe, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were in the shippe, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 And when they were gone ouer, they came into the land of Genazeret.

36 And

35 And when the men of that place habde knowledge of hym, they sent out into al the country rounde about, and brought vnto him all that were sicke.

36 And besought him that they might touch the hemme of his garment onely: and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

## The xv. Chapter.

1 Christ excuseth his disciples, and rebuketh the Scribes and Pharisees.

THen came to Iesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were come from Hierusalem, saying, A Mark 7.a

2 Why doe thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they washe not their hands when they eate bread.

3 But he answered and sayde vnto them why doe yee also transgresse the commaundement of God by your tradition.

4 For God commaunded, saying, Honour thy father and thy mother, And he that curseth father or mother let him die the death. Exod 1 c Mark 7.a

5 But ye say, Whosoeuer shall say to his father or his mother, By the gift that is offered of me, thou shalt be helped.

6 And so shall he not honor his father or his mother, And thus haue you made the commaundement of God of none effect by your tradition. Exod 21 Ephes 6. Deut 5.b

7 Ye hypocrites, full well did Esaias prophecie of you saying,

8 This people draweth nigh vnto me with their mouth and honoreth me with their lips: howbeit their heart is farre from me. B

9 But in vaine doe they worship mee, teaching doctrines, precepts of men. Esai 29 g

10 And when hee had called the people to him, he sayd to them. Heare and vnderstand. Iere 23.g Mark 7.b

11 That which goeth into the mouth defileth not the man: but that which commeth out of the mouth defileth the man.

12 Then came his Disciples, and said vnto him, knowest thou not that the Pharisees were offended

after they heard this saying?

13 But hee answered and sayd, all manner of plan-
ting, which my heauenly father hath not planted,
shalbe rooted vp.

14 Let them alone, they be blinde leaders of the
blind, If the blind leade the blinde, both shall fall in-
to the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter, and sayd vnto him, De-
clare vnto vs this parable.

16 Jesus sayd, Are ye also yet without vnderstan
ding?

17 Doe not ye yet vnderstand, that whatsoeuer
entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is
cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the
mouth, come from the hart and they defile the
man.

19 For out of the heart proceed euill thoughts,
murders, adulteries, whoredoms, theftes, false wit-
nesse, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man: But
to eat with vnwashen handes defileth not a man.

21 And Jesus when he went thence, departed in-
to the coastes of Tyre and Sydon.

22 And behold, a woman of the Cananites which
came out of the same coastes, cryed vnto him, saying
Haue mercy on me, O Lord thou sonne of Dauid, my
daughter is grieuously vexed with a deuill.

23 But he answered her not a word, And his Dis-
ciples came and besought him, saying, Send her a-
way, for she cryeth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent but
vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Then came shee and worshipped him, saying,
Lord helpe me.

26 But hee answered, and said, It is not meete to
take the childrens bread, and to cast it to litle
dogs.

27 And she sayde, Yea Lorde, for the little dogs al-
so eate of the crummes which fall from their masters
table

table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it done vnto thee euen as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole euen that same houre.

29 And Jesus when he had departed from thence, came nigh vnto the sea of Galilee, & when hee was gone vp into a mountaine, he sat downe there.

30 Then great multitudes came vnto him, hauing with them those that were lame, blind, dumbe maymed, and others many, and cast them downe at Jesus feete and hee healed them:

31 Insomuch that the people wondred, when they saw the dumbe speake the maymed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blinde to see: & they glorified the God of Israel. Esay. 35.

32 Then Jesus called his Disciples vnto him, & said, I haue compassion on the people, because they haue nothing to eate: and I will not let them depart fasting, least they faint in the way. Mark 8.

33 And his Disciples say vnto him, Whence should we get so much bread in the wildernes as to fulfill so great a multitude:

34 And Jesus saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? And they say, seuen, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commaunded the people to sit downe on the ground. Mark 6

36 And when he had taken the seuen loaues, and the fishes and had giuen thankes, he brake them, and gaue to his Disciples: and his Disciples gaue them to the people.

37 And they did all eat and were fulfilled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen baskets full.

38 And they that did eate, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And when hee had sent away the people, he tooke shippe and came into the coastes of Mag-

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 The Phariſees require a token. 6 Ieſus warneth his Diſciples of the Phariſees doctrine.

THe Phariſees alſo with the Sadducees, came and tempting deſired him that he would ſhew them a ſigne from heauen.

Mark 8.b
Iohn 6.d
Luke 11.
Luk 12.g

2 He anſwered and ſayd vnto them, When it is euening, yee ſay it will be fayre weather: for the ſkie is red.

3 And in the morning it wilbe foule weather to day: for the ſkie is lowring red. O ye hypocrites ye can diſcerne the the outward appearance of the ſkie, but can ye not diſcerne the ſignes of the times?

Mark 12
Mark 8.b
Luk 11 d
Iohn 6 a
Ionas 2 a

4 A froward and adulterous nation requireth a ſigne: and there ſhall no ſigne be giuen vnto it, but the ſigne of the Prophet Ionas. And hee left them and departed.

5 And when his Diſciples were come to the other ſide of the water, they had forgotten to take bread with them.

Luk 12.2

6 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto them, Take heede and beware of the leuen of the Phariſees, & of the Sadducees.

26

7 And they thought in themſelues, ſaying, For we haue taken no bread with vs.

8 Which when Ieſus vnderſtood, hee ſaid vnto them, O yee of little faith, why thinke you within your ſelues, becauſe ye haue brought no bread?

Marke 8.

9 Doe not yee perceiue, nor remember thoſe fiue loaues of the fiue thouſand, and how many baſkets tooke ye vp?

Mark 15

10 Neither the ſeuen loaues of the foure thouſand, and how many baſkets tooke yee vp?

11 How is it that yee do not vnderſtand, that I ſpeake it not vnto you concerning bread, that yee ſhould beware of the leuen of the Phariſees and of the Sadducees?

12 Then vnderſtood they how that hee bad not them beware of the leuen of the bread: but of the doctrine of the Phariſees and of the Sadducees.

When

13 When Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea, which is called Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, whom do men say that I the sonne of man am? Mark 8.
Luke 9.

14 They say, Some say, that thou art Iohn Baptist, some Elias, some Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He saith vnto them, But whome say yee that I am?

16 Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art Christ the sonne of the liuing God. Luke 9.
Iohn 6.

17 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, Happy art thou Simon Bar-Iona: for flesh and bloud hath not opened that vnto thee, but my father which is in heauen. Iohn 6.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my congregation: and the gates of hell shall not preuaile against it. 1 Cor. 10.

19 And I will giue vnto thee the keies of the kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt bind in earth shalbe bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose in earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Iesus Christ. Math 18

21 From that time forth beganne Iesus to shewe vnto his Disciples, how that he must goe vnto Hierusalem and suffer many things of the Elders and high Priestes and Scribes, and must be killed, and raised againe the third day. Mark 8.
Luke 9.

22 And when Peter had taken him aside, hee began to rebuke him saying, Lord, fauour thy selfe, this shall not be vnto thee.

23 But he turned him about, and said vnto Peter, Go after me Satan, thou art an offence vnto me: for thou sauourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

24 Then said Iesus vnto his disciples, If any man will goe after me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall loose it: and whosoeuer shall loose his life for my sake Mark 10.
Luke 9.

shall

Mark 8.d shall finde it.
Iohn 6 d 26 For what is a man profited, if hee shall win the whole world, and loose his owne soule? Or what shall a man giue for a ransome of his soule?
Rom. 2 b 27 For the sonne of man shall come in the glory of his father with his angels: and then shall he reward euery man according to his workes.
Marke 8 d Luke 6 c 28 Verily I say vnto you, There bee some standing here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the sonne of man comming in his kingdome.

The xvii. Chapter.

a The transfiguration of Christ, 15 hee healeth the lunatike

A

Marke 5 a Luke 8 c And after sixe daies, Iesus taketh Peter, Iames and Iohn his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high mountaine, out of the way.
Apoc 1.d 2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sunne, and his clothes were as the light.
3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses and Elias talking with him.
4 Then answered Peter, and said vnto Iesus Lord it is good for vs to be here: If thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.
Mat. 3 d and 12. b Etai 6 a Deut 18. 5 While he yet spake, behold a bright cloud ouershadowed them: and behold, there came a voice out of the cloude, which said, This is my beloued sonne in whome I am well pleased: heare ye him.
6 And when the disciples heard these things they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.
7 And Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.
8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they saw no man saue Iesus only.
9 And as they came downe from the mountaine Iesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, vntill the sonne of man be risen againe from the dead.
Mark 9.a 10 And his disciples asked him, saying, why then

say the scribes that Elias must first come? Mala 3.d

11 Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the sonne of man suffer of them. Mat 12.b

13 Then the disciples understoode that he spake unto them of Iohn Baptist.

14 And when they were come to the people, there came to him a certaine man, kneeling downe to him and saying, Mark. 9.c Luk 9.c

15 Lord, have mercie on my sonne, for he is lunatike and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire and oft into the water. Mark 9.d

16 And I brought him to thy Disciples, and they could not heale him. Luk 17.a

17 Jesus answered and sayde O faithlesse and perverse nation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me. D

18 And Jesus rebuked the devill, and hee departed out of him: and the child was healed euen that same time.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus secretly, and said, why could we not cast him out?

20 Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbeliefe: For verily I say unto you, if ye have faith, as a graine of mustard seede, ye shall say unto this mount taine, Remoue hence to yonder place and it shall remoue: neither shall any thing be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit, this kinde [illegible] and fasting.

22 While they were conuersant in Galilee, Jesus said unto them: It will come to passe, that the sonne of man shalbe betraid into the handes of men. Math. 16 and 20.c Mark. 8.d 9. and 10

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day shall he rise againe. And they were exceeding sorie. Luke 9. e

24 And when they were come to Capernaum they that received tribute money, came to Peter and said Doeth not your maister pay tribute?

25 He

25 He saith vnto him, Simon, what thinkest thou Simon: of whom doe the kings of the earth take tribute or toll? of their owne children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith vnto him, Of strangers: Iesus saith vnto him, then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, least we should offend them, goe thou to the sea, and cast an hooke, and take vp the fish that first commeth vp: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a peece of twentie pence: that take, and giue it to them for me and thee.

## The xviii. Chapter.

3 He teacheth his disciples to be humble and harmelesse,
6. To auoid all occasion of euill.

Marke 9. Luke 9.f

AT the same time came the disciples vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen?

2 Iesus called a little child vnto him, and set him

Mark 10. Luk 18.d

in the midst of them.

1. Pet. 2.

3 And said, Verily I say vnto you, Except yee turne, and become as little children, yee shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And whoso shall receiue such a little childe in my name receiueth me.

Mark 9.f Luk 17.a

6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the sea.

18 1 Cor. 11 Matt. 5.c Mark. 9.f

7 Woe vnto the world because of offences, it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 If thy hand or thy foote offend thee, cut them off and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed rather then thou shouldest, hauing two hands or two feete, be cast into

everlasting

everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out, & cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their Angels doe alwayes beholde the face of my father which is in heauen.

11 For the sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost.

12 How thinke yee? If a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leaue those ninety and nine and goeth into the mountaines and seeketh that which went astray.

13 And if it be so that he finde it, verily I say vnto you, he reioyceth more at that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray.

14 Euen so it is not the will of your father which is in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish. ¶

15 Moreouer, if thy brother shal trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he shall heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. Luk 17.c Leu. 19.d Eccle. 19 Deu. 19.

16 But if he shall not heare thee, then take yet with thee one or two; that in the mouth of two or three witnesses, euery word may be established. 2.Cor. 13 Heb. 10.

17 If hee will not heare them, tell it vnto the church, if he will not heare the church, let him be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publican. Mark 16.

18 Verily I say vnto you, whatsoeuer yee shall bind on earth shall be bound in heauē: & whatsoeuer ye shall loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

19 Again, truely I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree in earth as touching anything that they shall aske, it shalbe done for them of my father which is in heauen.

20 And where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then

21 Then came Peter vnto him, and saide, Lord, how oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I forgiue him? till seuen times?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, vntill seuen times: but vntill seuentie times seuen.

23 Therefore the kingdome of heauen is likened vnto a certaine man that was a king, which would take account of his seruants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him that ought him ten thousand talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and besought him, saying, Lord, haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that seruant, moued with pitie, loosed him, and forgaue him the debt.

28 But the same seruant went out, and found one of his fellowes, which ought him an hundred pence: and when he had laid handes on him, he tooke him by the throte, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellowe fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not, but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellowes saw what was done, they were very sorie, and came and told vnto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said vnto him, O thou wicked seruant, I forgaue thee all that debt, when thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest thou not haue compassion on thy fellow, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So like wise shall my heauenly father doe also

vnto

vnto you, if ye from your hearts forgiue not euery one his brother their trespasses

The xix Chapter,

1 Christ giueth answer concerning marriage 21, and teacheth not to be carefull. 22. not to loue wordly riches.

AND it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, hee gaue him from Galilee, and came into the coastes of Iury beyond Iordan. M

2 And a great multitude followed him, and he healed them there.

3 The Pharisees also came vnto him, tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for euery cause? G E

4 He answered and said vnto them, haue ye not read that he which created at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, For this cause shall a man leaue his father and his mother, and shall be knit to his wife: and they twaine shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh, let no man therefore put a sunder that which God hath coupled together.

7 They said vnto him, why did Moses then commaund to giue a writing of diuorcement, and put her away?

8 He said vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts, suffred you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so. D

9 I say vnto you, whosoeuer shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is diuorced, doth commit adultery.

10 His disciples say vnto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, then is it not good to marry.

11 But he said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this saying, saue they to whome it is giuen.

12 For there are some chaste which were so borne out of their mothers wombe: & there are some chaste which were made chaste of men, and there are chaste which haue made themselues chaste for the kingdome

kingdome of heauens sake. He that is able to receiue it, let him receiue it.

Mark 10. Luk. 18.d 13 Then were there brought vnto him yong children, that he should put his handes on them, and pray, and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus said vnto them, Suffer the yong children, and forbid them not to come vnto me: for to such belongeth the kingdome of heauen.

15 And when he had put his handes on them, he departed thence.

Mark 10. 16 And behold, one came, and said vnto him, good maister, what good thing shal I do, that I may haue eternall life?

Luk 18.d Ps. 118.c 17 He said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, and that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commaundements.

18 He saith vnto him, Which? Iesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Exo. 20. Deu. 5. b Rom. 13. Gal. 5. c Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The yong man saith vnto him, All these things haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet.

Mark 10 Luk. 12. d Matt. 6. c 21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect goe and sell thy substance, and giue to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come and follow me.

Mark 10. 22 But when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sory: for he had great possessions.

23 Then Iesus said vnto his disciples, Verily I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a Camell to goe through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard this, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, who then can be saued?

26 But Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them: With men this is impossible, but with God all things

are

are possible.

27 Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have left all, and followed thee, what shall we have therefore?

28 And Iesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that when the sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his maiestie, ye that have followed me in the regeneration, shall sit upon twelue seates, iudging the twelue tribes of Israel. Matt. 4.b Mark 10. Luke 8.f

29 And euery one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my names sake shall receiue an hundred folde, and shall inherite euerlasting life. Lak 22.c Deut. 33. Iob 32.c

30 But many that are first, shall be last, and the last shall be first. Matt. 23 Luke 3.c

## The xx. Chapter.

1 Christ teacheth by a similitude, that God is debter vnto no man. He teacheth his disciples to be lowly. 30. And giueth two blind men their sight.

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into the vineyard.

3 And when he went out about the third houre, he saw other standing idle in the market place.

4 And said vnto them, Goe ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you. And they went their way.

5 Againe, when he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, he did likewise.

6 And about the eleuenth houre, when he went out, he found other standing idle, and saith vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He saith vnto them, Goe ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 So when euen was come, the Lord of the vineyard saith vnto his steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning from the last, vnto the first.

9 And when they came that were hyred about the eleuenth houre, they receiued euery man a penny.

10 But when the first came also, they supposed that they should haue receiued more, and they likewise receiued euery man a penny.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured
Matt.19. against the goodman of the house.
Mark.10 12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre
Luk.13.f and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burthen and heate of the day.

13 But hee answered to one of them, and saide, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with me for a penny?

14 Take that thine is, and goe thy way: I will giue vnto this last, euen as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do that I will with mine owne? Is thine eye euill because I am good.

16 So the last shall bee first, and the first shall bee last: for many be called, but few be chosen.

17 And Iesus going vp to Hierusalem, tooke the twelue disciples aside in the way, and said vnto them

18 Behold we go vp to Hierusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed vnto the chiefe Priests, and
Mark.19 vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to
D death.

19 And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to be mocked, and to be scourged, and to be crucified: and the third day he shall rise againe.

20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children with her sonnes, worshipping him and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And he said vnto her, What wilt thou? She saith vnto him, Graunt that these my two sonnes may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left in thy kingdome.

22 But Iesus answered and said, Ye wote not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They said vnto him We are able.

23 He saith vnto them, Ye shall drinke indeede of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hande, and on my left, is not mine to giue, but to them for whome it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard this, they disdained at the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles haue dominion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie vpon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him be your seruant.

28 Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.

29 And as they departed from Hiericho, much people followed him.

30 And behold, two blinde men, sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, they cried, saying, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid haue mercie on vs.

31 And the people rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Haue mercie on vs, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid.

32 And Iesus stoode still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do vnto you?

33 They said vnto him, Lord, that our eies may be opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, & touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

Mark. 10.
Luk. 22.

Mark. 10.

Mark. 10.
Luk. 18.

Mark. 10.

## The xxi. Chapter.

He rideth into Hierusalem. 12. driueth the marchants out of the temple. 19. and curseth the fig-tree.

1 And when they drewe nigh vnto Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of Oliues, then sent Iesus two disciples.

Mark. 11.
Luk. 19.

2 Saying vnto them, goe into the village that lyeth ouer against you, and anone yee shall find an asse tyed, and a colt with her, whereof haue loosed them, bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, ye shall say the Lord hath needs of them, and straightway he will let them goe.

May 27. Zach. 9.b Ioh. 12.c

4 All this was done, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold thy king commeth vnto thee meeke, and sitting vpon an asse, and a Colt the foale of the asse with to the yoake.

6 The disciples went, and did as Iesus commanded them.

7 And brought the asse, and the colte, and put on them their clothes, and he sate thereon.

8 And many of the people spred their garments in the way, other cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

Luk 19.f 2.Sam.19 Psal.118 Mark 11.

9 Moreouer the multitudes that went before, and that came after cryed, saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid: Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 And when hee was come into Hierusalem all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth, a citie in Galilee.

Luk 19.g

12 And Iesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers and the seates of them that sold doues,

1.Reg.8. Esai 56.c Ier. 7.c

13 And said vnto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

14 And the blinde and the halt came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 When the chiefe Priestes and Scribes saw the wonders that he did, and the children crying in the temple and saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid, they disdained,

16 And sayd vnto him, Hearest thou what these
say? But Iesus sayth vnto them, Yea, haue ye not Psal. 8.2
read, out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hast
thou ordained praise?
17 And he left them, and went out of the citie vnto John 8.2
to Bethanie, and he lodged there. Mark 11.
18 In the morning, as he returned into the citie, Luk 13.b
he hungred.
19 And when he saw one fig tree in the way, he ca me
to it and found nothing thereon but leaues onely, & 
said vnto it, Neuer fruite grow on thee hencefor-
ward And anone the fig tree withered away.
20 And when the disciples saw it, they marueiled,
saying, How soone is this fig tree withered away?
21 Iesus answered and said vnto them, Verily I Matt. 17.
say vnto you, If ye haue faith, and doubt not ye shall Luk 17.a
not onely do this, which is done to the fig tree, but al-
so if ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remo-
ued, and be thou cast into the Sea, it shalbe done.
22 And all things whatsoeuer ye shall aske in
prayer beleeuing, ye shall receiue.
23 And when he was come into the temple, the Mark 11.
chiefe Priests and the elders of the people came vnto John 14.
him, as he was teaching, and said, By what authori- d. 15. b.
tie doest thou these things, and who gaue thee this 16.c
authoritie? Mark 11.
24 Iesus answered and said vnto them, I also Luk 17.a
will aske you one question, which if ye tell me, I in- Exo. 2.c
likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these Acts 4.b.
things: and 7.b
25 The Baptisme of John, whence was it? from Matt. 14.
heauen, or of men? And they reasoned with them-
selues, saying, If we shall say, from heauen, he will
say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?
26 But if we shall say, Of men then feare wee the
people, for all men hold John as a prophet.
27 And they answered vnto Iesus, and said, We
cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I
by what authoritie I doe these things.

sonne, and when he came to the first, he said, sonne goe and worke to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not, but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And when he came to the second, he said likewise: And he answered and said, I goe sir, & went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? And they said unto him, The first. Iesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the Publicanes and the Harlots goe into the kingdome of God before you.

Matth 4.a

32 For Iohn came unto you by the way of righteousnes, and ye beleeued him not but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him. And ye, when ye had seene it, wrought afterwards with repentance, that ye might haue beleeued him.

Gen.9.c
Esai 5.a
Iere.12.c
Mark 12.
Luke 20.

33 Heare an other similitude. There was a certaine man an housholder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine presse in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruite drewe neere, he sent his seruantes to the husbandmen, that they might receiue the fruites of it.

35 And the husbandmen, when they had taken his seruants, they beate one, killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe, he sent other seruantes, more then the first, and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his owne sonne, saying, They will stand in awe of my sonne.

Gen. 37.
Matt. 26.
John 11.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among themselues, This is the heire, come let vs kill him, and let vs seaze vpon his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and thrust him out of the vineyard and slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard commeth, what will he doe vnto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard vnto

other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in due season.

42 Jesus saith unto them, did ye never read in the Scriptures: The stone which the builders disalowed, the same is become the head of the corner: This is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. Psa. 118. Mark 12. Luke 20. 1 Pet. 2.

43 Therefore say I unto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you and given to a nation bringing forth the fruites thereof. Acts 4. b

44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken in peeces: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it shall grind him to powder. Zach. 12. Dan. 2. c.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. John 7. d Mark 12. Luke 19. 8. & 20. c

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitudes, because they took him as a Prophet.

## The xxi. Chapter.

Tribute to be given to the Emperour, 3. He answereth the Scribe unto his question.

AND Jesus answered, and spake unto them againe in parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heaven is like unto a man that was a king, which made a marriage for his sonne: Luke 14.

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: & they would not come.

4 Againe he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes one to his farme, another to his marchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth, and when he had sent forth his armies, he destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their citie.

8 Then saith he to his seruants, The mariage in deede is prepared, but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Goe ye therefore out into the high waies, and as many as ye shall finde: bid to the mariage.

10 And the seruants went out into the high waies and gathered together all, as many as they found, both good and bad: & the wedding was furnished with guestes.

May 12. 11 When the king came to see the guestes, hee spied there a man, which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And hee saith vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not hauing a wedding garment? And he was euen speechlesse.

Matt. 13. 8. & 25. c 13 Then said the king to the ministers, when ye haue bound him hand and foot, take him vp, and cast him into vtter darkenesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

¶ 15 Then went the Pharisees and tooke counsell, how they might intangle him in his talke.

Mark. 12 Luk 10. d 16 And they sent out vnto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Maister, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God truely, neither carest thou for any man, for thou doest not respect mens persons.

17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or no?

18 But Iesus, when he knew their wickednesse, said, Why tempt ye me ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought vnto him a pennie.

20 And he saith vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

¶ 21 They say vnto him, Cesars. Then saith he vnto them, Giue therefore vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, and vnto God, those things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard these wordes, they mar-

uelled

welled, and left him, and went their way.

23 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, Mark 12. Luke 20. Acts 23.

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Deut. 25.

25 There were with us seuen brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, vnto the seuenth.

27 Last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall he be of the seuen? For they all had her.

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Ye doe erre not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, haue ye not read that which was spoken vnto you of God, which saith:

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob: God is not the God of the dead but of the liuing. Exo. 3. b Mark. 12 Luke 1.

33 And when the multitudes heard this, they were astonied at his doctrine.

34 But when the Phansees had heard that hee had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them which was a Lawier, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the greatest commaundement in the law: Deut.

37 Iesus said vnto him, Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God, with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great commaundement. Le M R

39 And the second is like vnto it, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 In these two commaundements hang all the
Luke.10.d law and the Prophets.
41 When the Pharisees were gathered to gether
Mark.12.g Jesus asked them,
42 Saying, what think ye of Christ? whose sonne
is he? They said vnto him, the sonne of Dauid.
Mark 12 43 He saith vnto them, How then doth Dauid in
spirit call him Lord, saying,
Psa.110. 44 The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my
right hand, til I make thine enemies thy footestoole?
45 If Dauid then call him Lord, how is he then
his sonne?
46 And no man was able to answere him a word,
neither durst any man (from that day) aske him any
more questions.

## The xxiii. Chapter.

1 Christ crieth woe to the Pharisees, Scribes and Hypocrites. 37 And prophecieth the destruction of Hierusalem.

A
Deut.17. Then Jesus spake to the multitudes, and to his
Disciples,
2 Saying, the Scribes and the Pharisees sate in
Moses seate.
3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue,
that obserue and doe, and doe not ye after their
Mat.10. workes: for they say, and doe not.
Luk 11.f 4 For, they bind together heauie burdens, and
grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoul-
ders, but they themselues will not moue them with
one of their fingers.
5 All their workes they doe, for to be seene of
men, they make broad their Phylacteries, and in-
large the hemme of their garments.
6 And loue the vppermost seates at feasts, and to
sit in the chiefe place in the synagogues,
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called
of men Rabbi, Rabbi.
8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your ma-
ster, euen Christ, and all ye are brethren.
9 And call no man your father vpon the earth:
for

for one is your father which is in heauen.

10 Neither be ye called maisters: for one is your maister euen Christ.

11 He that is greatest among you shall be your seruant.

12 But whosoeuer shall exalt himselfe, shall bee brought low: he that shall humble himselfe shalbe exalted. Luk 11.c and 18.c

13 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men, ye neither goe in your selues, neither suffer ye them that come to enter in. Luk 11.g

14 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites, for ye deuoure widdowes houses, and that vnder a pretence of long prayer, therefore yee shall receiue the greater damnation. ℭ

15 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites for ye compasse the sea and land, to make one proselite: when he is become one, ye make him two fold more the child of hell then ye your selues are.

16 Woe be vnto you ye blind guides, for ye say, Whosoeuer shal sweare by the temple, it is nothing, but whosoeuer shall sweare by the gold of the temple he is a debter.

17 Ye fooles & blind, for whether is greater the gold or the temple that sanctifieth the golde?

18 And whosoeuer shall sweare by the altar, it is nothing but whosoeuer sweareth by the gift that is vpon it, he is a debter.

19 Ye fooles and blind, for whether is greater the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Who so therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And who shall sweare by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. ℭ Matt. 5.f

22 And he that shall sweare by heauen, sweareth by the seate of God and by him that sitteth thereon. Luk 11.d

23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites: for ye tith mint and Annise and Cummin, and haue left the weightier matters of the law, iudge-

mene

ment, mercy and faith: These ought yee to haue done, and not to haue left the other vndone.

24 Ye blinde guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a Camel.

25 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for ye make cleane the vtter side of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of bribery and excesse.

Luk.11.f 26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cuppe, and platter, that the outside of them may be cleansed.

27 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for ye are like vnto painted sepulchres, which indeed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and all filthinesse.

28 Euen so, yee outwardly appeare righteous vnto men: but within yee are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

Luke 11. 29 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees hypocrite, because ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the Sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, if we had beene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue beene partners with them in the bloud of the Prophets.

1.Thes.2 31 Wherefore yee be witnesses vnto your selues, that yee are the children of them which killed the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye also the measure of your fathers.

Matt.10. Luke 11. Iohn 16. Actes 5.c and 7.a 33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how will ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, and wise men, and Scribes, and some of them yee shall kill and crucifie, & some of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie:

Gen.3.d 2.Par.24 Luke 13. 35 That vpon you may come all the righteous bloud from that righteous Abel, vnto the bloud of Zacharias, sonne of Barachias, whom ye slue betweene the temple and the alter.

36 Verily I say vnto you, all these things shall

come

come vpon this generation.

37 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that killest the Prophets, and stonest them that haue been sent to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, euen as a henne gathereth her chickens vnder her winges, and ye would not? 4. Esd. 2.

38 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate. Psal. 69.

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall by no meanes see me hencefoorth, till that ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lord. Psa. 117. Luke 19.

The xxiiii. Chapter

Christ sheweth his Disciples the destruction of the Temple. The end of the world, and the tokens of the latter dayes, 4. and warneth them to wake, 44. For the world shall sodainly perish.

AND Iesus went out, and departed from the temple, and his Disciples came to him, for to shewe him the buildings of the temple. Mark 13. Luke 21.

2 Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say vnto you, there shall not be left there one stone vpon another, that shall not be destroyed. Luke 19.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Oliues, the disciples came vnto him secretly, saying, Tell vs, when shal these things be? & what shall be the token of thy comming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you. Colos. 2. Ephe. 5.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

6 It will come to passe that ye shal heare of warres, and rumours of warres: See that ye be not troubled, for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realme against realme, & there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in certaine places. 4. Esd. 13. Matt. 10. Mark 13.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrowes. Luke 21.

9 Then shall they put you to trouble, and shall kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Iohn 16

names

name's sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand,)

16 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains:

17 And let him which is on the house top not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19 And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

Mark 13.

Dan. 12.

Mark 13.
Luke 17.

Dan 12.a
1.Thess 4.

Mark. 13
Luk. 21.f

Esay 2. b
Esai 40.c
Mat. 5.c
Acts 1.a
Gen 7.d
Ibid. 17.f

5 Whyle the bridegroome taried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And euen at midnight there was a crye made, Behold the bridegroome commeth, goe ye out to meete him.

7 Then all those virgins, arose, and prepared their lampes.

8 So the foolish sayd to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes be gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, least there be not inough for vs and you: but goe ye rather to them that sell and buy for your selues.

10 And when they went to buy, the bridegroome came: and they that were ready, went in with him to the mariage, and the doore was shut vp.

11 Afterwarde came all the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say vnto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day, nor ye houre, wherein the Son of man commeth.

14 Likewise as when a certaine man taking his iourney into a strange countrey, called his owne seruants and deliuered vnto them his goods.

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, to an other two, and to another one, to euery man after his ability, and straightway tooke his iourney.

16 Then he that had receiued the fiue talents went and occupied the same, and made them other fiue talents.

17 And likewise he that had receiued two, also gate other two.

18 But he that had receiued one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long season, the Lord of those seruantes commeth and reckoneth with them.

20 And so ye that had receiued fiue talents, came and brought other fiue talents, saying, Lorde thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talentes, behold, I haue gained besides them fiue talents more.

Matth. 7. 6

Matt. 24.
Matt. 11.
Luk. 12. 6.
Mark. 13.
Luk. 19. 6

21 His Lorde sayde vnto him, Well done thou good and faithfull seruant, thou hast bin faithfull ouer few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lord.

22 He also that had receiued two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: Behold, I haue won two other talents beside them.

23 His Lord said vnto him, Well done good and faithfull seruant: thou hast been faithfull ouer few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lord.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and sayde, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sowne, and gathering where thou hast not strawed.

25 And therefore was I afrayd, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: loe, there thou hast that thine is.

26 His Lord answered, and said vnto him, Thou euill and slouthfull seruant, thou knowest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I haue not strawed.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue deliuered my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued my owne with vantage.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

29 For vnto euery one that hath shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abundance: but from him that hath not, shall bee taken away euen that which he hath.

Math 13 Marke 3c

30 And cast the vnprofitable seruant into vtter darkenesse, there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

Math 13 and 22.b

31 When the sonne of man shall come in his glory and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit vp on the throne of his glory.

1 Thes 1.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, & he shall separate the one from another, as a shepherd

Exch 34.

deuideth his sheep from the goats:

33 And he shall set his sheep on his right hand,

but

but the goates on the left.

34 Then shall the king say vnto them which shalbe on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my father, inherite the kingdome, which hath bin prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 For I was an hungred and ye gaue me meat: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in. I E

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw wee thee an hungred and fed thee? or thirstie, and gaue thee drinke? E Ec I T

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in? or naked, and clothed thee.

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee,

40 And the king shall answere, and say vnto them Verily I say vnto you, inasmuch as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it vnto me.

41 Then shall he say also to them on the left hand Depart from me ye cursed, into the euerlasting fire, which is prepared for the Deuill and his angels. Psal 6. math 7. Luk 13. Dan. 7. G

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meat: I was thirstie, and yee gaue me no drinke.

43 I was a stranger and ye tooke me not in, naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee? Iohn. 3.c and 17. 2

45 Then shall he also answere them, saying, Verily I say vnto you, inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these ye did it not to me. Pron 138

46 And these shall goe away into euerlasting paine but the righteous into life eternall

The xxvi Chapter.

7 Marie Magdalene annointeth Christ, 16. They cate

the Easter Lambe.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples.

2 Yee know, that after two dayes is the feast of Passeouer, and the sonne of man is betrayed to bee crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chiefe priests and Scribes, & the elders of the people, vnto the pallace of the high Priest, which was called Caiaphas:

4 And held a counsell that they might take Iesus subtilly, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, least there be an vproze among the people.

6 When Iesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper:

7 There came vnto him a woman, hauing an Alabaster boxe of precious ointment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at the boorde.

8 But when his disciples saw it they had indignation, saying to what purpose is this waste?

9 This ointment might haue bene sold for much, and giuen to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstood that, he said vnto them, why trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke in me.

11 For ye haue the poore alwayes with you: but me ye haue not alwayes.

12 For in that this woman hath cast this ointment on my body, shee did it to burie me.

13 Verily, I say vnto you, Wheresoeuer this Gospell shalbe preached in the whole worlde, there shall also this that this woman hath done bee told for a memorial of her.

14 Then one of the twelue called Judas Iscariot, went vnto the high priests.

15 And said vnto them What will ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? And they appointed vnto him thirtie siluer peeces.

16 And from that time forth she sought opportunitie to betray him.

17 The

17 The first day of sweet bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we shall prepare for thee to eate the passeouer?

18 And he said, Goe into the Citie to such a man and say vnto him, The maister saith, my time is at hand, I make the passeouer at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them and they made ready the Passeouer.

20 When the euen was come, he sate downe with the twelue.

21 And as they did eate, he said, Verily, I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they being exceeding sorrowfull began euery one of them to say vnto him, Lord is it I?

23 He answered and said, hee that hath dipped his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The sonne of man goe h truely as it is written of him: but woe vnto that man by whome the sonne of man is betrayed. It had bin good for that man if he had not beene borne

25 Then Judas which betrayed him, answered and said, Maister, is it I? hee said vnto him, thou hast said.

26 When they were eating, Jesus, when hee had taken the bread and gaue thankes, hee brake it and gaue it to the disciples, and said, Take ye, eate yee, this is my body.

27 And when he had taken the cup, & giuen thankes he gaue it to them saying, drinke ye all of it.

28 For this is my blood of the new testament that is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you I will in no wise drinke henceforth of this fruite of the vine tree vntill that day when I drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had praysed God, they went out into the mount of Oliuet.

31 Then saith Jesus vnto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written I

will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

32 But after I am risen againe, I will goe before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered, and said vnto him, though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I neuer be offended.

34 Iesus said vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that in this same night before the Cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise.

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I by no manner of means deny thee: Likewise also said all the disciples.

36 Then commeth Iesus vnto them to a place called Gethsemene, and saith vnto the disciples, Sit ye here while I go and pray yonder.

37 And when he had taken with him Peter & the two sonnes of Zebedee, he began to bee sorowful and heauie.

Luk 14. Mar 22. 38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule is exceeding heauy, euen vnto the death: tarry ye here and watch with me.

39 And when he had gone a little farther, he fell flat on his face, praying, and saying, O my father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me, neuertheles Luk 22.d not as I will, but as thou wilt.

Mark 13. 42 And he commeth vnto the disciples, and findeth them a sleepe, and saith vnto Peter, what could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: The spirit indeede is willing, but the flesh is weake. Gala. 5.c

G 42 He went away againe the second time, and prayed saying, O my father, if this cuppe may not passe away from me, except I drinke it, thy will be fulfilled.

Mark 14. 43 And when he came, hee findeth them asleepe againe: for their eyes were heauie.

44 And he left them, and went againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same wordes.

45 Then

45 Then commeth he to his Disciples, and saith vnto them. Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest, behold the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise let vs be going, behold he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 While hee yet spake, lo Iudas one of the twelue came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues, from the chiefe priests and elders of the people.

48 But he that betrayed him, gaue them a token, saying. Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that same is hee, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith when he came to Iesus, he said, haile maister: and kissed him.

50 And Iesus said vnto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Iesus, and tooke him.

51 And behold one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and after that he had stricken a seruant of the high priests, he smote off his eare.

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Turne backe thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray vnto my father, and he shall cause to stand by me more then twelue legions of Angels?

54 But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled that thus it must be?

55 In that same houre said Iesus to the multitudes, Ye become out as it were vnto a theefe with swordes and staues for to take me: I sate daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the Disciples hauing forsaken him fled.

57 But they that had taken Iesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes & Elders were assembled.

Gu
oh
Ap
Eze

Luk

Mark
Luk

Psal
auid

58 But Peter followed him a farre off vnto the
gh Priestes pallace, and went in, and sate with the
seruants to see the end.

59 The chiefe priests and elders, and all the coun-
sell sought false witnesse against Iesus, for to put him
to death.

60 But found none, yea, when many false witnes-
ses came, yet found they none. At the last came two
false witnesses.

61 And said, this fellow said, I am able to destroy
the temple of God, and to builde it in three daies.

62 And the chiefe Priest arose, and said vnto him,
answerest thou nothing? What is that which these
witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the chiefe
Priest answered, and said vnto him I charge thee by
the liuing God, that thou tell vs, whether thou bee
Christ the sonne of God?

64 Iesus saith vnto him. Thou hast sayde: neuer-
theless, I say vnto you, Here after shall ye see the
sonne of man sitting on the right hand of the power
of God, and comming in the clouds of the sky.

65 Then the high Priest rent his cloathes, say-
ing, he hath spoken blasphemy: what needs we any
more witnesses: Behold now ye haue heard his blas-
phemy.

66 What thinke ye, They answered and said, he is
worthie to dye.

67 Then did they spit in his face and buffeted him
with fistes, and other smote him on the face with
the palme of their handes.

68 Saying, Prophecy vnto vs, O Christ, who is
he that smote thee?

69 Peter sate without in the pallace: And a dam-
sell came to him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus
of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I wote
not what thou sayest,

71 When he was gone out into the porch, another
wench saw him and said vnto them that were there

This

This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.
72 And againe he denied with an oath, I doe not know the man.
73 And after a while came vnto him they that stood by and said to Peter, surely thou art euen one of them: for thy speech bewrayeth thee.
74 Then began he to curse and to sweare saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crew
75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said vnto him, Before the cocke crow thou shalt denie me thrise. And he went out & wept bitterly

The xxvii. Chapter

1. Christ is deliuered vnto Pilate, 5. Iudas hangeth himselfe

When the morning was come all the chiefe priests and elders of the people held a counsell against Jesus to put him to death.
2 And when they had bound him, they led him away and deliuered him to Pontius Pilate the deputie.
3 Then Iudas which had betraied him, when hee saw that he was condemned, repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirty siluer peces to the chiefe Priests and Elders.
4 Saying, I haue sinned in that I haue betraied the innocent bloud. And they said, what is that to vs, see thou to that.
5 And when hee had cast downe the preces of siluer into the temple, he departed and went his way and hanged himselfe.
6 And the chiefe priests tooke the siluer peeces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of bloud.
7 And when they had taken a counsel, they bought with them the Potters field to burie straungers in.
8 Wherefore that field is called the fielde of bloud vntill this day.
9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken

by Jeremy the Prophet, saying, and they tooke the thirty peeces, the price of him that was valued whome they bought of the children of Israel.

10 And gaue them for the Potters field, as the Lord appointed me.

11 Jesus stoode before the deputy, and the deputy asked him saying, Art thou the king of the Jewes? Jesus saith vnto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate vnto him, hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him vnto neuer a word insomuch that the deputy marueiled greatly.

15 At that feast the deputy was wont to let loose to the people a prisoner whom they would.

16 He had then a notable prisoner, called Barrabas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together Pilate said vnto them Whether will ye that I giue loose vnto you Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for enuie they had deliuered him.

19 When he was sate downe on the iudgment seate, his wife sent vnto him, saying, haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame because of him.

20 But the chiefe Priestes and Elders perswaded the people, that they should aske Barabbas and destroy Jesus.

21 The deputy answered, and said, vnto them Whether of the twaine will ye that I let loose vnto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate said vnto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all said to him, let him be crucified.

23 The deputy said, what euill hath he done? But they cryed exceedingly saying, Let him bee crucified.

24 When Pilate saw that he could preuaile no thing

thing but the more businesse was made, hee tooke water, and washed his hands before the people, saying I am innocent of the blould of this person see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blould be on vs, and vpon our children.

26 Then let he Barabbas loose vnto them: when he had scourged Iesus, he deliuered him to be crucified

27 Then the of souldiers of the deputie, when they had taken Iesus into the common hal, gathered vnto him all the band of souldiers,

28 And when they had stripped him, they put on him a scarlet robe.

29 And when they had plaited a crowne of thornes they put it vpon his heade, and a reede in his right hand: and when they had bowed the knee before him they mocked him saying. Haile king of the Iewes.

30 And when they had spit on him, they tooke the reede, and smote him on the head.

31 And after they had mocked him they tooke the robe of him and put his owne raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to beare his crosse.

33 And when they were come vnto a place called Golgotha, that is to say a place of a skul.

34 They gaue him vineger to drinke mingled with gall: and when he tasted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 When they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lottes: that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, they parted my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did they cast lottes:

36 And sitting downe they watched him there.

37 And set vp ouer his head his accusation written, This is Iesus the king of the Iewes.

38 Then are there two theeues crucified with him one on the right hand and another on the left.

3.c 39 They that passed by reuiled him, wagging their heades.

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple
2.b and buildest it in three daies, saue thy selfe: If thou be the sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the high priestes mocking him,
Lu.12b with the Scribes and Elders, said.

42 He saued other, himselfe can he not saue? If he be the king of Israel, let him now come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue him.

43 He hath trusted in God, let him deliuer him
ark 15. now, if he will haue him: for he said, I am the sonne
ike 23a of God.

44 The theeues also which were crucified with him cast the same in his teeth.

ark 15. 45 From the sixt houre was there darkenesse ouer
sal 24,a all the land, vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, Eli Eli, Lammasabacthani, that is to say, My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me.

Mark 15d 47 Some of them that stood there when they heard
Iohn 19.f that said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And streight way one of them ran and tooke a spunge, and when he had filled it full of vinegre and put it on a reed he gaue him to drinke.

49 The rest said, let be, let vs see whether Elias will come to saue him.

50 Iesus when he had cryed againe with a loud
Mark 15 voice, yeelded vp the Ghost.
Luke 23f

51 And behold the vaile of the temple was rent in two parties, from the top to the bottom, and the earth did quake, and the stones rent.

52 And graues were opened, and many bodies of saintes which slept arose.

Mark 15. 53 And after that they were come out of the graues
Luke 23g after his resurrection, came into the holy city, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion and they that were with him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and

thole

those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the sonne of God.

55 And many women were there beholding him afarre off, which followed Jesus from Galilee ministring vnto him. Mark 1 Luk 23

56 Among which was Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 When the euen was come there came a rich man from the citie of Arimathea, named Joseph, which also himselfe was Jesus disciple. Mark 15

58 He went to Pilat and begged the body of Jesus: then Pilat commaunded the body to be deliuered. Luk 23.g Iohn 19g

59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth.

60 And laid it in his new tombe which he had hewne out of the rocke: and when he had rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre he departed. Mark 15.

61 And there was Mary Magdalen, & the other Mary sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

62 The next day that followed the day of preparing, the high priests and Pharisees came together vnto Pilate.

63 Saying, Syr, wee remember that this deceiuer said while he was yet aliue, after three dayes I arise againe. Math 16 and 17,h

64 Commaund therefore that the sepulchre be made sure vntill the third day, least his disciples come by night and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: and the last error shalbe worse then the first.

65 Pilat said vnto them, Yee haue the watch, goe your way, make it as sure as yee know. Mark9 d Luke 11f

66 So they went, and when they had sealed vp the stone they made the sepulchre sure with the watch

The xxviii. Chapter.

The resurrection of Christ. 22. The high priests giue the souldiers monie, to say that Christ was stolne out of his graue.

28 IN the latter end of the Sabboth day, which dawneth the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the Sepulchre.

k 15 14.2 20.a 2 And behold there was a great earthquake, for the angell of God descended from heaven, and came and rouled backe the stone from the doore, and sate upon it.

ark 16. k 24.b 3 His countenance was like lightning, and his rayment white as snow.

4 And for feare of him the keepers did shake and became as dead men.

5 The angell answered and said unto the women, Feare yee not: For I knowe that ye seeke Jesus which was crucified.

6 Hee is not here, hee is risen, as hee sayde. Come see the place where that the Lord was laid.

25 7 And goe quickly, & tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead. And behold he goeth before you into Galilee, there shal ye see him: loe, I have told you.

Mark. 16 Luke 24.b 8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare, and great joy, and did runne, to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them saying, All haile. And they came, and held him by the feete, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Bee not afraid: Goe tell my brethren that they goe into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 When they were gone, behold some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed unto the high Priests, all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gave large money unto the souldiers.

13 Saying, Say yee, his Disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the Deputies eares, we will perswade him, and make you careless.

15 So they, when they had taken the money did as they were taught. And this saying is noised among

the

Iewes vntill this day.

16 Then the eleuen Disciples went away into Galilee, vnto a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him, but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came & spake vnto them, saying, All power is giuen vnto me in heauen & in earth. Matt. 11 / Iohn 17. / Mark 16

19 Goe ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptising them in the name of the father, & of the sonne, and of the holy Ghost.

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you, and loe, I am with you alway, euen vnto the end of the world, Iohn 14.

*Here endeth the Gospell by S. Matthew.*

# The Gospell by S. Marke:

## The first Chapter.

1 The office of Iohn Baptist. 9. The Baptisme of Christ, 13. his fasting, 14. and preaching.

THe beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ the sonne of God. A

2 As it hath beene written in the Prophets, Behold, I send my Messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. Mala. 3. a / Mat. 11 b / Luke 7. c / Esay 40.

3 The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernesse, prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his path straight. Matt. 3. a / Luke 3. / Mark 3 b

4 Iohn was baptizing in the wildernesse, and preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sinnes. Luke 4. c / Mark 3. b / Luke 3. c

5 And

5 And all the land of Iurie, & they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer of Iozdan, confessing their sinnes.

Mat. 3,d 6 Iohn was clothed with Cammels hayre, & with a girdle of a skinne, about his loines: and he did eate locustes and wilde honye.

26 7 And preached saying, There that is stronger then I commeth after me, whose shoe latchet I am not worthie to stoope downe, and vnloose.

8 I haue baptized with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

Matt.3.b Luke 3.c Iohn 2.d 9 And it came to passe in those daies, that Iesus came from Nazareth, a citie of Galilee, and was baptized of Iohn in Iozdan.

Matt.3.d 10 And assoone as he was come vp out of the water he saw heauen open, and the spirite descending

Matt.3.d vpon him like a doue.

11 And there came a voice from heauen, Thou art my deare sonne in whome I am well pleased.

Mat.3.d. 12.d. 13 matt.4.a Esay 42. mark 9.a 12 And immediately the spirit driueth him into the wildernesse.

13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourty daies tempted of Sathan, and was with the wild beasts, & the angels ministred vnto him.

matt.4.b c 14 After that Iohn was deliuered to prison Iesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospell of the kingdome of God.

matt.4.c Luke4.b 15 And saying, The time is come, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye, and beleeue the Gospell.

matt.4.b 16 And as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother, casting nets in

Mark 3.a matt.4.c to the sea: for they were fishers.)

17 And Iesus said vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

Iere. 16. 18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebedee, & Iohn his brother, which also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And

20 And anone he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hyred seruants, 21 And they came vnto Capernaum, and straightwaye on the Sabboth daies he entred into the Synagogue, and taught. M Matt. 4.

22 And they were astonied at his learning: for he taught them as one that had authoritie and not as the Scribes. Mat. 7. d Luke 5. c

23 And there was in the Synagogues a man vexed with an vncleane spirite, and he cried aloud. Matt. 7. d

24 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue we to do with thee thou Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee what thou art euen that holy one of God. Luke 4. c

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the vncleane spirit had torne him, and cried with a loud voice he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch, that they demaunded one of another among themselues, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authoritie commaundeth he the foule spirites and they doe obey him?

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad throughout all the region bordering of Galilee. E

29 And forthwith when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon & Andrew, with Iames and Iohn. Matth. 8. f Luke 4. f

30 But Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, & lift her vp: and immediatly the feuer forsooke her, and she ministred vnto them.

32 And at euen when the Sunne was downe, they brought vnto him all that were diseased, and them that were vexed with deuils.

33 And all the Citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And hee healed many that were sicke of many diseases, and cast out many deuils: and suffered not

the deuils to speake because they knew him.

35 And in the morning very early before day, Iesus when he was risen vp, went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

Matt.9.b Luke 5.c 36 And Simon and they that were with him, followed after him:

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

38 And he said vnto them, let vs goe into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for therefore am I come.

39 And hee preached in their Synagogues in all Galilee, and cast the deuils out.

40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto him, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

41 And Iesus hauing compassion on him, when he had put forth his hand, touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediately the ❡ leprosie departed from him, and hee was made cleane.

Mark 7.d 43 And after he had giuen him a straight commandement, he sent him awaie forthwith:

44 And saith vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but get thee hence, shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a witnesse vnto them.

45 But he, assoone as he was departed, began to preach it much and to publish this rumor: insomuch that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desart places: and they came to him from euery quarter.

## The ii. Chapter.

3 He healeth the man of the palsie, 14. And calleth Leui the customer.

AFter a fewe dayes also he entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noysed that he was in the house.

2 And anon many were gathered together, in-

so

much that now there was no roome to receiue them, no not so much as about the doore: and he preached the word of the Gospell vnto them.

3 And they come vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsie, which was borne of foure men.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for preasse, they discouered the roofe of the house, that he was in: and when they had broken vp the roofe, they doe with cords let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsie lay. Matt. 9. a Luke 5. a

5 When Iesus saw their faith, he said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts. Esai 43. c

7 Why doth he thus speake blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes but God onely? and 44. d Luke 5. b

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his spirit, that they so reason within themselues, he saith vnto them, Why reason ye such things in your harts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, take vp thy bed and walke?

10 But that yee may know that the sonne of man hath power in earth, to forgiue sinnes, (Hee saith to the sicke of the palsie)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, & get thee hence into thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, tooke vp the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, we neuer saw it on this fashion. Mat 9. a John 5. b Luke 5. c

13 And he went againe by the sea side, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

14 And as Iesus passed by, he saw Leui the sonne of Alphee, sitting at the receit of custome, and saide vnto him, Follow me. And he arose & followed him. Matt. 9. a

15 And it came to passe, that when Iesus sate at meate in his house, many Publicans and sinners sate also together at meate with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees sawe him eate with publicans and sinners, they sayd vnto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?

1.Tim.1.c Mat.9.b Luke 5.f 17 When Jesus heard that, hee saith vnto them They that be whole, haue no neede of the Physition but they that are sicke: I came not to call the righteous but sinners to repentance.

18 And the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees did fast: and they come and say vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not.

19 And Jesus saide vnto them, Can the children of the bride chamber fast, while the bridegroome is with them? As long as they haue the bridegroome with them, they cannot fast:

20 But the daies will come, when the bridegroome shall bee taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 No man also soweth a piece of new cloth vnto an olde garment: otherwise his newe piece taketh away somewhat from the old garment, and so the rent is made worse.

22 And no man poureth new wine into old vessels: else the newe wine doth burst the vessels, & the wine runneth out, & the vessels will be mared, but new wine must be put into new vessels.

Mat.12.a Luke 6.a 23 And it came to passe, that he went through the corne fieldes on the sabboth dayes, and his disciples began by the way to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And the Pharisees said vnto him, behold, why doe they on the sabboth dayes that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said vnto them, haue ye neuer read what Dauid did, when he had need, and was an hungred, both he, and they that were with him?

1.Reg.21 26 How hee went into the house of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the high Priest, and did eate the shew bread, which was not lawfull to eate but for the Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him.

27 And

27 And hee sayde vnto them, The Sabboth was made for man, and not man for the Sabboth.
28 Therefore is the sonne of man Lord also of the Sabboth,

The iii. Chapter,

1 He helpeth the man with the dryed hand. 14. chuseth his Apostles.

AND he entred againe into the Synagogue, and a man was there which had a withered hand: A Mat 12 a
2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabboth day, that they might accuse him. Luke 6. c
3 And he sayd vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise and stand in the midst.
4 And he sayth vnto them, Is it lawfull to doe good on the Sabboth daies, or to do euill? to saue life or to kill? but they held their peace.
5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, mourning for the hardnes of their harts he sayth to the man, stretch forth thine hand. And hee stretched it out: and his hand was restored as whole as the other. Mat. 12 a Luke 5. b 1 Reg 13 Mat. 12 b
6 And the Pharisees departed, and straight way gathered a counsell, with the Herodians, against him that they might destroy him.
7 But Iesus auoided with his disciples to the sea and a great multitude followed him from Galilee, & from Iurie. B Matt. 4. b
8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and from the region which is beyond Iordan, and they that dwelt about Tyre & Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what things he did, came vnto him. Matt. 4. b Luke 6. c
9 And Iesus commaunded his disciples that a ship should wait on him, because of the people, least they should throng him. Iohn 6. a
10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they preased vpon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.
11 And the vncleane spirits, when they saw him, fell downe before him at his feete, and cryed, say-

ing, Thou art the sonne of God.

12 And he straightly charged them that they should not make him knowne.

13 And hee goeth vp into a mountaine, and calleth vnto him whome hee would: and they came vnto him.

Math. 10

14 And he ordeined twelue, that they should be with him, & that he might send them forth to preach.

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and cast out deuils.

16 And he gaue vnto Simon to name Peter.

17 And he called James the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn Iames brother (& gaue them names, Boanerges, which is to say, the sonnes of thunder).

18 And Andrew and Philip, and Bartholomew & Matthew, and Thomas, and James, the sonne of Alphe, and Taddeus, and Simon the Cananite.

19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they came into an house.

20 And the people commeth together againe so that they could not so much as eate bread.

Math 9.d and, 12.b Luk, 11.b

21 And when they that belonged vnto him, heard of it, they went out to lay handes vpon him: for they said, he is mad.

22 And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, He hath Belzebub, and by the prince of the deuils, casteth he out deuils.

23 And when he had called them vnto him, he said vnto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kealme bee deuided against it selfe: that kealme cannot endure.

25 And if a house be deuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue.

26 And if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, & be deuided he cannot continue, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then will spoyle his house.

28 Verily I say vnto you, All sinnes shall be forgiuen

giuen vnto the children of men, and blasphemies wherewith so euer they shall blaspheme.

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath neuer forgiuenesse, but is in danger of eternall damnation. Matt.12. Luk.12.b

30 For they said he hath an vncleane spirit. Matt 12.

31 There come his mother, and his brethren, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling him. Luke 8.c

32 And the people sate about him, and said vnto him, behold thy mother, and thy brethren, and thy sisters seeke for thee without.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And when he had looked round about on them that sate about him he said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 The parable of the sower. 37. Christ stilleth the tempest of the sea, which obeyed him. M

AND he began againe to teach by the Sea side: and there gathered vnto him much people, so that hee entered into a shippe, and sate in the Sea: and all the people was by the sea side on the shore. Matt.13.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine.

3 Harken, Behold, there went out a sower to sowe. Luke 8.c

4 And it fortuned as he sowed, that some fell by the way side: and the fowles of the ayre came and deuoured it.

5 Some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth, immediatly it sprong vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But assoone as the Sunne was vp, it caught heate: & because it had no roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choaked it, and it gaue no fruite. N

8 And some fell on good ground, and did yeeld

fruite, that ſprang vp, and grewe, and brought forth, ſome thirtie, and ſome ſixtie, and ſome an hundred.

9 And hee ſaid vnto them, hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

Math 13 Luk 8. b 10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.

11 And he ſaid vnto them, Vnto you is it giuen to knowe the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things are done by parables

Esay. 6c Math 13, Luke 8, b 1 Iohn 2f 12 That when they ſee, they may ſee, and not diſcerne: and when they heare, they may heare, and not vnderſtand, leaſt at any time they ſhould turne, and their ſinnes ſhould be forgiuen them.

13 And he ſaid vnto them. Knowe ye not this parable? And how then will yee know all parables?

14 The ſower ſoweth the Word,

15 And they that receiued ſeede, by the way ſide, are thoſe where the worde is ſowne, but when they haue heard, ſathan commeth immediatly, and taketh Actes 2 8 away the word that was ſowne in their hearts.

Rom 1 16 16 And likewiſe they that receiue ſeed in the ſtony Math 4 20 ground, are they which when they haue heard the Luke 8. b word, at once receiue it with gladneſſe

17 Yet haue not roote in themſelues, and ſo endure but a time: and anon when trouble and perſecution ariſeth for the words ſake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And thoſe that receiue ſeede among thornes, are ſuch as heare the word.

19 And the cares of the World, and the deceitfulneſſe of riches, and the luſtes of other things entring choke the word and it is made vnfruitfull.

20 And they which receiue ſeede into good ground are ſuch as heare the word, and receiue it, ſo that one Math 5. d Luke 8. c corne doth bring forth thirtie, ſome ſixtie, ſome an and 11 c hundred.

21 And he ſaid vnto them, is the candle lighted to be put vnder a buſhel, or vnder the table? and not to be put on a candleſticke.

22 For

22 For there is nothing so prime that shall not be opened, neither hath it been so secret, but that it shall come abroad. Math 10. Luke 8. d and 12. a

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare. Math 7 a

24 And he said vnto them, Take heed whatpe heare. Luke. 6 f With what measure ge meete, with the same shall it bee measured to you againe, And vnto you that haue. Mat. 13. b and 25. c

25 For vnto him that hath shall it be giuen: and from him that hath not shalbe taken away euen that which he hath. Luke. c and. 9. d

26 And he said, So is the kingdome of God, euen as if a man should sow seed in the ground.

27 And should sleepe, and rise vp night and day, and the seed should spring and grow vp, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth out fruits of her selfe first the blade, then the eare, after that the full corne in the eare. C

29 But when the fruit is brought forth anon he thrusteth in the sickle, because the harueste is come.

30 And he saide, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdome of God? Or with what comparison shall wee compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seed: which when it is sowne in the earth: is lesse then all seedes that be in the earth: Math 13. Luke 3 d.

32 And when it is sowne, it groweth vp, and is greater then all herbes, and beareth great branches so that the foules of the ayre may make their nestes vnder the shadow of it. Mato 3. c

33 And with many such parables preached he the worde vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without parable spake hee not vnto them: but when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples. Math 13.

35 And the same day when euen was come, he saith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side. F

36 And they left the people and tooke him euen as he was in the ship, and there were also with him

him other little ships.

Matt. 8. c Luke 8. c 37 And there arose a great storme of wind, and the waues dasht into the shippe, so that it was nowe full.

38 And he was in the sterne a sleepe on a pillow: and they awake him, and say vnto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose and rebuked the wind, and sayde vnto the sea, Peace, and be still: and the wind ceased and there followed a great calme.

40 And he said vnto them, Why are ye fearefull? How is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who is this? that both the winde and the sea obey him.

The v. Chapter

1 Christ delivereth the possessed from the vncleane spirite
24 The woman from the bloudie issue.

1 AND they came ouer to the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gaderenes.

Matt. 8. d Luke 8. d 2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him from among the tombes a man possessed of an vncleane spirit.

3 Which had his abiding among the tombes, and no man could bind him, no not with chaines.

4 Because that he had often beene bound with fetters and chaines, and the chaines had beene plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in peices: Neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night & day he was in the mountaines, and in the tombes, crying, and all to cutting himselfe with stones.

6 But when he had spied Jesus a farre off, he ran and worshipped him:

Matt. 8. d Acts 16 7 And cryed with a loude voice, and sayde what haue I to doe with thee, Jesus, thou son of the most highest God? I require thee in the name of God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he sayd vnto him, Come out of the man, thou foule spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, my name is Legion: for wee are many.

10 And hee prayed him instantly that hee would not send them away out of the country.

11 But there was there nigh vnto the mountaines a great heard of swine feeding mark 5.b

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine that we may enter into them. Luke 8.b

13 And anon, Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirites went out, and entred into the swine and the heard ran headlong into the sea, (they were about two thousand,) and were choaked in the sea.

14 And the swinehearders fled, and told it in the citie, and in the country: And they went out for to see what was done. ℭ

15 And they came to Iesus, and see him that was vexed with the fiend, and had the legion, sitting and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid

16 And they that saw it, told them how it came to passe to him that was possessed with the deuill, and also of the swine. Luke 8.c

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coastes.

18 And when he was come into the ship he that had been possessed with the deuill, prayed him that he might be with him. math 8.d

19 Howbeit Iesus suffered him not, but saith vnto him, Goe home to thy friendes, and shew them how greate things the Lord hath done for thee, and had compassion on thee.

20 And hee departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, howe great things Iesus had done for him and all men did marueile. ℭ

21 And when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and he was nigh vnto the sea.

22 And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the Synagogue, Iairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell downe at his feete, math 9.d Luke 8.f

23 And

23 And beſought him greatly, ſaying, My yong daughter lyeth at point of death, I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her, that ſhee may be ſafe, and ſhee ſhall liue.

24 And Ieſus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

Matt. 9.c Luke 8.f 25 And there was a certaine woman which hadde beene diſeaſed of an iſſue of bloud twelue yeeres.

26 And had ſuffered many things of many Phiſitions, and had ſpent all that ſhe had, and felt none amendment at all, but rather the worſe.

27 When ſhe had heard of Ieſus, ſhee came in the preaſe behind him, and touched his garment.

28 For ſhe ſayd, If I may but touch his clothes, I ſhalbe whole.

29 And ſtraightway the fountaine of her bloude was dryed vp, and ſhe felt in her body that ſhee was healed of the plague.

30 And Ieſus immediately knowing in himſelfe that vertue proceeded from him, turned him about in the preaſe, and ſayd, who touched my clothes?

31 And his diſciples ſayde vnto him, Thou ſeeſt the people thruſt thee, & aſkeſt thou, Who did touch me?

32 And hee looked round about, for to ſee her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing, and trembling knowing what was done, within her, came and fel downe before him, and told him al the truth.

Luke 4.g 34 And he ſayd vnto her, Daughter, thy faith hath ſaued thee, goe in peace, and bee whole of thy plague.

Matt. 9 a Luke 8.g 35 While he yet ſpake, there came from the ruler of the Synagogues houſe, certaine which ſayd, thy daughter is dead, why diſeaſeſt thou the maiſter any further?

36 As ſoone as Ieſus heard the worde that was ſpoken, he ſaith vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, be not afraid, onely beleeue.

37 And hee ſuffered no man to follow him, ſaue

Peter

Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. Matt. 8. a
38 And hee commeth to the house of the ruler of Luke 8. g
the Synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith vnto them, why make yee this ado, and weepe: the damsell is not dead but sleepeth.

40 And they laught him to scorne: but hee, after that he had put them all out, taketh the father and mother of the damsell, and them that were with him, & entreth in where the damsell lay.

41 And when he had taken the damsell by the hand he saith vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted Damsell, (I say vnto thee arise.)

42 And straightway the damsell arose, and walked, for shee was of the age of twelue yeeres: & they were astonied out of measure. G

43 And hee charged them straightly that no man should know of it: and commanded to giue her meat.

## The vi. Chapter.

4 Of Christs owne doings and estimation in his owne countrey.

AND hee departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples follow him. A Matt. 13.

2 And when the Sabboth day was come, he began to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing him were astonied, saying, From whence hath hee these things? and what wisedome is this that is giuen vnto him, and such mightie workes are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the Carpenter, Maries sonne? the brother of James, and Joses, and of Judas and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? and they were offended at him. Matt. 11

4 Jesus said vnto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kinne, and in his owne house. Matt. 13 Luke 4. c

5 And he could there do no mighty workes: but laid his hands vpon a few sicke folke, & healed them. Iohn 5.

6 And

Mark 9.d 6 And hee marueiled because of their vnbeleife And he went about by the villages that lay on euery side, teaching.

23 7 And he called the twelue, & began to send them
Matt 10. forth, two and two, and gaue them power against vn cleane spirits.

8 And commaunded them that they shoulde take nothing in their iourney, saue a staffe onely: no scrip no bread, no money in their purse.

9 But should be shodde with sandales: and that they should not put on two coates.

10 And he said vnto them, whersoeuer yee enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence.

11 And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare
mat.10.a you, when ye depart thence shake off the dust that is
Mar 10 b vnder your feete, for a witnesse against them: I say
Luke 9.a vnto you, it shall be easier for the Sodomites
Mark.11 and Gomorrheans in the day of iudgement, then for
Luk.10.a this cittie.

12 And they went out and preached, that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many diuells, and annointed many that were sicke with oyle, and healed them.

14 And king Herode heard of him. (For his name
mat.14.a was spread abroad:) and hee said that Iohn Baptist
Luke 9.a was risen from the dead, & therefore mighty workes doe shew forth themselues in him.

15 Other said, That it is Elias: Some said that it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.

16 But when Herod had heard of him, he said, it is Iohn whom I beheaded he is risen from death.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth and laide hands vpon Iohn, & bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, because he had maried her.

Leuit. 18 18 For Iohn said vnto Herod, It is not lawfull,
and 20.d for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layd waite for him, and would haue killed him: but shee could not.

20 For Herode feared Iohn, knowing that hee

was

was a iust man, and an holy, and gaue him reuerence and when he heard him, he did many things & heard him gladly.

21 And when a conuenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to the lordes, high cauteines, and cheife estates of Galilee: Gen. 40. d

22 And when the daughter of the sayd Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat at boord also, the king said vnto the damsel Aske of me whatsoeuer thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her. Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, euen to the one halfe of my kingdome. Matt. 14. g

24 And she went forth, & said vnto her mother, what shall I aske? She said, Iohn Baptistes head.

25 And she came in straightway with haste vnto the king and asked saying, I will that thou giue me by and by in a charger, the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sory, howbeit for his oathes sake, and for their sakes which sate at supper also, he would not cast her off.

27 And immediately the king sent the hangman, and commaunded his head to be brought in: and he went and beheaded him in prison.

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the damsell, and the damsell gaue it to her mother. e

29 And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke vp his body, and laid it in a tombe.

30 And the Apostles gathered themselues together vnto Iesus, and told him all these things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said vnto them, come ye alone out of the way into the wildernes, and rest a while, for there were many commers and goers, and they had no leisure so much as to eate. Mark 1. 4. Luke 7. h John 6. a

32 And they departed by ship out of the way into a desert place. b

33 And the people spied them when they departed Mark 1. 4.

and many knew him, and ran a foote thither out of all cities and came thither before them and came together vnto him.

Mart. 9. d and 14. b Eze. 34. Matt. 14 Luke 9. g John 6. a

34 And Iesus, when he came out saw much people, and had compassion on them, because they were like sheepe not hauing a shepheard: and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came vnto him, saying, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed.

36 Let them depart, that they may goe into the countrey round about, and into the villages and buy them bread: for they haue nothing to eate.

37 He answered & said vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they say vnto him, shall we goe and buy two hundreth peniworth of bread, & giue them to eat.

38 He saith vnto them, How many loaues haue ye, goe and looke. And when they had searched, they say, Fiue and two fishes.

39 And he commaunded them to make them all sit downe by companies on the greene grasse.

40 And they sate downe here a rowe, and there a rowe, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen he blessed and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them and the two fishes deuided he among them all.

42 And they did all eate, and were satisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eate the loaues, were about fiue thousand men.

Matt. 14. 45 And straightway hee constrained his disciples to goe into the ship & to goe ouer the sea before vnto Bethsaida, while he should send away the people.

Matt. 14, John 6, b 46 And when he had sent them away he departed into a mountaine to pray.

47 And when euen was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And

48 And he saw them troubled in rowing, for the
wind was contrary vnto them) and about the fourth
watch of the night, he commeth vnto them, wal-
king vpon the Sea, and would haue passed by
them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the sea,
they supposed it had beene a spirit, and cryed out.

50 For they all saw him and were sore troubled:
and anon he talked with them, and saith vnto them
Be of good cheare, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went vp vnto them into the ship, and Math.14
the wind ceased, and they were sore amazed in them-
selues beyond measure, and marueiled.

52 For they vnderstood not what was done of the
loaues, because their heart was hardned.

53 And when they had passed ouer, they came
into the land of Genezareth, and drue vp into the
hauen.

54 And when they were come out of the shippe
straight way they knew him.

55 And ran forth throughout al the region round
about, and began to carry about in beds those that
were sicke, thither where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred into vilages or
cities, or fieldes, they laid the sicke folke in the
streetes, and prayed him that they might touch, and
if were but the hemme of his garment: and as many
as touched it, were made whole.

## The vij. Chapter.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples eating meate with vnwashen handes. 32. The healing of the deafe and dumbe.

AND the Pharisees come together vnto him, and certaine of the Scribes which came from Hie- M
rusalem. Math.15

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eate
bread with defiled (that is to say, with vnwashen
handes) they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees and all the Iewes except
they wash their handes oft, eate not, obseruing the

 tradition

tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from market, except they wash, they eate not. And many other things there be which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, as the washing of cups and pots, brasen vessels & of tables

5 Then asked him the Pharisees and scribes, why walke not thy disciples according to the traditions of the Elders but eate bread with vnwashen handes

6 He answered and said vnto them. Surely Esaias hath prophecyed well of your hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth mee with their lipes but their heart is far from me.

Esay. 29. matt. 15

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they worship me, teaching doctrins the commaundements of men.

8 For the commaundement of God being laid apart, ye obserue the tradition of men, as the washing of pots & cups, & many other such like thinges ye doe

9 And he said vnto them. Full well ye can abolish the commaundement of God that ye may kepe your owne tradition.

Exod. 12 Deut. 5. b

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother, and whoso curseth father or mother let him die the death.

Ephes. 6. Exod. 20 Leuit. 20. Prou. 20. c

11 But ye say, if a man shall say to his father or his mother, Corban (that is by the gift) that is offered of me, thou shalt be holpen.

12 And so ye suffered him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother.

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye haue ordained, and many such things doe ye.

¶

14 And when he had called all the people vnto him hee said vnto them. Harken vnto me euery one of you, and vnderstand.

matt. 15. b

15 There is nothing without a man that can defile him, when it entereth into him: but the things which proceed out of a man, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he came into the house, away from the people, his disciples asked him of the similitude.

18 And he saith vnto them, are yee also so without vnderstanding? Doe yee not perceiue that what soeuer thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him.

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all the meates?

20 And he sayd, That which commeth out of the man, defileth the man.

21 For from within, euen from the heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceite, wantonnesse, a wicked eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse.

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile the man.

24 And from thence he rose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sydon, & entred into an house, and would that no man shoulde haue knowne, but he could not be hid. Mark. 1.

25 For a certaine woman, whose yoonge daughter had an vncleane spirit, when shee had heard of him, came and fell at his feete.

26 (The woman was a Greeke out of the nation of Syrophenissa:) & she besought him that he would cast out the deuill from her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, let the children first be fed: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread and cast it to little dogs. Matt 15.

28 She answered and said vnto him, Yea Lord, for the little dogs also eate vnder the table, of the childrens crummes.

29 And he said vnto her, for this saying goe thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, she found that the deuill was departed, & her daughter lying on the bed.

31 And when he was departed againe from the coasts of Tire and Sydon, he came vnto the sea of
Matt 15. Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring vnto him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speach: and they pray him to put his handes vpon him.

Matt 9.d 33 And when he had taken him aside from the people: he put his fingeres into his eares, and when he had spit, touched his tongue.

34 And when he had looked vp to heauen, sighed and said vnto him, Ephphata, that is to say, be thou opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, & he spake plaine.

Marke 1.d 36 And hee commaunded them that they should tell no man: but the more hee commaunded them, so much the more earnest deale they published it.

37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, He hath done all thinges well: hee hath made both the deafe to heare and the dumbe to speake.

## The VIII. Chapter.

2 The myracle of the seuen loaues. 35. How wee should follow Christ.

IN those dayes the company being very great, and
Mark 15. hauing nothing to eate when Iesus had called his disciples vnto him, he saieth vnto them.

2 I haue compassion on the people, because they haue now beene with me three dayes, and haue nothing to eate:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne
Esay 2.a houses, they shall faint by the way: for diuers of
Tob. 13. them come from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? They said, Seuen.

6 And he commaunded the people to sit down on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaues, & when hee had giuen thankes, he brake and gaue to his

Disciples

disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and when he had blessed he commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eate, and were suffised: and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left seuen baskets full.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand: and he sent them away.

10 And anone, when hee had entred into a ship with his disciples, hee came into the partes of Dalmanutha. Math 6 Luk 11 d Iohn 6. d

11 And the Pharisees came foorth, and began to dispute with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen tempting him.

12 And when hee had sighed deepely in his spirit, saith: Why doe this generation seeke a signe? Verily I say vnto you, There shall no signe be giuen vnto this generation.

13 And when he had left them, and entred into the ship again, he departed ouer the water.

14 And they that had forgotten to take bread with them, neither had they in the shippe with them more then one loafe.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the leauen of Herod. C Math 16. Luk 12. a

16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, We haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, hee saith vnto them: why reason ye, because ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderstand? Haue ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Hauing eyes, and see ye not? and hauing eares heare ye not? Doe ye not remember,

19 When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thousand men, how many baskets full of broken meate tooke ye vp? They saide vnto him, Twelue Math 14

20 When I brake the seuen among foure thousand, how many baskets of the leauings of the bro-

Ken meate tooke yee vp? They ſayd, Seuen.

21 And he ſaid vnto them, howe happeneth it that ye doe not vnderſtand?

22 And he commeth to Bethſaida, and they bring a blinde man vnto him and deſired him to touch him.

math 16 Luke 9.a

23 And when he had caught the blind by the hand, he led him out of the towne, and when he had ſpit in his eyes, and put his handes vpon him, he aſked him if he ſaw ought.

E

24 And he looked vp and ſaid, I ſee men; for I perceiue them walke as they were trees.

matt 16. Luke 9.c Iohn 6. a

25 After that he put his handes againe vpon his eyes, and made him ſee: and he was reſtored, and ſaw euery man clearely.

matt 16. and 20. c Luke. 9.c

26 And he ſent him home to his houſe, ſaying, Neither goe into the village, nor tell it to any in the village.

27 And Jeſus went out and his diſciples into the villages that long to Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he aſked his Diſciples, ſaying vnto them Whome doe men ſay I am?

28 And they anſwered, Iohn Baptiſt: and ſome ſay, Elias: Againe, ſome ſay that thou art one of the Prophets.

29 And he ſayd vnto them, But whome ſay ye that I am? Peter anſwereth, and ſaith vnto him Thou art very Chriſt.

30 And hee charged them that they ſhould tell no man.

31 And hee began to teach them that the ſonne of man muſt ſuffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders, and of the high Prieſts, and Scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes riſe againe.

32 And he ſpake that ſaying openly, and Peter tooke him aſide, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about and looked on his diſciples, he rebuked Peter, ſaying, Goe after me Satan: for thou ſauorest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 And when he called the people vnto him, with his disciples, also he said vnto them, whosoeuer will come after me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow me. Math 16 Luke 9.c

35 For whosoeuer will saue his life shall lose it, but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, the same shall saue it. and 14.f

36 For what shall it profite a man if he shall winne all the world, and lose his owne soule?

37 Or what shall a man giue for the ransome of his soule. Matt 16. Luk 13.

38 Whosoeuer therefore shalbe ashamed of me, and of my wordes, in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the sonne of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his father, with the holy angels.

## The ix. Chapter.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 49. Of seasoning with salt.

AND he said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stande here which shall in no wise tast of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power. Luke 9.c Matt 16

2 And after six dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter and Iames and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an high mountain out of the way alone: & he was transfigured before them. Luk 16.c Mark 17.

3 And his raiment did shine, and became very white, euen as snow: so that no fuller vpon the earth can white them.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Iesus.

5 And Peter answereth and saith to Iesus Maister here is good being for vs: and let vs make three tabernacles, one for thee and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what he should say: for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloude that shadowed them, and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is

my beloued sonne: heare him.

Math 3.d and 17.d Luke 3. c math 1.b Esay 42.a matt 17. marke 1.d

8 And sodainly when they had looked round about they saw no man more than Iesus with themselues.

9 And as they came downe from the hill, hee charged them that they would tell no man those things that they had seene, till the sonne of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with them, and demaunded one of another what the rising from the dead should meane.

11 And they asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

matt 4.b

12 He answered and said vnto them, Elias verily when he commeth first, restoreth all things: and the sonne of man as it is written of him, shall suffer many things, and be set at naught.

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would, as it is written of him.

Esay 53.a

14 And when he came to his disciples, hee saw much people about them, and the Scribes disputing with them.

15 And straight way all the people when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the Scribes, What dispute ye among your selues?

mat 17.c Luke 9.a

17 And one of the company answered, and said, Master, I haue brought vnto thee my sonne which hath a dumbe spirit:

18 And whersoeuer he taketh him, he teareth him and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithles nation how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring him vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: and when he saw him, straight way the spirit tare him, and when hee fell downe on the ground, hee wallowed foming

forming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it agoe since this came vnto him? And hee sayd, Of a child.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: But if thou canst doe any thing have mercy on vs, and helpe vs. Math 17.

23 Jesus said vnto him, This thing if thou canst beleeue, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway when the father of the child had cryed with teares, hee sayd, Lord I beleeue, helpe thou my vnbeliefe Math 17

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, hee rebuked the foule spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumb and deafe spirit: I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirite when hee had cryed: and rent him sore, came out of him, and he was as one dead insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus, when he had caught him by the hand, lift him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house his disciples asked him secretly, why could not we cast him out. Math 17.

29 And he said vnto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 And after they departed thence, they tooke their journey through Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his Disciples, and sayde vnto them, The sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that hee is killed, hee shall rise the third day. Math 16. Luk 1.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afrayd to aske him.

33 And he came to Capernaum: and when hee was come into the house, hee asked them, What was it that yee disputed among your selues by the way?

34 And they held their peace: For by the way they had reasoned among themselues, who should be the chiefest.

35 And

35 And when he was set down, he called the twelue, and saith vnto them, If any man desire to be
Matt 18 first the same shalbe last of all, and seruant vnto all.
Luke. 6f 36 And when he had taken a young childe, he set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him
vnto his armes, hee sayde vnto them.
1 Cor 12 37 Whosoeuer shall receiue any such young child in my name receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall re-
ceiue me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.
G 38 John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy name: and he followeth
not vs: & we forbad him, because he followeth vs not.
Math 10. 39 But Iesus said, Forbad him not, for there is no man, which, if he doe a miracle in my name, can
lightly speake euill of me.
Math 18. 40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.
41 Whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of cold water to drinke, because ye belong to Christ:
verily I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.
42 And whosoeuer shall offend one of these little
Math 18. ones that beleeue in mee, it is better for him, if a mil-
stone were hanged about his necke and he were cast
into the sea.
43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off. It is bet-
ter for thee to enter into life maimed then hauing
Esay 66. two hands to go into hell, into fire that neuer shalbe
quenched.
44 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire is not quenched.
45 And if thy foot offend thee cut it off: it is better
for thee to enter halt into life, then hauing thy two
feete to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shal-
be quenched.
Mark 5.c 46 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire is
Luke 2 d not quenched.
47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out. it is
better for thee to enter into the kingdome of God
Leuit 2.b with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast into
hell fire.
48 Where their worme dyeth not: and the fire

is

is not quenched:
49 For euery man shalbe salted with fire, and euery sacrifice shalbe seasoned with salt. Mark 9 b Luk 14 g
50 Salt is good, but if the salt be vnsauerie with what thing shall you season it? haue ye salt in your selues, and haue peace among your selues one with another.

## The x. Chapter.

a Of diuorcement. 17. A rich man questioneth how hee should inherite eternall life. M. Matt 16.

AND when he arose from thence he commeth into the coastes of Iury, through the region that is beyond Iordan: and the people resort vnto him afresh and as he was wont he taught them againe.
2 And the Pharisees came, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him. Deut 24. Mark 10.
3 And he answered and said vnto them, what did Moses commaund you to doe?
4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a booke of diuorcement, and to put her away.
5 Iesus answered and said vnto them, For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you. 23
6 But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. Gen 1. d 1. Cor 6. d Math 19 a
7 And said, For this cause shall a man leaue his father and mother, and ioine vnto his wife.
8 And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so then they are no more twaine but one flesh.
9 Therefore what God hath coupled together, let no man separate. Ephes 5 g Gen. 2. a
10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of the same matter.
11 And he saith vnto them, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife and marry another, committeth adultery against her. Math 5. e and 19 a
12 And if a woman shall put away her husband and be married to another, she committeth adultery. Luk 16 b

Math 19 Luk 18.d ℂ 13 And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it he was sore displeased and said unto them, Suffer the young children to come unto me and forbid them not: for to such belongeth the kingdome of God.

Math 18 Luk 17.a 15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a young child he shall in no wise enter therein.

26 And when hee had taken them up in his armes putting his handes upon them he blessed them.

math 19. Luk 18 d 17 And when he was gone forth into the way there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master what shall I doe that I may inherite eternall life?

18 Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, which is God.

19 Thou knowest the commaundements, doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Defraude no man, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And answered and said unto him, Master all these things have I observed from my youth.

ℙ mark 19. Luk 18. d 21 Jesus beheld him, and loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: Goe thy way sell whatsoever thou hast and give to the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come follow mee, when thou hast taken up the crosse.

22 But hee was discomforted because of that saying, and went away mourning: for he had great possessions.

matt 19c Luk 18.c 23 And when Jesus had looked round about, hee saith unto his disciples: How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God.

24 And the disciples were astonied at his wordes But Jesus answereth againe, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdome of God?

25 It is easier for a camell to enter through the

of a needle, then for the rich to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And they were astonied out of measure, saying betweene themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 Jesus when he had looked vpon them, saith, with men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 And Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue forsaken all, and haue followed thee.

29 Jesus answered, and sayde, Verily I say vnto you, There is no man that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or landes, for my sake and the Gospels. Matt. 19. Luk. 18. c

30 But he shall receiue an hundred fold nowe at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, & mothers, and children, and landes, with persecutions, & in the world to come eternall life.

31 But many that are first, shalbe last: and the last, first. Mat. 25. Leu. 12. f

32 And they were in the way, going vp to Hierusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they were amazed and as they followed, were afraide: and when he had againe taken with him the twelue, he began to tell them what thinges shoulde happen vnto him.

33 Saying, behold we goe vp to Hierusalem, & the sonne of man shalbe deliuered vnto the high priestes, and vnto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles. Matt. 16. 17. c. 20. c Luk. 15. f and 22. c

34 And they shall mocke him, and scourge him & spit vpon him, and kill him: and the third day he shal rise.

35 And James and John the sonnes of Zebedee, came vnto him, saying, Master, wee will that thou shouldest do for vs whatsoeuer we shall desire. F Mark. 10

36 He sayd vnto them, What will yee that I shall do for you?

37 They sayd vnto him, Grant vnto vs that wee may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on the left hand in thy glory.

38 But

38 But Jesus sayd vnto them, Ye wote not what ye aske: Can ye drinke of the cup that I drinke of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they sayd vnto him, That we can. Jesus said vnto them, Ye shall indede drinke of the cup that I drinke of, and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall shall ye be baptized.

40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to giue, but it shalbe giuen vnto them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the other ten heard it, they began to
matt. 20 disdaine at James and John.

G 42 But Jesus when hee had called them to him,
Matt. 20 saith vnto them, ye know that they which seeme to
Luk. 22. c beare rule among the Gentiles, raigne as Lordes ouer them, and they that be great among them exercise authority vpon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoeuer of you wilbe great among you, shall be your minister.

44 And whosoeuer of you will be the chiefest shalbe seruant of all.

45 For the sonne of man also came not to be
Matt. 20 ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.

46 And they came to Hierycho: and as he went out
Matt. 22 of the citie of Hierycho with his disciples, & a great
Luk. 18 g number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the sonne of Timeus, sate by the high waye side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry, and to say, Jesus thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked him that he should hold his peace: but hee cryed the more a great deale, Thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still and commaunded him to
B be called: and they call the blinde, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And when he had thrown away his cloake, he

rose

me and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered, and said unto him, What wilt thou that I doe unto thee? The blinde said unto him, Master, that I might see.

52 Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath saued thee. And immediately he receiued his sight, & followed Jesus in the way.

## The xi. Chapter.

1 Christ rideth to Hierusalem. 27. The Pharisees aske Christ of his authority.

AND when they came nigh to Hierusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples. A Mat. 21. Luke 18.

2 And saith unto them, Goe into the town that is ouer against you: and assoone as ye be entred into it, ye shall find a colt tyed, whereon never man sate: loose him and bring him hither.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why doe yee so? Say ye, that the Lord hath need of him: and straightway he will send them hither. 1. Sam. 6. 7.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two waies met; and they loose him. Iohn 12.

5 And diuerse of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the Colt?

6 And they said unto them euen as Jesus had commaunded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus: & cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him. B

8 And many spread their garments in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lord. Ps. 118. d. Matt. 21. Luke. 19. f.

10 Blessed be the kingdome that commeth in the name of him that is Lord of our father Dauid, Hosanna in the highest. Iohn 12.

11 And Jesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the temple: & when he had looked round about vpon all

all things, and now the euentide was come, he went out into Bethanie with the twelue.

Matt 21. 12 And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethanie, he hungred.

13 And when he saw afarre off a figge tree hauing leaues, he came if perchance he might finde any thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Iesus answered, and spake vnto the figge tree, Neuer man eate fruit of thee hereafter while [illegible] would heareth. And his disciples heard it.

Mark. 11 15 And they come to Hierusalem, and when Iesus
Luk. 19 went into the temple, hee began to cast out them that
Iohn 2. c bought and sold in the temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seates of them that sold doues.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any stuffe through the temple.

Esay 56. 17 And hee taught, saying vnto them, Is it not
3 Reg 8 written, My house shall be called the house of prayer
Iere 7. c vnto all nations? But ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

Mark. 11 18 And the Scribes and high Priestes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people were astonied at his doctrine.

Matt. 21. 19 And when euen was come, Iesus went out of
Luk. 21. 37 the citie.

and 20. c 20 And in the morning as they passed by, they saw the figge tree dried vp by the roote.

21 And Peter calling remembred, and said vnto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Haue faith in God.

23 For verily I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remoued, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which hee saith shall come to passe: whatsoeuer he shall say,

shall

[illegible] And [illegible] beleeue [illegible], and it shall be [illegible].

Matt. 21. Iohn 14.

25 [illegible] if ye haue ought against any man, [illegible] also which is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespasses.

Matt. 6. d and 18. d

26 [illegible] will not forgiue, your father which [illegible] heauen, will not pardon your trespasses.

27 [illegible] the high [illegible]

Luk. 20. a Matt. 21

C

28 [illegible] him, By [illegible] doest [illegible] authoritie to [illegible] these things?

29 [illegible] them, I will also [illegible] question, [illegible] and I will tell you by what authoritie I do these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, whether was it from heauen, or of men? [illegible]

31 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If [illegible] he will say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 [illegible] the people: for all men counted Iohn, that hee was a very Prophet.

33 And they answering, said vnto Iesus, We cannot [illegible] And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I do these things.

## The xij. Chapter.

[illegible] husbandmen. 42. The poore [illegible]

B

1 And he began to speake vnto them by parables, A certaine man planted [illegible] and hee set an [illegible] and built a [illegible] husbandmen, and went into a [illegible]

Matt. 21

2 [illegible] when the time was come, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that hee might receiue of the

husband-

all thinges, and now the euentide was come, he went out into Bethanie with the twelue.

Matt 21. 12 And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie, he hungred.

13 And when he saw afarre off a figge tree hauing leaues, he came if happely he might finde any thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Iesus answered, and spake vnto the figge tree, Neuer man eate fruit of thee hereafter, while the worlde standeth. And his disciples heard it.

Mark. 11 f 15 And they come to Hierusalem, and when Iesus
Luk. 19 g went into the temple, hee began to cast out them
Iohn 2. c that bought and sold in the temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seates of them that sold doues.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any stuffe through the temple.

Esay. 56 17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not
3 Reg 8 written, My house shall be called the house of prayer
Iere 7. c vnto all nations? But ye haue made it a denne of
theeues.

Mark. 11 18 And the Scribes and high Priestes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people were astonied at his doctrine.

Matt. 21. 19 And when euen was come, Iesus went out of
Luk. 21. f the citie.
and 20. c 20 And in the morning as they passed by, they saw the figge tree dried vp from the rootes.

21 And Peter calling remembred, and said vnto him, Master, beholde, the fig tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Haue faith in God.

23 For verily I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which he saith shall come to passe: whatsoeuer he shall say,

Matt. 21.
Iohn 14.

Matt. 6. d
and 18. d

Luk 20. a
Mark 12.

e

f

g

Matt. 21

huſbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. [illegible]
[illegible]
him [illegible]

4 And againe he ſent vnto them another ſeruant,
and at him they caſt ſtones, and brake his head, a
ſent him away all to reuiled.

5 And againe he ſent another, and him they kill
and many other, beating ſome, and killing ſome.

B 6 [illegible]
Matt. 21. he ſent him alſo at the laſt vnto them, ſaying, They
Gen. 37. will ſtand in awe of my ſonne.
Luk. 20. c 7 [illegible]
This is the [illegible]
ritance [illegible]

8 And they tooke him and killed him, and caſt h
out of the vineyard.

9 What ſhall then the lord of the vineyard
doe? He ſhall come and deſtroy the huſbandmen, a
giue the vineyard vnto other.

10 Haue ye not read this Scripture? The ſton
Pſal. 118 which the builders refuſed, is become the head
Matt. 21. ſtone of the corner.
Actes 4. d 11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marue
lous in our eyes.

12 They went about alſo to take him, but fear
the people: for they knew that he had ſpoken the pa
rable againſt them: and they left him and went the
way.

Matt. 22. 13 And they ſent vnto him certaine of the Phariſee
Luk 20. b and of the Herodians to take him in his wordes.

C 14 And when they were come, they ſay vnto him,
Maſter, we know that thou art true, and careſt for n
man: for thou conſidereſt not the perſon of men, bu
teacheſt the way of God truely. Is it lawfull
to giue tribute to Ceſar, or not?

15 Shall we giue, or ſhall we not giue? He
knowing their hypocriſie, ſaid vnto them, Why tempt
ye me? Bring me a penny, that I may ſee it.

16 And they brought it. And he ſaith vnto them,
Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription? And they

[illegible] vnto him, Ceſars.

17 And Ieſus anſwering, ſaid vnto them, Giue [illegible] the things that belong to Ceſar, and to God the things which pertaine to God, and they marueiled at him.

Rom 13.
matt. 17
and 20. c

18 Then came alſo vnto him the Sadduces, which ſay there is no reſurrection, and they aſked him, ſaying,

matt. 18.
Acte 23 b
Luk 19. e
Deut 25.

19 Maſter, Moſes wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and leaue his wife behind him and leaue no children, that his brother ſhould take his wife, & raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother.

20 There were ſeuen brethren: and the firſt tooke a wife, and when he died, left no ſeed behind him.

D

21 And the ſecond had her, and died, neither left he any ſeede, and the third likewiſe.

22 And ſeuen had her, and left no ſeed behind them: laſt of all the wife dyed alſo.

23 In the reſurrection therefore when they ſhall riſe, whoſe wife ſhall ſhee be of them? for ſeuen had her to wife.

24 And Ieſus anſwering, ſaid vnto them, Doe ye not therefore erre, becauſe yee knowe not the Scriptures, neither the power of God.

25 For when they ſhall riſe from the dead, they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heauen.

26 As touching the dead that they riſe: haue yee not read in the booke of Moſes, how in the buſh God ſpake vnto him, ſaying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, and the God of Iacob?

Exod 3. b
matt. 22.
Luke 20. f

27 He is not the God of the dead, but God of the liuing: ye therefore greatly erre.

28 And when there came one of the Scribes, and had heard them diſputing together, & perceiued that he had anſwered them well, he aſked him, which is the firſt commandement of all.

E
matt. 22

29 Ieſus anſwered him, The firſt of all the commandements is, Heare O Iſrael, the Lord our God is one Lord.

Deut 6.a Matt.22.

30 And thou shalt loue thy Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength. This is the first commaundement.

Leuit.19 Rom.13 Gal.5.c Iames 2.

31 And the second is like vnto this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commaundement greater then these.

Mat,5.6

32 And the Scribe said vnto him, well Maister, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to loue him with all thine heart, and with all thy vnderstanding, and with all thy soule, & with all thy strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is greater then all the burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus saw that he answered discreetly he said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

Math. 22. Psa. 110

35 And Iesus answering, said, teaching in the temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe inspired with the holy Ghost said, The Lord said to my Lorde, Sit on my right hande, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole.

Math.22. Luk. 20.

37 Dauid himselfe calleth him Lord: and whence is hee then his Sonne? And much people heard him gladly.

38 And he said vnto him in the doctrine, Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walke in long clothing, and loue salutations in the market places,

39 And the chiefe seats in the Synagogues, and the vppermost roomes at feasts,

40 Which deuoure widdowes houses, and vnder a pretence make long prayers: these shall receiue great damnation.

41 And when Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, hee beheld how the people put money into the treasurie: and many that were rich cast in much.

42 And

42 And there came a certaine poore widdow, and she threw in two mites, which make farthing. Mar. 12.4 Luk 21.2

43 And when he had called vnto him his disciples, he saith vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that this poore widdow hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the treasury.

44 For they did all cast in of their superfluitie: but she of her want, did cast in all that she had, euen all her liuing.

## The xiii. Chapter.

1 The destruction of the temple. 24 Signes before Christes comming. 31 Gods word shal not passe away.

AND as hee went out of the temple, one of his disciples said vnto him, master, see what stones and what buildings are here. M Matt. 24 Luk. 21.6

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwne downe.

3 And as hee sate vpon the mount of Oliuet, ouer against the temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him secretly,

4 Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe when all these things shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answering him, began to say, Take heed least any man deceiue you. Mark 24. Luk. 21.8

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ and shall deceiue many.

7 When ye shall heare of warres, and tidings of warres, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be: but the end shall not be yet. 23

8 For there shal nation rise against nation, & kingdome against kingdome: & there shall be earthquakes in diuers places, and famine shall there be: and troubles: these are the beginning of sorrowes.

9 But take yee heede to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to councels, and to Synagogues, and ye shalbe whipped, yea, and shalbe brought before rulers and kings for my sake, that this might chance to Iohn 16. Matt. 10. Luk. 21.12

witnesse against them.

matt. 24. 19 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

matt. 12. 20 But when they shall lead you, & deliuer you vp, bee not carefull before hand, neither take thought what ye shall speake: but whatsoeuer shall be giuen you in the same houre, that speake ye: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost.

12 The brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne: and the children shall rise against their fathers and mothers, and shall put them to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: but he that shall endure vnto the end, the same shall be saue.

C 14 Moreouer, when ye see the abomination of desolation, whereof is spoken by Daniel the Prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth vnderstand) then let them that be in Iurie, flee to the mountaines:

matt. 24. Luk 21. d Dan. 9. g

15 And let him that is on the house top, not goe downe into the house, neither enter therein to fetch any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe for to take his garment with him.

17 Woe shall be then vnto them that are with childe, and to them that giue suck in those dayes.

18 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For there shall be in those dayes such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, vnto this time, neither shall be in any wise.

20 And except that the Lorde had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the electes sake whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.

D 21 And then, if any man shall say to you, loe here is Christ, or loe he is there: beleeue him not.

matt. 24. Luk. 17. c

22 For false Christes, and false Prophets shall arise, and shall shewe signes and wonders to deceiue

it were possible, euen the elect.

23 But take ye heede, beholde, I haue foretolde you all things before.

24 But in those dayes after that tribulation the Sunne shall be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light.

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall, & the powres which are in heauen shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man coming in the cloudes with great power and glorie.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from the vttermost parts of the earth, to the vttermost parts of heauen.

28 Learne a parable of the figge tree, When her braunch is yet tender, and hath brought forth leaues, ye know that sommer is neere.

29 So ye in like maner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, vnderstand that it is nigh euen at the doores.

30 Verily I say vnto you, that this generation shall in no wise passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words shall in no wise passe away.

32 But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, neither the angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himselfe, saue the father only.

33 Take ye heede, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 As a man that is gone into a strange country, and hath left his house, and giuen authoritie to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commanded the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the maister of the house commeth, at euen, or at midnight, when the cocke crowing, or in the dawning.

36 Least if he come suddenly, he find you sleeping.

37 And that I say vnto you, I say vnto all, watch.

Matt. 24.

Ioel 3.c
Luk. 21. c

Dan. 7. c

Matt. 24
Luke. 21. f

Mat 24 d
Luk. 12. e

Mat. 25 b
Luk 19. b

The xiiij. Chapter.

1 The high priests conspire against Christ. 10 Iudas couenaunteth to betray him. 12 The Passouer is prepared and eaten.

After two dayes was the feaſte of the Paſſouer, & of vnſet breade: and the hie prieſtes & ſcribes ſought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

Mat 26.a Luk 22.a

2 But they ſayd not on the feaſt day, leaſt any buſſineſſe ariſe among the people.

Math 26 Iohn 12.

3 And when he was in Bethany, in the houſe of Simon the leper, euen as he ſate at meate, there came a woman hauing an Alablaſter box of verye precious ointment called Nard piſtike: and when ſhe had broken the boxe, ſhe powred it on his head.

4 And there were ſome that had indignation with in them ſelues, and ſayd, Wherto was this waſt of ointment made?

5 For it might haue beene ſolde for more then three hundred pence, and haue beene geuen to the poore: And they grudged againſt her.

6 And Jeſus ſayd, Let her alone, why trouble yee her? She hath done a good worke on me.

Deut 15.

7 For ye haue poore with you alwayes, and when ſoeuer ye will, ye may doe them good: but me haue ye not alwayes.

8 She hath done that ſhee could: ſhee came afore hand to anoint my body to the buriyng.

Mat. 26.a Luk 24.a Iohn 1.a

9 Verily I ſay vnto you, where ſoeuer this Goſpel ſhalbe preached throughout the whole world, this alſo that ſhe hath done, ſhall bee rehearſed in remembrance of her.

10 And Judas Iſcariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the high prieſtes, to betray him vnto them.

Mat. 26.a Luk 22.a

11 When they heard that, they were glad, & promiſed that they would giue him money: and he ſought how he might conueniently betray him.

12 And the firſt day of vnleauened breade, when they did kill the Paſſouer, his diſciples ſayde vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe and prepare, that thou mayeſt eate the paſſouer?

13 And

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and
saith vnto them, Goe ye into the citie, and there shall
meete you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow
him.

14 And whithersoeuer he shall goe in, say yee to
the good man of the house, The master saith, Where
is the guest chamber, where I shall eate the passe-
ouer with my disciples?

15 And hee will shew you a large vpper chamber,
paued and prepared: there make ready for vs.

16 And his disciples went forth and came into the
citie, and found as hee had said vnto them: and they
made ready the passeouer.

Matt. 26. Luk. 22. Iohn 13.

17 And when it was now euentide, hee commeth
with the twelue.

18 And as they sate at boord and did eate, Iesus
said, Verily I say vnto you, one of you that eateth
with me shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorry and to say vnto him
one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 He answered and said vnto them, It is one of
the twelue, euen hee that dippeth with me in the plat-
ter.

Matt. 26. Luk. 22. b 1. Cor. 11.

21 The sonne of man truely goeth as it is writ-
ten of him, but woe to that man by whom the sonne
of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if hee
had neuer been borne.

22 And as they did eate, Iesus when he had taken
bread, and blessed, he brake it, and gaue to them and
said, Take, eate: this is my body.

23 And when hee had taken the cup, and giuen
thankes, he gaue it to them, and they all dranke of
it.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my bloud of
the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say vnto you, I will drinke no more
of the fruite of the vine, vntil that day that I drinke
it new in the kingdome of God.

26 And when they had praised God, they went out
into the mount of Olives.

Matt. 26.

25 And

Zach.13. matt.26. Luke 22. John 16.

27 And Jesus saith vnto them, All ye shalbe offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheepe shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will goe into Galilee before you.

29 Peter said vnto him, Although all men shalbe offended, yet will not I.

30 And Jesus saith vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that this day, euen in this night, before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise.

31 But hee spake more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee in any wise: Likewise also said they all.

matt.26.

32 And they came into a place, which was named Gethsemane, and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here while I shall pray.

matt 26. Iohn 12.

33 And hee taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be in an agonie.

34 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding heauy, euen vnto the death: tarry ye here, and watch.

F

35 And when he had gone forward a little, he fell on the ground, and prayed that if it were possible, the houre might passe from him.

Matt 26. Luke 22.

36 And he said, Abba, father, all things are possible vnto thee: take away this cup from me: howbeit not what I will, but what thou wilt be done.

37 And he commeth and findeth them sleeping, and saith vnto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one houre?

matt.26.

38 Watch and pray, least ye enter into temptation: The spirite truely is willing, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe he went aside and prayed, & spake these words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleepe again (for their eyes were heauy) neither wist they what to answer him.

G

Matt. 26 Luke 22.

41 And he commeth the third time, and saith vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest.

hough the houre is come, behold, the sonne of man is betrayed into the handes of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs go: lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 And immediatly while he yet spake, commeth Iudas, being one of the twelue, and with him a great number of people with swoordes and staues, from the high Priestes, and Scribes, and Elders.

44 And he that betraied him had giuen them a generall token saying whosoeuer I shal kisse that same is he: take him, and lead him away warely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he goeth straight way to him, and saith vnto him, Maister, maister, and kissed him.

46 And they laid their handes on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, when hee had drawen out his swoord, smote a seruant of the high priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Bee he come out as a theefe with swoordes and staues for to take me? Matt. 26. Luke 22. ✠

49 I was daily with you in the temple teaching, & ye took me not: but these things come to passe that the Scriptures might be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsooke him and ran away. Math 26.

51 And there followed him a certaine young man, Luke 22. clothed in linnen vpon the bare: and the yong men Iohn 18. caught him.

52 And he left his linnen garment, and fled from them naked.

53 And they ledde Iesus away to the high priest, Matt 26. and with them came all the high priestes, and the el- Luk 22. & ders, and the Scribes. Iohn 18.

54 And Peter followed him a great way off, euen till he was come into the palace of the high priest: and he sate with the seruants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

55 And the high priests and all the counsel sought Matt. 26 Acts 6. & for

found none:

56 For many bare false witnes against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

Matt. 26. 57 And there arose certaine, and brought false
Iohn 2. d witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I
Matt. 26 will build another made without hands.

59 But yet their witnesse agreed not so together.

Matt. 26 60 And the high priest stood vp in the midst & asked Iesus saying, answerest thou nothing? How is it that these beare witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Againe, the high priest asked him, & said vnto him, art thou Christ the sonne of the blessed?

Matt. 26 62 Iesus said, I am: and yee shall see the sonne of
Luk 21. g man sitting on the right hand of the power of God,
Iohn 6. and comming in the cloudes of heauen.

R 63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes saith, What need we any further witnesse?

64 Yee haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke yee? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit at him, and to couer his face and to beate him with fistes, and to say vnto him, Prophecy. And the seruants did beate him with rods.

66 And as Peter was beneath in the pallace, there commeth one of the wenches of the high Priest,

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she
Matt. 26 Luke 22. had looked vpon him, she saith, And thou also wast
Iohn 18. with Iesus of Nazareth?

68 And he denied saying, I know him not neither wote I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the Cocke crew.

69 And a damsell when she sawe him, began a gaine to say to them that stoode by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it againe: and anone after, they

they that stood by said againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them, for thou art of Galilee, and thy speach agreeth thereto.

71 And he began to curse and to sweare saying, I know not this man of whom ye speake.

72 And the second time the cocke crew. And Peter remembred the word that Iesus said vnto him, Before the Cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise. And he began to weepe. Math. 16 Luk. 22. g

## The xv. Chapter.

1 Iesus is deliuered bound to Pilate, 5, Ioseph beggeth Christes body, and burieth it.

AND in the morning, when the hie Priestes had held a counsell with the Elders and Scribes, and the whole congregation, and had bound Iesus they carried him away, and deliuered him to Pilate. A Matt. 27. Luk 23. a Iohn 18.

2 And Pilate asked him Art thou the king of the Iewes? And he answering said vnto him, Thou saiest it.

3 And the high Priestes accused him of many things, but he answered nothing.

4 So Pilate asked him againe, saying, answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee. Matt. 27. Luk 23. b

5 Iesus yet answered nothing at all, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 At the feast Pilate did deliuer vnto them one prisoner, whomsoeuer they desired.

7 And there was one that was named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that made insurrection with him, which had committed murder also in the insurrection. B

8 And the people crying aloud, began to desire that he would do as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Pilate answered them, saying, will yee that I let loose vnto you the king of the Iewes.

10 For he knew that the high Priestes had deliuered him for enuie.

Matt. 27. Luk 23. c

11 But the high Priests moued the people that he should rather loose vnto them Barrabbas vnto them.

12 Pilate answering againe, said vnto them, What will ye then that I shall doe vnto him whom ye call the king of the Iewes?

13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him.

14 Pilate said vnto them, What euil hath he done? And they cried the more feruently, Crucifie him.

Matt. 27

15 And so Pilate willing to content the people, let loose Barrabbas vnto them, & deliuered vp Iesus when he had scourged him, for to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Prætorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and when they had platted a crowne of thornes, they put it about his head.

18 And began to salute him, saying, Hayle king of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and did spit vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the purple from him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

Matt. 27. Luk 23. d Math. 27

21 And they compell one that passed by, called Simon of Cyrene (comming out of the field, the father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

22 And they bring him to a place named Golgotha, which is, if a man interpret it, a place of a skull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe, but he receiued it not.

Matt. 27. Psal. 22.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments casting lots vpon them, what euery man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the title of his accusation was written ouer: The king of the Iewes

27 And

27 And they crucifie him with two theeues, the Matt.27.
one on the right hand, and the other on the left. Luk.23.6

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Esai 53.
he was counted among the wicked.

29 And they that went by rayled on him, wag- Matt. 27.
ging their heads and saying: ah wretch, thou that de-
stroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes:

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the Matt.27.
crosse. Luk 23.b

31 Likewise also the high Priests mocking him
among themselues, with the Scribes, said, He saued
others, himselfe he cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the king of Israell descende now
from the crosse, that we may see, and beleeue. And
they that were crucified with him, checked him Matt.27
also. Luk 23.f

33 And when the sixth houre was come, darke-
nesse arose ouer all the earth, vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre, Iesus cried with a loud
voyce saying, Eloi, Eloi, Lamalabachani? which is if
one interprete it, My God, my God why hast thou
forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by when they Matt.27.
heard that, said behold he calleth for Elias. Psal. 22.

36 And one ran, and a sponge he had filled with vine-
gar full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, hee gaue him to Mart.27.
drinke saying let him alone, let vs see whether Eli-
as commeth to take him downe.

37 But when Iesus had cryed with a loude voice
he gaue vp the Ghost.

38 And the vaile of the temple was rent into two
peeces from the top to the bottome

39 And when the Centurion, which stood ouer Matt.27.
against him, saw that when he had so cried, hee gaue Luk.23.8
vp the Ghost, he said truly this man was the sonne
of God.

40 There were also a woman a good way of be- Matt.27.
holding him, among whome was Mary Magda- Luk.23.8
lene, and Mary the mother of Iames the little, and
of Ioses, and Salome.

41 Which

Matt. 27
Luke 23.
Matt. 15

41 Which alſo when he was in Galilee followed him and miniſtred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hieruſalem.

42 And now when the euen was come, (becauſe it was the day of preparation, that is the day before the Sabboth)

Luke 8.a

43 Ioſeph of the citie of Arimathea, a noble counſeller, which alſo looked for the kingdome of God, came and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and begged him the body of Ieſus.

Matt. 27.
Luk 23.g
Iohn 19.

44 And Pilate marueiled if he were already dead, and when he had called vnto him the Centurion, asked of him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew the truth of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioſeph.

46 And when hee had bought a linnen cloth, and taken him downe, he wrapped him in the linnen cloth, & laid him in a ſepulchre that was hewen out of the rocke, and rolled a ſtone vnto the doore of the ſepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary Ioſes beheld where he was laide,

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 The women come to the Sepulchre. 10 The ſigne that ſollow the preaching of the Goſpell.

AND when the Sabboth day was paſt, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames and Salome, brought ſweete ſmelling ointments, that they might come and anoynt him.

Matt. 28
Luke 24.
Iohn 20.

2 And very early in the morning the firſt day of the Sabboths, they come vnto the ſepulchre when the ſunne was riſen.

3 And they ſaid among themſelues, who ſhall roll vs away the ſtone from the doore of the ſepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they ſee how that the ſtone was rolled away, for it was very great.

5 And when they went into the ſepulchre, they ſaw a young man ſitting on the other ſide, clothed in a long white garment, and they were greatly amazed.

Matt. 28
Luk 24.g

6 And he ſaith vnto them, be not greatly amaz-

the sicke: Iesus of Nazareth, which was crucified, hee is risen, he is not here, behold the place where they had put him.

7 But go your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, as he said unto you. 28

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre, for they trembled and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid. Matt. 28.8 Luk. 24.2.

9 Now when Iesus was risen early, the first day after the Sabboth, he appeared first to Mary Magdalen, out of whom he had cast seuen diuels.

10 And shee went and tolde them that were with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And when they had heard that hee was aliue, and had beene seene of her, beleeued it not. Luk 23.11

12 After that he appeared in another forme, vnto two of them as they walked, and went into the country.

13 And they went and told it vnto the residue: neither beleeued they them.

14 Afterward he appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate at meat, and cast in their teeth their vnbeleefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them which had seene that he was risen. C

15 And he said vnto them, go ye into all the world and preach the Gospell to all creatures.

16 He that shall beleeue, and be baptised, shall be saued, but he that shall not beleeue, shalbe damned. Matt. 28.19

17 And these tokens shall follow them that beleeue: In my name shall they cast out deuils, they shall speake with new tongues. Actes 8.6 16.6 18 Act. 2.4 and 19.6

18 They shall drive away serpentes, and if they drinke any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them: they shall lay hands on the sicke, and they shall recouer. Luk. 10.6 and 23.6 Luke 9.1 Actes 14.3

19 So then when the Lord had spoken vnto them, he was receiued into heauen, and sate him downe at the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth and preached euery where,

Mark.2.a the lord working with them, & confirming the word with signes following.

## Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Marke.

# The Gospell by Saint Luke.

### The first Chapter.

1 The preface of Luke. 5. Of Zacharias and Elizabeth. 40 Mary visiteth Elizabeth.

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set forth in order the declaration of those things which are most surely beleeued among vs,

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning saw them themselues with their eyes, and were ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also hauing perfect vnderstanding of all things from the beginning to write vnto thee in order most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been taught by mouth.

5 THere was in the dayes of Herod the king of Iurie a certaine Priest named Zacharias of the course of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 They were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord blameles.

7 And

7 And they had no childe, because that Elizabeth 25
was barren, and they both were now well stricken
in age.

8 And it came to passe that when Zacharye executed Exod. 30.
the priestes office before God, as his course came Heb. 9. b
9 According to the custome of the priestes office his
lot was to burne incense when he went into the tem-
ple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were
without in prayer, while the incense was burning.

11 And there appeared vnto him an angell of the
Lord standing on the right side of the altar of the in-
cense.

12 And when Zacharias sawe him, hee was trou-
bled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the angell said vnto him, Feare not Za-
charie, for thy prayer is heard, & thy wife Elizabeth
shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name
John.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and ma-
ny shall reioyce at his birth.

15 And he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, &
shall neither drinke wine nor strong drinke, and
he shall be filled with the holy Ghost euen from his
his mothers wombe.

16 For many of the children of Israel shall he turne
to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall goe before him with the spirit and Matth. 11.
power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to
the children, and the disobedient to the wisdome of
the iust men, to make ready a perfect people for the
Lord.

18 And Zacharias said vnto the angell, By what Gen. 17. b
token shall I know this? For I am olde and my wife and 18. b
well stricken in yeeres.

19 And the angel answering said vnto him, I am
Gabriel that stand in the presence of God and was
sent to speake vnto thee, and to shewe thee these glad
tidings

20 And beholde thou shalt bee dumbe, and not bee

able to speake vntill the day that these thinges shalbe performed, because thou beleevest not my wordes, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, hee could not speake vnto them: and they perceived that he had seene a vision in the temple: for he beckened vnto them, and remained speachlesse.

23 And it came to passe that assoone as the dayes of his office were out, he departed into his owne house.

Gen. 7. Exod. 23 Psal. 127 & 128.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid her selfe fiue moneths saying

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein hee looked on me, to take from mee my rebuke among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth, the angell Gabriell was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth.

27 To a virgin, spoused to a man whose name was Joseph of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name was Mary.

Gen. 13.

28 And when the angell was come in vnto her, he said, Haile thou that art in high fauour, the Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what maner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angell said vnto her, Feare not Mary for thou hast found fauour with God.

Esay 7.c Matt. 1.c Luke. 2. c Esay 2.b Mich. 4.b Dan. 7.b May 9.b

31 For beholde, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe and beare a sonne, and shalt call his name Jesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the sonne of the highest, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the seate of his father Dauid.

33 And he shall raigne ouer the house of Jacob for euer, and of his kingdome there shalbe none end.

34 Then saide Mary vnto the angell, Howe shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And

35 And the angell answering sayde vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the highest shal ouershadow thee. Therefore also that holy thing which shalbe borne, shalbe called the sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cosin Elizabeth, she hath also conceiued in her old age: and this is her sixth moneth which was called barren.

37 For with God shall no worde bee vnpossible.

38 And Mary said, behold the handmaiden of the Lord, be it vnto mee according to thy word: and the angell departed from her. Zach. 8. d Matt. 4. Mark 1. Luk. 1. 8. g

39 And Mary arose in those dayes and went into the hill country with hast, into a citie of Iuda.

40 And entred into the house of Zacharie, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the saluation of Mary, the babe sprang in her womb and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And shee spake out with a loud voice, and sayd, Blessed art thou among women, and the fruite of thy wombe is blessed

43 And whence commeth this to me, that the mother of my Lord shall come to me.

44 For lo, assoone as the voice of thy saluation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my wombe for ioy.

46 And blessed is shee that beleeued, for these things shalbe performed, which were told her from the Lord.

46 And Mary sayde, My soule magnifieth the Lord.

47 And my spirit hath reioyced in God my Sauiour. Isay 61

48 For hee hath looked on the lowlinesse of his handmaiden, For lo, now from henceforth shall all generations call me blessed.

49 Because hee that is mighty hath done to mee great things, and holy is his name.

50 And his mercy is on them that feare him, from generation to generation.

51 He hath shewed strength with his arme, he hath scattered them that are proud in the imagination of their hearts.

52 He hath put downe the mighty from their seates and exalted the lowly.

1. Reg. 2. Eccl. 10.

53 He hath filled the hungry with good things, and sent away the rich emptie.

54 He hath holpen his seruant Israell, in remembrance of his mercy:

Gen. 22.

55 (Euen as he spake to our father Abraham, and to his seede) for euer.

B

56 And Mary abode with her about three months and afterward returned to her owne house.

57 Elizabeths time came that she should be deliuered and she brought forth a sonne.

58 And her neighbours and her cosins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with her.

59 And it came to passe, that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe, and called him Zacharias after the name of his father.

Gen. 17. & 21. 2 Leuit. 12

60 And his mother answering said, Not so, but he shalbe called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none in thy kinred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, what he would haue him called.

63 And when he had asked for writing tables he wrote saying, His name is Iohn: and they marueiled all.

C

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly & his tongue was loosed, and he spake praysing God.

65 And feare came on them all that dwelt round about them: & all these sayings were noysed abroad throughout all the hill countrey of Iury.

66 And all they that heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner of child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied saying:

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israell, for he hath visited and redeemed his people.

69 And hath raised vp an horne of saluation vnto vs in the house of his seruant Dauid. Psal. 132.

70 Euen as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which were since the world began,

71 That he would saue vs from our enimies and from the hand of all that hate vs. 1 Sa. 18 Dan. 7.

72 That he would deale mercifully with our fathers and remember his holy couenant. Ps. Gen. 22.

73 And that he would performe the oathe which he sware to our father Abraham, for to giue vs.

74 That we being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies might serue him without feare. Esay 32.

75 In all holinesse and righteousnesse before him, all the daies of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the Prophet of the highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his waies.

77 To giue knowledge of saluatiō vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes. Mal.

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby the day spring from on high hath visited vs. Esay 9. Matt. 4.

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenesse, & in the shadow of death, to guide our feete in the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wildernes till the day came of his shewing vnto the Israelites.

## The ii. Chapter.

1 The taking of the worlde by Augustus Cesar.

AND it came to passe in those daies, that there went a commandement from Augustus Cesar, that all the world should be taxed. B

This first taxing was made when Cyrenius 1 Ke. 20
was gouernour of Syria.

And all went to be taxed, euery man into his

owne citie.

4 And Ioseph went vp from Galilee, out of the Citie of Nazareth, into Iurie, vnto the citie of Dauid, which is called Bethlehem (because hee was of the house and linage of Dauid.)

5 To be taxed with Mary his spoused wife being great with childe.

6 And so it was that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be deliuered.

7 And she brought forth her first begotten sonne, and swadled him, and laide him in a manger, because there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 There were in the same countrey shepeheards abiding in the field, keeping watch ouer their flocks by night.

9 And loe, the angel of the Lord stood hard by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afeard.

10 And the angel said vnto them, Be not afraid: For behold, I bring you good tidings of great ioy that shall be to all people:

11 For vnto you is borne this day, in the citie of Dauid, a sauiour, which is Christ the Lord:

12 And take this for a signe, Ye shall find the child swadled, laid in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of heauenly souldiers, praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and peace on the earth, and among men a good will.

15 And it came to passe assoone as the angels were gone away from them into heauen, the men the shepheards said one to another, let vs goe now euen vnto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come to passe, which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs.

16 And they came with hast, and found Mary and Ioseph, and the babe laid in a manger.

17 And when they had seene it, they published abroad the saying, which was told them of this childe.

18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those
things, which were told them of the shepheards.
19 But Mary kept all these sayings, and pon-
dered them in her heart.
20 And the shepheards returned, glorifying and
praising God, for all the things that they had heard
and seene, euen as it was told vnto them.
21 And when the eight day was come, that the ℣
child should be circumcised, his name was called Ie- Gen. 17.
sus, which tometime was so named of the Angell Matt. 1.6
before he was conceiued in the wombe. (Mark 1.6
22 And when the dayes of her purification after
the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought
him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord.
23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Euery Leuit. 12.
man child that first openeth the wombe shalbe called 1. Reg. 1.
holy vnto the Lord.)
24 And to offer, as it is said in the lawe of the Exod. 13
Lord, a payre of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons. Num. 8
25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem,
whose name was Simeon, and the same man was
iust and godly, looking for the consolation of Israel,
and the holy Ghost was vpon him.
26 And a reuelation was giuen him of the holy
Ghost, not to see death before, he had seene the Lord
Christ.
27 And he came by inspiration into the temple: Leuit. 12
and when the parents brought in the child Iesus to
do for him after the custome of the law.
28 Then tooke he him vp in his armes, and prai- ℈
sed God and said,
29 Lord, now lettest thou thy seruant depart in
peace according to thy promise.
30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation.
31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of al
32 Light to be reuealed to the Gentiles, and the
glorie of thy people of Israel.
33 And his father and his mother marueiled at
those things which were spoken of him.

34 And

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Marie his mother, Behold, this child is set to be the fall and rising againe of many in Israell, and to a signe which is spoken against.

35 (And moreouer, the sworde shall pierce thy soule) that the thoughts of many hearts may be opened.

36 And there was a Prophetesse one Anna, the daughter of Phanuel of the tribe of Aser, which was of great age, and had liued with an husband seuen yeares from her virginitie.

37 And shee had bin a widdowe about foure score and foure yeeres, which departed not from the temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers night and day.

Esay 9. Rom. 9

38 And shee comming at the same instant vpon them gaue thankes likewise vnto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their owne citie of Nazareth.

2. Reg. 2.

40 And the child grew and waxed strong in spirite, and was filled with wisedome, and the grace of God was vpon him.

Exo. 12. Leuit. 23

41 Now his parents went vnto Hierusalem euery yeere at the feast of the Passeouer:

42 And when he was twelue yeeres olde, they ascended vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast day.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned home, the childe Iesus abode still in Hierusalem, and Ioseph and his Mother knewe not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue bin in the company, came a dayes iourney, and sought him among their kinsfolkes and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned backe againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe

they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, hearing them and asking them.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his vnderstanding and answeres. Matt. 7. 28. Mark 1. 22. Luke 4. 32.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said vnto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? Behold, thy father and I, haue sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must goe about my fathers businesse? Luke 2. 52. and 18. 31.

50 And they vnderstoode not that saying, which he spake vnto them.

51 And he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was obedient vnto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

## The III. Chapter.

1 The preaching of Iohn, 23. The age and genealogie of Christ.

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the raigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Lieftenant of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of the Trachonites, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene. Luke 23. 2.

2 When Annas & Caiaphas were the high priests, the worde of the Lorde came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias in the wildernes.

3 And he came into all the coastes about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sinnes.

4 As it is written in the booke of the wordes of Esaias the Prophet, saying, The voice of a crier in the wildernesse. Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Euery valley shalbe filled, and euery mountaine and hill shall bee brought low, & things that be crooked shalbe made straight, and the rough ways shalbe Esay 40.

made plaine.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

28 7 Then sayd hee to the people that were come forth to bee baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore due fruites of repentance, and begin not to say within your selues, We haue Abraham to our father, for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

Matt. 3. b 9 Now also is the axe laid vnto the roote of the
Acte. 2 a trees: Euery tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

Matt. 3. b 10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall
Acts 2. a we do then?

11 He answered and saith vnto them, He that hath two coates, let him parte with him that hath none, and he that hath meate, let him do likewise.

12 Then came Publicanes also to be baptized, and said vnto him, Maister, what shall we doe?

13 And he said vnto them, require no more then that which is appointed vnto you.

14 The Souldiers likewise demaunded of him, saying, and what shall wee doe? and hee said vnto them, Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be content with your wages.

15 And the people waited, and all men mused in their hearts of Iohn, whether he were very Christ.

16 Iohn answered, saying vnto them all, Indeede
Matt. 3. b I baptize you with water, but one stronger then
Mark 1. a I commeth, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy
Iohn 1. d to vnloose, he shall baptize you with the holy ghost, and with fire.

17 Which hath his fan in his hand, and will
Matt. 3. b throughly purge his floore, and will gather the wheate into his barne, but the chaffe will hee burne vp with fire vnquenchable.

18 And many other thinges in his exhortation preached he vnto the people.

[19 Then

19 Then Herod the Tetrach, when hee was rebuked of him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, & for all the euils which Herod did. Matt. 14. Mark 6. c

20 Added this aboue all, and shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 Now it came to passe, as all the people were baptized and when Iesus was baptized, & did pray, that the heauen was opened. D Matt. 3. b Matt. 1. b

22 And the holy ghost came downe in bodily shape like a doue vpon him, and a voyce came from heauen, which said Thou art my beloued sonne, in thee am well pleased. Iohn 1. c Esai 42.

23 And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirtie yeeres of age being (as he was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Heli. Matt. 13 Mark 4. a Luke 4. c Iohn 6. c

24 Which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Leui, which was the sonne of Melchi. which was the sonne of Janna, which was the son of Joseph.

25 Which was the sonne of Mathathias, which was the sonne of Amos, which was the sonne of Nahum, which was the sonne of Hesly, which was the sonne of Nagge.

26 Which was the sonne of Maath, which was the sonne of Matthathias, which was the sonne of Semei which was the sonne of Joseph, which was the sonne of Juda.

27 Which was the sonne of Joanna which was the sonne of Rhesa, which was the sonne of Zorobabel, which was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Neri,

28 Which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Addi, which was the sonne of Cosam, which was the sonne of Elmodam, which was the sonne of Er. E

29 Which was the sonne of Jose, which was the sonne of Eliezer, which was the sonne of Jorim, which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Leui

30 Which was the sonne of Simeon, which was the

the ſonne of Iuda, which was the ſonne of Ioſeph, which was the ſonne of Ionan, which was the ſonne of Eliacim.

31 Which was the ſonne of Melea, which was the ſonne of Menan, which was the ſonne of Mat-tatha, which was the ſonne of Nathan, which was the ſonne of Dauid,

32 Which was the ſonne of Ieſſe, which was the ſonne of Obed, which was the ſonne of Booz, which was the ſonne of Salmon, which was the ſonne of Naaſſon,

33 Which was the ſonne of Aminadab, which was the ſonne of Aram, which was the ſonne of Eſrom, which was the ſonne of Phares, which was the ſonne of Iuda.

34 Which was the ſonne of Iacob, which was the ſonne of Iſaac, which was the ſonne of Abraham, which was the ſonne of Thara, which was the ſonne of Nachor.

35 Which was the ſonne of Saruch, which was the ſonne of Ragau, which was the ſonne of Phaleg, which was the ſonne of Heber, which was the ſonne of Sala,

36 Which was the ſonne of Arphaxad, which was the ſonne of Sem, which was the ſon of Noe which was the ſon of Lamech.

37 Which was the ſonne of Methuſala, which was the ſonne of Enoch, which was the ſonne of Iared, which was the ſonne of Malaleel, which was the ſonne of Cainan,

38 Which was the ſonne of Enos, which was the ſonne of Seth, which was the ſonne of Adam, which was the ſonne of God.

The iiii Chapter.

1 The temptation & falling of Chriſt. 41. The deuils confeſſe Chriſt, and are of him rebuked.

AND Ieſus being full of the holy Ghoſt, returned from Iordan, & was led by the ſame ſpirit into the wil-
Matt. 4. a
Marke 1. derneſſe.

2 Being fourtie dayes tempted of the deuill, and

those dayes did her eate nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the deuill said vnto him, If thou bee the sonne of God, commaund this stone that it bee made bread.

4 And Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, Deut. 8. 3
That man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery Matt. 4. 4
word of God.

5 And when the deuill had taken him vp into an high mountaine, he shewed him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the deuill said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee euery whit, and the glory of them, for that is deliuered vnto mee and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, it shall bee all thine.

8 Iesus answering, said vnto him, Get thee hence behinde me Satan, for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serue.

9 And he carried him to Hierusalem, and set him Deut. 6. 6
on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If and 10. 6
thou be the sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from Mar. 4. 6
hence.

10 For it is written that he shall giue his angels charge ouer thee, to keepe thee.

11 And in their hands they shall beare thee vp, Psal. 22.
that thou dash not thy foote at any time against a stone.

12 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, It is Deut. 6. 6
said, thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Matt. 4. 7

13 And when the deuill had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 And Iesus returned [illegible] of the spirit into Galilee, and there [illegible] fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their Synagogues, being Matt 9.
glorified of all men. Mark. 6.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he was nou-

marked, and as he [illegible] went into the
Synagogue on the Sabboth day, and stood vp for to
read

2.Esd. 8. 17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke
of the prophet Esaias: and when he had opened the
booke he found the place where it was written,

Esai 61. 18 The spirit of the Lord vpon me, because he
hath annointed me, to preach the Gospell vnto the
poore, he hath sent me to heale the broken hearted,
to preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recouering
of sight to the blinde, to set at liberty them
that are bruised.

19 And to preach the acceptable yeere of the
Lord.

20 And when he had closed the booke, and giuen
it againe to the minister, he sate downe: and the
eies of all them that were in the Synagogue were
fastened on him.

21 And he began to say vnto them, This day is this
Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondred at the
Matt. 7 g gratious words which proceeded out of his mouth.
Mark 1. c And they said, Is not this Ioseph's sonne?
Luke 2. e

23 And he said vnto them, Yee will surely say
vnto me this Prouerbe, Physition heale thy selfe:
whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum, doe
the same here also in thine owne countrey.

Matt. 13 24 And he said, Verily I say vnto you, No
Mark 6. a Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey.

25 But I tell you of a truth, many widdowes
3.Reg. 17. were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the hea-
Iam. 5. d uen was shut vp three yeeres and sixe moneths, when great
famine was throughout all the land:

26 And vnto none of them was Elias sent saue
vnto Sarepta a city of Sidon, vnto a woman that
was a widdow.

4.Reg. 5. 27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of
Eliæus the prophet: and none of them was cleansed
saue Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard
these

these things, were filled with wrath.

29 And rose vp and thrust him out of the citie, and led him euen vnto the top of the hill, whereon their citie was built, that they might cast him down headlong.

30 But hee passing through the midst of them, went his way.

31 And came downe to Capernaum, a citie of Galilee, and there taught them on the Sabboth dayes.

32 And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his preaching was with power. math 7.d and 13.g

33 And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of a foule Deuill, and cryed out with a lowd voyce. Math. 10 Mark 1.c

34 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue wee to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe who thou art, euen the holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace and come out of him. And when the Deuill had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him and hurt him not. f

36 And feare came on them all: and they spake among themselues, saying, What maner of thing is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the foule spirites and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into euery place of the countrey round about.

38 And when he was risen out of the Synagogue he entred into Simons house: & Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they made intercession to him for her. Mat 8.b Mark 1.c

39 And he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer and it left her, and immediately she arose, and ministred vnto them.

40 When the sun was downe, all they that had any sicke with diuers diseases, brought them vnto him and when hee had layd his handes on euery one of them, he healed them.

41 And deuils also came out of many, crying and saying, Thou art that Christ the sonne of God, and he rebuked them, & suffered them not to speake: for they knew that he was Christ.

42 And when it was day hee departed, and went into a desart place: and the people sought him, and came to him, and kept him that hee should not depart from them.

Matt 1.4 and 23.d

43 And he said vnto them, I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he was preaching in the Synagogues of Galilee.

## The v. Chapter.

1 Christ teacheth out of a ship, &c. New and old agreement.

IT came to passe, that when the people preased vpon him to heare the word of God, he was standing by the lake of Genazereth.

Mark 4.c

2 And he saw two shippes stand by the lakes side: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And when he was entred into one of the shippes which pertained to Simon, hee prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and hee sat downe and taught the people out of the ship.

4 When he had left speaking, he said vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, and let slip your nets to catch.

5 And Simon answering, said vnto him, Master, we haue laboured all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheless, at thy commandement I will loose forth the net.

6 And when they had thus done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, but their net brake:

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come & help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they sunke again.

8 When Simon Peter saw this, he fell downe at Jesus

Jesus knees, saying, Goe out from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was vtterly astonied and all that were with him at the taking of the fishes which they had caught together,

10 And so was also James and John the sonnes of Zebedee which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said vnto Simon, Feare not from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought vp their boates to the shore, they forsooke all and followed him.

12 And it came to passe, that when hee was in a certaine citie, behold, there was a man full of leprosie and when he saw Jesus, he fell flat on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 And when he had stretched forth his hand, hee touched him, saying, I will: bee thou cleane. And immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but goe, sayd he, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a witnesse vnto them. C Leu. 14. 2

15 But so much more went there a fame abroad of him, and much people came together to heare, and to be healed of him from their infirmities.

16 And hee kept himselfe apart in the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, & doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of euery towne of Galilee, and Iurie, and Hierusalem: & the power of the Lord was present to heale them.

18 And behold men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him. Mat. 9. 2 Mark. 2. 3

19 And when they could not find on what side they might bring him in, because of the presse, they went vp on the top of the house, and let him down through the tiling with his couch, euen into the midst before

Iesus.

20 When he saw their faith, hee sayd vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to thinke, saying, What fellow is this, which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but GOD onely?

Mark 2. c
Esai 43 d and 44. d

22 But when Iesus perceiued their thoughts, he answering, said vnto them, What thinke yee in your hearts?

23 Whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Rise vp, and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the sonne of man hath power to forgiue sinnes on earth, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say vnto thee, Arise, & when thou hast taken vp thy couch, goe vnto thine house.

Matt. 9. a
Mark 2. c
Acts 27.

25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and when he had taken vp his couch whereon he lay, hee departed to his owne house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they gaue the glory vnto God, and were filled with feare, saying, Doubtlesse we haue seene strange things to day.

27 And after these things he went forth, and sawe a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receite of custome: and he said vnto him follow me.

Matt. 9. a
Matt. 2. b

28 And when hee had left all, he rose vp and followed him.

29 And Leui made him a great feast in his owne house: and there was a great company of Publicanes, and of other that sate at meate with them.

30 But they that were Scribes and Pharisees among them murmured against his Disciples saying, Why doe yee eate and drinke with Publicans and sinners?

Matt. 9. a
Mar 2. b
Luke 7. a and 14. a

31 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, They that are whole need not a Physition, but they that are sicke.

32 I came not to call the righteous: but sinners to repentance.

33 And they said vnto him, Why do the disciples

of Iohn fast often and make prayers, & like wise the disciples of the Pharisees: but thine eate and drinke.

34 He sayd vnto them. Can yee make the children of the wedding chamber fast, whyle the bridegroome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, & when the bride groome shall be taken away from them, then shall they fast in those dayes. Math 9 Marke 2 F

36 He spake also vnto them a similitude. No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an old vesture for then the new rendeth the olde. and the peece that was taken out of the newe agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man powreth newe wine into old bottels, for if he do, the new wine will burst the bottels, and runne out it selfe, and the bottels, shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottels, & both are preserued.

39 No man also hauing drunke olde wine, will straight way haue new: for he sayth, The old is better.

## The vi. Chapter.

1 The disciples plucked the eares of corne on the Sabboth
42 With what fruit the word of God is to be heard.

AND it came to passe on the second Sabboth after the first, that he went through the corne fieldes and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate rubbing them in their hands. A Mrtt 12 Matth 2

2 And certaine of the Pharisees sayde vnto them. Why do ye that which is not lawfull to do on the sabboth dayes? 2.Reg 21

3 And Iesus answering them, sayd, Haue ye not read so much as this that Dauid did when hee him selfe was an hungred, and they which were with him

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take & eate the shew bread, and gaue also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eate, but for 1.Reg.21

5 And he sayd vnto them, That the sonne of man

he taught also of the Sabboth day.

6 And it came to passe also on an other Sabboth, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man whose right hand was dryed vp.

Matt 12. Mark 3.a 7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabboth day, that they might finde how to accuse him.

8 And he knew their thoughtes, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise vp and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the sabboth daies to doe good or to doe euill, to saue ones life or to destroy it?

10 And when he had beheld them all in compasse, he sayde vnto him, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did so and his hand was restored againe as whole as the other.

3.Reg 13 Matt.12. Mark 3.a

11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed together among themselues, what they might doe to Jesus

12 And it came to passe in those daies, that he went out into a mountaine to pray, and continued all night there in prayer to God.

Mat 14.

13 And when it was day, he called his disciples: and of them he chose twelue, whome also he called Apostles.

Matt 10. Mark 3.b 14 (Simon whome he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew.

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the sonne of Alphens and Simon which is called Zelotes,

16 And Judas James brother, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.)

Math 4.d Mark 3.a Math 4 d John 9. a

17 And when he came downe with them, he stood in the plaine field, and the company of his disciples and a great multitude of people, out of Iurie and Hierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sydon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits: & and they were healed.

19 And all the people prested to touch him, for there went vertue out of him and healed them all.

20 And when he had lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, he said, Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God. Math 5.4.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shalbe satisfied, Blessed are yee that weepe now for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall seperat you from their company, and shall raile on you, and put out your name as euill, for the sonne of mans sake. Amos 6.2

23 Reioyce ye in that day and leape yee for ioy: for behold your reward is great in heauen: for in like maner did their fathers vnto the prophets.

24 But woe vnto you that be rich: for yee haue your consolation.

25 Woe vnto you that are full: for ye shal hunger. Woe vnto you that now laugh: for ye shall mourne and weepe. Matth 5 f

26 Woe vnto you when men shall praise you for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 But I say vnto you which heare, loue your enemies, doe good to them that hate you.

28 Bless them that curse you: and pray for them which wrongfully trouble you.

29 And vnto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coat also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh thee and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

31 And as ye would that men should doe to you, doe yee also to them likewise.

32 For if ye loue them that loue you what thanke haue you? for sinners also loue their louers. Math 7 Eccle 7 Tobi. 4 Marke 9

33 And if ye do good for them which do good, for you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also do euen

34 And if ye lend to them, of whome ye hope to receiue, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receiue lucky like againe.

35 But loue you your enimies, and do good, and lend looking for nothing againe and your reward shalbe great and ye shalbe the children of the highest, for he is kind vnto the vnkind and to the euill.

Matth 7. 36 Be therefore mercifull, as your father also is mercifull.

37 Iudge not and ye shall not be iudged at all condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned, at all: forgiue, and ye shalbe forgiuen.

Prou 11. 38 Giue and it shalbe giuen vnto you, good measure, pressed downe, shaken together, and running ouer, shall men giue vnto your bosome: for with the

Matt 27. mark 14. same measure that ye mete, withall it shalbe measured to you againe.

39 And he put forth a similitude vnto them. Can

matt 15. the blind lead the blind? Shall they not both fall into the ditch.

40 The disciple is not aboue his master: but whosoeuer will be a perfect disciple, shalbe as his master is.

Iohn 13g 41 And why seest thou the moate that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let mee pull out the moate that is in thine eye? when thou thy selfe seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, and then shalt thou see perfectly to pull out the moate that is in thy brothers

Matth 7a eye.

43 For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruite neither is that an euill tree, that bringeth forth good fruite.

44 For euery tree is knowne by his owne fruite, for of thornes do not men gather figges, nor of a

matt 12, t bramble bush gather grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his

heart

heart bringeth forth that which is good: and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is euill: For of the abundance of his heart, his mouth speaketh. Psal 100. matt 12. matth. 7 and 15. b

46 Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and doe not as I bidde you?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to mee, and heareth my sayings, & doth the same, I will shew you to whome he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and laid the foundation on the rocke, and when the waters arose, the flood beate vehement vpon the house, and could not moue it: for it was grounded vpon the rocke matth 7. Iames. 1.

49 But he that heareth and doth not, is like a man that without foundation built an house vpon the earth: against which the flood did beate vehemently and it fell immediatly, and the fall of that house was great.

## The vii Chapter.

1 He healeth the Captaines seruant. 6. The faith of the Centurion. 37. The woman washeth his feete with her teares.

WHen he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruant, which was dere vnto him, being sicke was in perill of death.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he would come and heale his seruant. 1 Iohn 4. 1 matth. 8. a

4 And when they came to Iesus, they besought him instantly, saying. He is worthy that thou shouldest doe this for him.

5 For he loueth our nation, and hath built vs a synagogue. matth 8.

6 Then Iesus went with them, and when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not

enter vnder my roofe.

7 Wherefore, I thought not my ſelfe worthy to
B come vnto thee: but ſay thou the word, and my ſer-
uant ſhalbe whole.

8 For I am alſo a man ſet vnder power, hauing
vnder me ſouldiers: and I ſay vnto one, Goe, and he
goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and
to my ſeruant, Doe this, and he doth it.

9 When Jeſus heard theſe things, he marueiled
at him, and turned him about, and ſaid to the people
that followed him, I ſay vnto you, I haue not found
ſo great faith, no, not in Iſrael.

10 And they that were ſent, when they were re-
turned home, found the ſeruant whole that had bene
ſicke.

11 And it came to paſſe the day after, that he went
into a Citie called Naim: and many of his diſciples
went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the Citie, be-
holde there was a dead man caried out, which was
the only ſonne of his mother, and ſhe was a widdow:
and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord ſaw her, he had compaſſion
C on her, and ſaid vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And when he was come nigh, he touched the
bere, (and they that bare him ſtood ſtill) And he ſaid
1.Reg 17 young man I ſay vnto thee, Ariſe.
4.Reg 4. 15 And he that was dead, ſate vp, and began to
Acts 9.c ſpeake: and he deliuered him to his mother.
Iohn 4.c 16 And there came a feare vpon them all, and they
and 6.d glorified God, ſaying, That a great Prophet is riſen vp among vs, and that God hath vi-
ſited his people.

17 And this rumor of him went forth throu-
Matth 9. out all Iury, and throughout all the regions that lie round about.

18 And the diſciples of Iohn ſhewed him of all
theſe things.

19 And Iohn when he had called vnto him two
of his diſciples, he ſent them to Ieſus, ſaying, Art

he that commeth, or looke we for another?
20 When the men were come vnto him, they sayd, John Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying art thou he that commeth, or looke we for another.
21 And in that same houre he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of euill spirites, and vnto many that were blinde he gaue sight.
22 Then Jesus answering, said vnto them, Goe your way, and bring word againe vnto John what things ye haue seene and heard, howe that the blinde receiue again the sight, the lame go, the leapers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead rise, to the poore is the Gospell preached. Esay 35.a and 61.a
23 And happy is hee whosoeuer shall not be offended at me.
24 And when the messengers of John were departed, hee began to speake vnto the people concerning John: What went ye out into the wildernesse for to see? A reede shaken with the winde?
25 But what went ye out for to see a man clothed in soft raiment? Beholde, they which are gorgiously apparelled, and liue delicately, are in kinges courtes. Matth. 9.a
26 But what went ye forth to see? a prophet? yea I say vnto you, and more than a prophet.
27 This is he of whome it is written, Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare the way before thee. Matt. 11.a Mala. 3.a
28 For I say vnto you among women children there not a greater Prophet than John Baptist: neuertheless, hee that is lesse in the kingdome of God, is greater than he.
29 And all the people that heard him, and the Publicanes, being baptized with the baptisme of John, iustified God.
30 But the Pharisees and lawiers disprised the counsell of God against themselues, being not baptized of him.
31 And the Lord sayd, wherevnto shall I then [illegible]

they like?

32 They are like vnto children sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying, We
matt 11. have piped vnto you, and ye have not danced, We
mark 3. a have mourned vnto you and ye have not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread nor drinking wine, and ye say, he hath a deuill.

34 The sonne of man is come eating and drinking and ye say, Beholde a gluttonous man and a wine bibber, a freind of Publicans and sinners.

35 And wisedome is iustified of all her children.

36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eate with him, And he went into the Pharisees house, and sate downe to meate.

37 And behold a woman in that citie, which was a sinner when that she knew that Iesus sate at meate in the Pharisees house, she brought an alablaster box of ointment.

38 And stood at his feete behind him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares and to wipe them cleane with the haires of her head, and all to kissed his feete, and annointed them with the ointment.

39 When the Pharisee, which had bidden him sawe it he spake within himselfe, saying, if this man were a Prophet, he would surely know who, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him, for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Simon I haue some thing to say to thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two debters: the one ought fiue hundred pence, and the other fiftie.

42 When they had nothing to pay, he forgaue them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will loue him most.

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgaue most. And he said vnto him

Thou

thou hast truely iudged.

44 And he turned to the woman, & sayde vnto Simon, Sest thou this woman? I entred into thine house thou gauest me no water for my feete: but shee hath washed my feet with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feete.

46 [M]ine head with oyle thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgiuen her, for shee loued much: to whom little is forgiuen the same loueth little.

48 And he sayd vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And they that sate at meate with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that forgiueth sinnes. Matt 9.2

50 And he sayde to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee, go in peace.

## The viii. Chapter.

1 Christ and his Apostles go from town to towne & preach
3 The parable of the seed 16. And of the candle.

AND it came to passe afterward, that hee himselfe A
went through out euerie citie & vilage preaching and shewing the glad tidinges of the kingdome of God, and the twelue were with him.

2 And also certaine women which had beene healed Luk 23.6
of euill spirites and infirmities, Mary which is called Magdalen, out of whom went seuen deuils

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herodes steward and Susanna, and many other, which ministred vnto him of their substance

4 When much people were gathered together and were come to him out of all cities, he spake by a similitude. Matt 13. Marke 4

5 The sower went out to sow his seed: and as hee sowed some fell by the way side, and it was troden

downe and the fowles of the ayre deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on stones, and assoone as it was sprung vp, it withered awap, because it lacked moys-
26 nesse.

7 And some fell amonge thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choaked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp, and bare fruite an hundred fold. And as hee saide these things, he cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 And his disciples asked him saying, what manner of similitude is this.

10 And hee said vnto them, Vnto you it is giuen to
Matt 13. know the secrets of the kingdome of God: but to
Mark 4.a others vp parables, that when they see, they
Esay 6.c should not see, and when they heare, they should not
Math 13. vnderstand.
Mark 4.d
John 12.f 11 The parable is this, The seede is the word
Acts 28.f of God.
Rom 11.
Math 13. 12 Those that are beside the way, are they that
Mark 4.b heare: then commeth the deuill, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

13 They on the stones, are they which when they heare, receiue the word with ioy: and these haue no roote, which for a while beleeue, and in time of temptation goe awap.

14 And that which fell among thornes are they which when they haue heard, goe forth and are choked with cares and riches, and voluptuous liuing and bring forth no fruite.

15 But that which fell on the good ground, are
Mark 3.b they which with a pure and good heart heare the
Mark 4.b word and keepe it, and bringe forth fruite through
and 12.b patience.

16 No man when he lighteth a candle, couereth it with a vessel, or putteth it vnder a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

17 For no thing is secret, that shall not be made manifest,

manifest, neither any thing hid, that shall not bee knowne, and come to light.

18 Take heede therefore how you heare: for who soeuer hath to him shall be giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, from him shalbe taken euen that same which he supposeth that he hath. Matt 10. Mark 4.c Luk 12.a

19 Then came to him his mother and his brethren and could not come at him for preasse

20 And it was told him by certaine which said, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, willing to see thee. Math 12. and 2 5.a Mark 4. c Luk 9.d

21 He answered and saide vnto them, My mother and my brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it. Matt 12d Mark 4 d

22 And it came to passe on a certaine day that he went into a shippe, and his Disciples also: and hee saide vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake, and they launched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell a sleepe, and there came downe a storme of winde on the lake and they were filled with water, and were in ieopardie.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying Maister, maister we are lost. Then hee arose and rebuked the winde, and the tempest of water, and they ceased and it was calme. Matth 8.c Mark 5 a

25 And he said vnto them, Where is your faith? and they feared, and wondred, saying one to another Who is this? for he commandeth both the winds and water, and they obey him. Math 8 b

26 And they sailed vnto the region of the Gaderens which is ouer against Galilee. Math 5 a

27 And when he went out to land, there met him out of the citie a certaine man which had deuils long time, and wore no clothes, neither abode any house but in graues. Math 8.d

28 When hee sawe Jesus, and hadcryed aloud, he fell downe before him, and with a loud voyce said, What haue I to do with thee Jesus thou sonne of God most-highest? I beseech thee torment me not. Mark 5.a

For

29 (For he commaunded the foule spirit to come out of the man. For often times he had caught him: and he was bound with chaines, and kept with fetters: and he had brake the bandes and was carried of the fiend into the wildernesse.)

30 And Iesus asked him, saying, what is thy name? and he said, Legion: because many deuils entred into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not commaund them to go out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an heard of many swine feeding on an hill: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them, and he suffred them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the heard came headlong with violence into the lake, and were choaked.

34 When the heardmen saw what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they told it in the citie, and in the villages.

35 Therefore they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what meanes he that was possessed of the deuils was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenites, besought him that he would depart from them, for they were taken with great feare: and he gate him vp into the ship, and returned backe againe.

Math 8.c

Mark 5.b

38 Then the man out of whome the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him. But Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Go home againe to thine owne house, and shew what great things God hath done for thee. And he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Iesus was come againe, the people receiued him: for they were all waiting for him. Math. 9 d marke 5.

41 And beholde, there came a man named Iairus and he was a ruler of the Synagogue, and he fell downe at Iesus feete, praying him that he would come into the house.

42 For he had but one daughter onely, vpon a twelue yeares of age, and she lay a dying but as he went the people thronged him. matt 9 e

43 And a woman hauing an issue of bloud twelue yeares, which had spent all her substance vpon physitions, neither could be holpen of any, mark 5 e

44 Came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment: and immediately the issue of bloud stanched.

45 And Iesus said, Who is it that touched mee? When euery man denied, Peter and they that were with him, sayde, Master the people thrust thee, and presse thee and sayest thou, who touched mee?

46 And Iesus said, some body hath touched mee: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and fell at his feet, and told him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately. math 9 d

48 And he sayde vnto her, daughter, bee of good comfort, thy faith hath saued thee, (goe in peace. Mark 5 d

49 While he yet spake there commeth one from the ruler of the Synagogue house, saying, to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Iesus heard that word, he answered him, saying, Feare not, beleeue onely, and thee shalbe made whole Math 9 e mark 5 d

51 And when he came to the house, he suffered no man to go in with him, saue Peter, & Iames, & John and the father and the mother of the maiden. Iohn 3 f

52 Euery body wept, and sorowed for her: and he said, Weep not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that

he was dead.

54 And he thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and cryed saying, Maide arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straight way, and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 And her parents were astonied: but he warned them that they should tell no man what was done.

## The ix. Chapter.

2 The Apostles are sent to preach 57. Of three that would follow Christ, but after diuerse sortes of looking backe.

Matt 10. mark 3.d and. 6. b Luke 6.c

1 IEsus when hee had called the twelue together, gaue them power and authority ouer all deuils, and to heale the diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdome of God and to heale the sicke.

3 And he sayd vnto them, Take nothing to your iourney, neyther rod, nor scrippe, neither bread, neither money, neither haue two coates apiece.

4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoeuer will not receiue you, when ye go out of that citie shake off the very dust of your feete, for a testimony against them.

matt 14c Luke 6.b

6 And they departed, and went through the townes preaching the Gospel and healing euery where.

7 And Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him, and he doubted because that it was sayd of some, that Iohn was risen from death.

8 And of some that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the old prophets was risen.

9 And Herod said, Iohn haue I beheaded, but who is this of whome I heare such things? And hee desired to see him.

matt 14. mark 6.d Iohn 6. e

10 And the apostles when they returned, told him all that they had done: and hee tooke them and went aside into a solitary place nigh vnto the citie called Bethsaida.

11 Which when the people knew, they followed him; and when he had receiued them, he spake vnto them

them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed.

12 And when the day began to weare away, then came the twelue, and said vnto him, Sende the people away, that they may go into the villages, and fields round about and lodge, and get meate: for we are here in a place of wildernesse.

13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, We haue no mo but fiue loaues and two fishes, except we should go and buy meate for all this people.

14 And there were about fiue thousand men, and he said to his disciples, Cause them to sitte downe by fifty in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them al to sit downe.

16 And when he had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, he blessed them, and brake them, and gaue to the disciples to set before the people.

17 And they did all eate, and were satisfied, and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets full of broken meate. Math 15. Mark 8.

18 And it came to passe, as he was alone praying his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? math 16. mark 8.

19 They answering, said, John the Baptist: some say, Elias, and some say that one of the old Prophets is risen. matt 16.

20 He said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The anoynted of God. Leuit 6.

21 And he warned and commanded them to tell no man that thing.

22 Saying, that the sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders, and of the high Priests and Scribes, and be slaine, and rise the third day. matt 16. mark 8. Luk 17.

23 And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall loose it: but whosoeuer will loose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.

Math. 16 / Iohn 6. d / Luk 17 g

25 For what auantageth it a man, if he winne the whole world, and loose himselfe, or run in danger of himselfe.

26 For whosoeuer shalbe ashamed of me, and of my wordes, of him shall the sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in the glory of himselfe, and of his father, and of his holy angels.

matt 16c / mark 8 d / Luk 12 a

27 I tell you of a truth, there be some standing heare, which shall in no wise tast of death, till they see the kingdome of God.

28 And it came to passe, about an eight daies after these sayings, he tooke Peter, and Iohn, and Iames and went vp into a mountaine to pray.

matt 16. / mark 8 e

29 And it came to passe as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment shining very white.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which was Moses and Elias.

matt 17 / mark 9 g

31 That appeared in glory and spake of his departing, which he should end at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him were heauy with sleepe: and when they awoke, they saw his glory, and the two men standing with him

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter sayde vnto Iesus, Maister it is good being here for vs, let vs make three tabernacles one for thee and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he sayd.

math 17 / mark 10

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were come into the cloud.

2 Pet. 1.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, this is my deare sonne, heare him.

math 17 / mark 1 b / Luke 3. d / Deut 18.

36 And as soone as the voice was past, Iesus was found alone, and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 And

37 And it came to passe, that on the next day when they were come downe from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee behold my sonne, for he is all that I have.

39 And see a spirit taketh him, and suddenly hee teareth, and teareth him that he foameth againe, and with much paine he departeth from him, when hee renteth him

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 Jesus answering, sayde, O faithlesse and perverse nation, how long shall I be with you, and shall suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 As hee was yet comming, the fiend rent him, and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit and healed the child, and delivered him againe to his father.

43 And they were all amazed at the majestie of God: but while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did, he sayd unto his disciples.

44 Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares: For it will come to passe that the sonne of man shall be delivered into the handes of men.

45 But they will not what this word ment: and it was hid from them that they should not understand it: and they feared to aske him of that saying.

46 Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 When Jesus perceived the thoughtes of their heart, hee tooke a child, and set him hard by him,

48 And sayd unto them, whosoever shall receive this child in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for hee that is least among you all, the same shalbe great.

49 And John answering, sayd, Master, we saw one casting out Devils in thy name, and we forbad him, because he followeth not thee with us.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not:

Matt 17. mark 9.c

matt 17. mark 9.c

Luke 13. mark 4.d

Matt 16. matth 8.a Luke 9.c Luke 22.g and 18.f

Matt 18 mark 9.c Luk 22.f mar 10. Luk 10.c Iohn 13c

Num 11. for he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be receiued vp, he stedfastly set his face to goe to Hierusalem.

52 And sent messengers before his face: and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritanes, to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receiue him, because his face was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 When his Disciples, Iames and Iohn, sawe this, they said, Lord wilt thou that we commaund fire to come downe from Heauen, and consume them, euen as Elias did?

4. Reg 1. 55 Iesus turning about, rebuked them, saying, Ye wote not what maner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to another village.

57 And it came to passe, that as they went walking Matth 8 c in the way, a certaine man said vnto him, I will follow thee, Lord, whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, Foxes haue holes, and birdes of the ayre haue nestes: but the sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he said vnto an other, Follow me: And the same said, Lord suffer me first to goe and burye my father.

60 Iesus said vnto him, let the dead burye their Leuit 21 dead: but goe thou & preach the kingdome of God.

3. Reg 19 61 And an other said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first goe bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

62 Iesus said vnto him, No man hauing put his hand to the plough, and looking backe is apt to the kingdome of God.

## The x. Chapter.

1 He sendeth seuentie Disciples to preach, giuing them charge how to behaue themselues.

AFter these thinges, the Lord appointed other seuentie also, and sent them two and two before

his

his face, into euery citie and place, whether hee himselfe would come. M

2 Therefore said he vnto them, the harueſt is great but the labourers are fewe. Pray yee therefore the lord of the harueſt, to send forth labourers into his harueſt.

3 Goe your waies: Behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolues. Matt 9.6

4 Beare no waller, neyther scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

5 Into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

6 And if the sonne of peace bee there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not, it shall turne to you againe. 4. Reg. 4 Matt 10.

7 And in the same house tary still, eating and drinking such things as they haue: For the labourer is worthy of his reward. Goe not from house to house:

8 And into whatsoeuer citie ye enter, & they receiue you, eate such things as are set before you. 26

9 And heale the sicke that are therein, & say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come nigh vpon you.

10 And into whatsoeuer citie yee enter, and they receiue you not, goe your waies out into the streetes of the same. Marke 6

11 Euen the verie dust of your citie, which cleaueth on vs, we doe wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdome of God was come nigh vpon you.

12 I say vnto you, That it shall be easier in that day for Sodome, then for that citie.

13 Woe vnto thee Corazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes had bene done in Tyre and Sydon, which haue been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackecloth and ashes. Matt 11.

14 Therefore it shall be easier for Tyre and Sidon at the iudgement, then for you. C

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

Matt 10. Iohn 13c 16 He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and hee that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 And the seuenty turned againe with ioy, saying Lord euen the verie deuils are subdued to vs through thy name.

Rey 14. 18 And hee said vnto them, I sawe Satan as it had been lightning falling downe from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread on Serpents and Scorpions, and ouer al maner power of the enemie: and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

Phil. 4.a Apoc 17. 20 But in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in the heauens

Matt 11. 21 The same houre Iesus reioyced in the spirit, and said, I confesse vnto thee, father, Lord of heauen and Earth, that thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and prudent, and hast opened them vnto babes: euen so father, for it pleased thee.

Matt 17. and 18.a Mark 11 Iohn 7.d and 3.c 22 All things are giuen mee of my father: no man knoweth who the sonne is, but the father: and who the father is, but the sonne, & he to whom the sonne will reueale him.

Matt 13. 23 And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly, Happie are the eyes, which see the things that ye see.

24 For I tel you, That many prophets and kings haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those thinges which yee heare, and haue not heard them.

Matt 22. 25 And behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him saying, Maister, what shall I doe to inherite eternall life? Hee said vnto him.

Deut. 6 a 26 What is written in the law, how readest thou?

Matt 22. Mark 12. 27 And he answering, said. Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with al thy mind and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 And he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right

sight, this doe, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he, willing to iustifie himselfe, sayd vnto Iesus. And who is my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answering, sayd. A certaine man descended from Hierusalem to Iericho, and fell among theeues which robbed him of his raiment, & wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 And it befell, that there came downe a certaine priest that same way, and when hee saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Leuite, when hee came to the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certaine Samaritane, as he iourneyed came by him: and when he sawe him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bounde vp his woundes powring oyle and wine, and set him vpon his owne beast and brought him to a common Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on the morrow when hee departed, hee tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the host, and sayd vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompence thee. ¶

36 Which now of these 3. thinkest thou was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then sayd Iesus vnto him. Goe, & doe thou likewise.

38 Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certaine village: and a certaine woman named Martha receiued him into her house.

39 And this woman had a sister, called Mary, which also sate at Iesus feet and heard his word:

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing and came to him and said, Lord doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? Bid her therefore that shee come and helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered and sayd vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull and troubled about many

things

things.

42 Verily one is needful, Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

The xi. Chapter.

2 Christ teacheth his disciples to pray. 14. he driueth out a dumbe deuill.

AND so it was, that as hee was praying in a certaine place, when hee ceased, one of his Disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples. Mark 6 d

2 And he said vnto them, When ye pray, say, O our Father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy name, Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done, euen in earth also as it is in heauen.

3 Giue vs daily bread giue vs this day.

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen we forgiue euery man that trespasseth vs. And lead vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill.

5 And he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall goe vnto him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues:

6 For a friende of mine is come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing to set before him. 26

7 And he from within shall answere, and say, Trouble me not: the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue thee.

8 I say vnto you, Though hee will not rise, and giue him, because hee is his friend, yet because of his importunitie, hee will rise, and giue him as many as he needeth.

9 And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall be giuen you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you. Math 7. f Iohn 16 f Iames 1.

10 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth, and to him that knocketh, shall it be opened.

11 If the sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone? Or if he aske fish will he for fish giue him a serpent.

12 Or if he shall aske an egge, will he offer him

a Exemion.

13 If ye then being euill, haue knowledge to giue good gifts vnto your children: how much more shal the father of heauen giue the holie spirit to them that desire it of him.

14 And he was casting out a deuill, and the same was dumbe. And it came to passe, when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake: & the people wondred. Mat 9.d Mark 7.

15 But some of them saide, Hee casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils. Mat 9.b

16 And another tempting him, required of him a signe from heauen. Mark 3.d

17 But he knowing their thoughts said vnto them Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, is desolate: and a house deuided against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be deuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome endure, because ye say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub. Mat 9.d Mark 3

19 If I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out deuils, no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When the stronge man armed, keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then he shall come vpon him, and ouer come him, he taketh from him al his harnesse wherein he trusted and deuideth his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against mee: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 When the vncleane spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will returne vnto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he commeth, hee findeth it swept, and garnished. Mark 1a

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seuen other spirites worse then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 And

27 And it came to passe as he spake these thinges, a certaine woman of the company lift vp her voyce and sayde vnto him, Happie is that wombe that bare thee, and the papps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he sayd, Yea rather, happie are they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

29 When the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is an euill nation: they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of Ionas the Prophet. Matt 12. Mark 8. b Rom 6. d

30 For as Ionas was a signe vnto the Niniuites, so shall also the sonne of man be to this nation.

31 The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgement with the men of this nation, & condemne them: for she came from the vttmost parts of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Salomon: and behold a greater then Salomon is here. 3. Reg 10. 2 Par 9. Matt 12.

32 The men of Niniue shall rise in iudgement with this nation, and shall condemne them: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

33 No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuate place neyther vnder the bushell: but on a candlesticke, that they which come in may see the light. Matt 5. b marke 4. b Luke 8. c

34 The candle of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, all the body also is full of light: but if thine eye be euill, all thy body also is full of darkenesse. Matth 6. c

35 Take heede therefore that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse.

36 If all thy body therefore be cleare, hauing no part darke: then shall it be all full of light, euen as when a candle doth light thee with brightenesse.

37 And as he spake, a certaine Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and Iesus went in, and sate at meate.

38 When the Pharisee saw it, he maruelled that he had not first washed before dinner. Mark 7. c

39 And the Lord sayd vnto him, Now do ye Phi-

ches make cleane the outside of the cup, and the platter: but your inner parte is full of rauening and wickednesse.

40 Yee fooles did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of those thinges which are within: and behold, all things are cleane vnto you.

42 But woe vnto you Pharisees, for ye tith Mint, and Rue, and all manner herbes, & passe ouer iudgment, and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and yet not to leaue the other vndone. G Matt. 23.

43 Woe vnto you Pharisees: for yee loue the vppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them, are not ware of them.

45 Then answered one of the lawiers, and saide vnto him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also.

46 And he said, Woe vnto you also yee lawiers: for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Esay 10. Matt 23.

47 Woe vnto you, for yee build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them. Matt. 23

48 Truely ye beare witnesse, that yee allow the deeds of your fathers: for they killed them, and yee build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore saide the wisedome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute: Matt 23

50 That the bloud of all the Prophets, which was shedde from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation Gen. 4. b 2 par. 24

51 From the bloud of Abell, vnto the bloud of Zacharie, which perished betweene the altar and the temple: Verily I say vnto you, it shall be required of this nation.

52 Woe

52 Woe vnto you lawiers, for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbad.

53 When he thus spake vnto them, the lawyers & the Pharisees began to vrge him vehemently, and to prouoke him to speake many things.

54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch some thing out of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

## The xii. Chapter.

2 The leuen of the Pharisees is to be auoided, 22. Against care of earthly things.

IN the meane time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one on another, he began to say vnto his disciples, First of all beware of the leuen of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

Mark. 4. c
Luke 8. c

2 For there is nothing couered, that shall not be vncouered, neither hid, that shall not be knowne.

matt. 10.
Luke 8. b

3 Therefore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darkenesse, shalbe heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, euen in secrete places, shalbe preached on the top of the houses.

Matt 10.

4 And I say vnto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, haue no more, that they can doe.

5 But I will forewarne you whom you shal feare. Feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say vnto you, Feare him.

6 Are not fiue sparrowes sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

26

7 But euen the very haires of your head are numbred: feare not therefore, Ye are of more value then many sparrowes.

8 And I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me before men, him shal the sonne of man knowledge before the angels of God.

9 But he that shall denie me before men, shall be

Matt. 10.
Mark. 3 d

denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a worde against

the

the forme of man, it shalbe forgiuen him, but vnto him that blaspheme the the holy ghost it shal not be forgiuē

11 And when they bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and officers, take yee no thought how or what thing ye shall answere or what ye shall speake:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 One of the company said vnto him, Master, speake to my brother, that he deuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made mee a iudge or a deuider ouer you? C.

15 And he said vnto them, Take heed, and beware of couetousnesse, for no mans life standeth in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he put forth a similitude vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man, brought forth plentifull fruites.

17 And he thought within himselfe saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no roome where to bestow my fruites?

18 And he said, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and build greater and therein will I gather all my fruites and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods laid vp in store for many yeeres take thine ease, eate, drinke and be merry. Eccle. 11

20 But God said vnto him, thou foole, this night do they require thy soule againe frō thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast prouided? Iere. 17.

21 So is he that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not rich toward God. Psal. 39. 49. Matt. 6. d 1. Pet. 5.

22 And he spake vnto his disciples. Therefore I say vnto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eate, neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

23 The life is more then meate, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the rauens, for they neither sow nor reape, which neither haue store house nor barne, and

God feedeth

notwithstanding God feedeth them: How much more are yee better then the foules?

Matt.6.d 25 Which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubite?

26 If ye then bee not able to do that thing which is least: why take ye thought for the remnant?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow, they labour not, they spin not: and yet I say vnto you, that Salomon in all his royalty, was not clothed like one of these.

28 If God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, & to morrow is cast into the furnace: how much more will he cloth you O yee of little faith.

29 And aske not ye, what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke, neither be ye of doubtfull mind.

30 For all such things do the people of the world seeke for: and your father knoweth that yee have need of these things.

Matt.6.c 31 But rather seeke yee after the kingdome of
2.Tim.4. God, & all these things shalbe added vnto you.
Eccl.29. 32 Feare not O little flocke for it is your fathers
Prou.23. good pleasure to giue you a kingdome.

33 Sell that ye have, and giue almes: and prepare
Matt.19 you bagges which wax not old, even a treasure that
Mark.10 faileth not in the heavens, where no theefe approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loynes be girt about, and your lights
burning.

Ephes.6. 36 And yee your selves bee like vnto men that
1.Pet.1. wait for their Lord when he will returne from the wedding, that when he shall come and knock, they may open vnto him immediatly.

37 Happy are those servants whom the Lord when he cometh shal find waking. Verily I say vnto you, That he shall gird himself, & make them sit downe to meat & will come forth and minister vnto them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, yea, & he shall come in the third watch, and find them so,

happy

happy are those seruants.

39 This vnderstand yee, that if the good man of the house had known what houre the theefe would come, he would surely haue watched, and not haue suffered his house to be broken through.

40 Be yee therefore ready also, for the sonne of man commeth in an houre when ye think not.

41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this similitude vnto vs, or vnto all? Matt. 24. Mark. 13.

42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithfull and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler ouer his houshold, and to giue them the portion of meate in due season? Matt. 24. Mark 13.

43 Happie is that seruant, whom his Lord when he commeth, shall find so doing. Apoc. 16

44 Of a truth I say vnto you, That he will make him ruler ouer all his substance Matt. 24.

45 But and if that seruant say in his heart, my Lord delayeth his comming, and shall begin to smite the seruants and maidens, and to eate and drinke, & to be drunken.

46 The Lord of that seruant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an houre when he is not aware, and will hewe him in peeces, and will set him his portion with the vnbelieuers.

47 And the seruant that knew his masters will, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. James 5.

48 But he that knoweth not, & did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with fewe stripes. For vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shall be much required: and to whom men haue committed much, of him they will aske the more.

49 I am come to send fire on the earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled.

50 Notwithstanding, I must be baptized with a baptisme, and how am I pained till it be ended?

51 Suppose ye that I am come to send peace on earth? I tell you, Nay, but rather diuision. Mark. 16

52 For from henceforth there shall fiue in one

house deuided, three against two, & two against three.

53 The father shalbe deuided against the son, & the son against the father, the mother against the daughter & the daughter against the mother, the mother in
Matt. 16. law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in lawe against her mother in law.

54 He said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shawze: and so it is.

55 And when yee see the South wind blow, ye say
Matt. 5, d it will be hote, and it commeth to passe.
Prou. 25. 56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie & of the earth: but how is it that ye do not discerne this time?

57 Yea and why iudge ye not of your selues what is right.

58 When thou goest with thine aduersary to the ruler: as thou art in the way giue diligence, that thou maist be deliuered from him, least he drawe thee violently to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the Sergeant, and the Sergeant cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence till thou hast made good the vttermost mite.

## The xiii. Chapter.

* Of the figge tree that bare no fruite. 24. Few enter into the kingdome of Christ.

THere were present at the same season, certain men, that shewed him of the Galileans, whose bloud Pilate had mingled with their owne sacrifice.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose yee that these Galileans were greater sinners than al the other Galileans, because they suffered such punishment?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteene, vpon which the towre in Siloe fell, & slew them, thinke ye that they were sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Hierusalem.

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise

likewise perish.

6 He tolde also this similitude, A certaine man had a figge tree planted in his vineyard, and hee came and sought fruite thereon, and found none. Matt. 21.

7 Then said he to the dresser of the vineyard, Behold, this three yeeres I come seeking fruit of this figge tree, and finde none: cut it downe why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this yeare also, till I shall dig round about it, and dung it.

9 And if it beare fruite, (thou mayest let it alone,) and if it beare not, then after that thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And he was teaching in one of their Synagogues on the Sabboth daies.

11 And behold, there was a woman, which had a spirit of infirmity eighteene yeares and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her selfe.

12 When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he laid his hands on her and immediatly she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabboth day, and said unto the people. There are sixe daies in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come, that ye may be healed, and not on the Sabboth day.

15 But the Lord answered him, and saide, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabboth loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him to the water? Matt. 2. Luke. 14.

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham whom Satan hath bound lo, eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabboth day.

17 And when hee said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: & all the people reioyced for all the excellent deeds that were done by him.

18 Then said Iesus, what is the kingdome of

God like? or whereto shall I compare it?

Matt. 13 Mark. 4. 19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke, and sowed in his garden, and it grewe and waxed a great tree: and the fowles of the ayre made nestes in the braunches of it.

20 And againe he saith, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

Matt. 13. Gen. 18. 21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hidde in three peckes of meale, till all was leauened.

22 And hee went through all townes and villages, teaching and journeying towardes Hierusalem.

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord are there fewe that shalbe saued? and he said vnto them.

24 Striue to enter in at the straight gate: for many I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When the good man of the house is risen vp and hath shut the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, and he shall answere, and say vnto you, I

Matt 8.b know not whence ye are.

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We haue eaten and dronken in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

27 And he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are, depart from me all ye that worke iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and you your selues thrust out.

Matt. 8 b 29 And they shall come from the east and from the West, and from the North and from the South, and shall sit downe in the kingdome of God.

30 And behold, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are first, which shalbe last.

31 The same day came there certain of the Pharisees saying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart hence, for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said vnto them, Go ye and tell that fox

behold,

behold, I cast out deuils, & I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuertheles, I must walke to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet perish out of Hierusalem.

34 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest Prophetes, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee: how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the hen doth gather her yong vnder her wings, and ye would not? Matt.23.

35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate. Verily I say vnto you, ye shall not see me vntill the time come that ye shall say: Blessed is he that commeth in the name of the Lord. Mat. 23.

## The xiiii Chapter.

12 To feast the poore. 26. Of the great supper. 34. The salte of the earth.

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chiefe Pharisees to eate bread on the sabboth day, they were watching him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him which had the dropsie.

3 And Iesus answering spake vnto the lawiers and Pharisees saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabboth day? matt.12. Mark.3.a Luke 6.a

4 And they held their peace. And he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe. Exod.23

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall haue an asse or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabboth day. Deut.22. Matt.12.

6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

7 He put forth also a similitude to the ghests when he marked how they chose out the chiefe roomes, saying vnto them. 25

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not downe in the highest roome: least a more honorable man then thou be bidden of him.

9 And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Giue this man roome: and thou then begin with

shame to take the lowest roome.

Prou.25. 10 But when thou art bidden, goe and sit in the lowest roome, that when he that bad thee commeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at meate with thee.

Matt.23. Luke 14. 11 For whosoeuer exalteth himself, shal be brought low: and he that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.

12 Then said hee also to him that had him to meate, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours: least they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, and the blinde.

14 And thou shalt be happie, for they cannot recompence thee: For thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust men.

15 When one of them that sate at meat also heard these things, he said vnto him, Happy is he that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

16 Then said he vnto him, A certaine man ordained a great supper, and bad many.

Matt.22. Apoc.19. 17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all at once began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a peece of ground, and I must needes goe and see it: I pray thee hold me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of Oxen, and I goe to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife and therefore I cannot come.

21 And the seruant returned, and shewed his Master these things. Then the good man of the house being angry said to his seruant, go out quickly into the broad streets, and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt,

halt, and the blind.

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commaunded, and yet there is roome.

23 And the Lord said vnto the seruant, Goe out into the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in that my house may be filled. Gen. 19.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall tast of my supper.

25 There went a great company with him, and he returned, and said vnto them.

26 If any man come to me and hate not his father and mother, and wife, and children, & brethren, and sisters, yea and his owne life also, he cannot bee my disciple. Matt. 10. Luke 9.c

27 And whosoeuer doth not beare his crosse and come after me, cannot be my disciple,

28 For which of you disposed to build a towre, sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to perfourme it?

29 Least at any time after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to perfourme it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him.

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an end.

31 Or what king going to make battell against another king, sitteth not downe first, & casteth in his mind whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that cometh against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 Salt is good, but if the salt haue lost the saltnesse, wherein shall it be seasoned? Matt 5.d

35 It is neither good for the land, nor yet for the dung hill: but men cast it out at the doores. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare Mark 9.g

The xv. Chapter.

1 The great mercy of God is set forth in the parable

of the lost sheepe.

Then resorted vnto him all the Publicans and sin-
ners, for to heare him.

Matt. 9. b 2 And the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, say-
Mark 2. b ing: He receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.
Luk. 5. f 3 But he put forth this parable vnto them, saying

4 What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if
Matt. 18. he lose one of them, doth leaue ninety and nine in the
wildernes, and goe after that which is lost, vntil he
find it?

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his
shoulders reioycing:

6 And when he commeth home he calleth toge-
ther his friends and neighbours, saying, vnto them
reioyce with me, for I haue found my sheepe which
was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in hea-
ue n ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer
ninety and nine iust persons that need no repentance.

8 Either what woman hauing ten peeces of siluer
if she loose one peece, doth not light a candle, & sweep
the house and seeke diligently till she find it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends
and her neighbours together, saying, Reioyce with
me, for I haue found the peice which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the pre-
Luke 5. f sence of the Angels of God ouer one sinner that re-
penteth.

11 And he said, A certaine man had two sonnes:

12 And the yonger of them said to his father, Fa-
ther, giue me the portion of the substance that to me
belongeth: and he deuided vnto them his liuing.

13 And not many dayes after, when the yonger
sonne had gathered all that he had together, he tooke
his iourney into a farre countrey, and there wasted
his substance.

14 And when hee had spent all, there arose a great
Psal. 89 dearth in that land, and he began to lacke.

15 And going, he ioyned himselfe to a citizen of that
countrey, and he sent him into the fields to feed swine.

16 And

16 And he would faine haue filled his belly with the coddes that the swine did eate: and no man gaue vnto him.

17 And when he came to himselfe, hee sayde, How many hyred seruants of my fathers haue bread inough and spare and I perish with hunger.

18 I will ryse and goe to my father, and will say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee.

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne make me as one of thy hyred seruants

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne. Iob 13. c Psa. 51. a

22 But the father said to his seruants, bring forth the best garment, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feete: b

23 And bring hither that fat calfe, and kill it, and let vs eate and be merry.

24 For this my sonne was dead, & is aliue againe he was lost and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 The elder brother was in the fielde: and when he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musicke and dancing.

26 And called one of his seruants, and asked what those things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come & thy father hath killed the fat calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound. c

28 And he was angry, and would not goe in, therefore came his father out and intreated him.

29 He answering, sayde to his father, Lo these many yeares doe I serue thee, neyther brake I at any time thy commaundement, and yet thou neuer gauest mee a kid, that I might make merry with my

friendes:

30 But assoone as this thy sonne was come which hath deuoured thy liuing with harlots, thou hast for his pleasure killed that fat calfe.

31 And hee sayde vnto him, Sonne thou art euer with me, and all that I haue is thine.

32 It was meete that we should make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and was lost, and is found.

## The xvi. Chapter.

13 No man can serue two maisters. 19 Of the rich glutton and Lazarus.

1 AND he sayde also vnto his disciples. There was a certaine rich man which had a stewarde, and the same was accused vnto him that hee had wasted his goodes.

2 And when he had called him, he sayde vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue accompte of thy stewardship: for thou mayst bee no longer steward.

3 The steward said within himselfe, what shall I doe: for my maister taketh away frō me my stewardship? I cannot dig, and to beg I am ashamed.

4 I wote what to doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 So when he had called all his maisters debters together, he said vnto the first. How much owest thou vnto my maister?

6 And he sayd, an hundred measures of oile. And he sayd vnto him, Take thy bill, and set down quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then sayd he to another, how much owest thou? 20 And hee sayde, an hundred measures of wheate. He sayd vnto him. Take thy bill, and write fourescore.

8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world, are in their nation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make you freindes of the riches of vnrighteous Mammon, that when ye shall haue need they

they may receiue you into the euerlasting habitations.
10 He that is faithfull in that which is least is faithfull also in much: and he that is vnrighteous in the least, is vnrighteous also in much.
11 So then if ye haue not been faithfull in the vnrighteous Mammon, who shall trust you in the true (treasures.)
12 And if ye haue not been faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall giue you that which is your owne?
13 No seruant can serue two masters, for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other: ye cannot serue God and Mammon.
14 All these things heard the Pharisees also which were couetous: and they mocked him greatly. Mark. 6. 8
15 And he said vnto them Ye are they which iustifie your selues before men, but God knoweth your hearts, for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abhommination in the sight of God.
16 The law and the prophets were vntil Iohn, and since that time the glad tidings of the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man striueth to go in Matt. 11
17 Easier it is for heauen and earth to passe away then one title of the law to faile. Esai 40. Matt. 5 c
18 Whosoeuer forsaketh his wife and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and hee that marieth her that is diuorced from her husband committeth adultery also. Matt. 19. Mark 10
19 There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine white, and fared deliciously euery day.
20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus which was laid at his gate full of sores.
21 And desiring to be refreshed with the crummes which fell from the rich mans bord, and no man gaue vnto him: but the dogs came and licked his sores.
22 And it came to passe, that the begger died, and was carried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And

23 And being in hell in torments, when hee lift vp his eyes, he seeth Abraham a far off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 And he cryed, and said, Father Abraham haue mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dippe the tippe of his finger in water, and coole my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst thy pleasure, and likewise Lazarus paines, but now hee is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene vs and you there is a great gulfe stedfastly set, so that they which would goe from hence to you, cannot: neither haue passage to vs, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father that thou wouldst send him to my fathers house.

28 For I haue fiue brethren, that he may witnesse vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue Moses & the Prophets, let them heare them.

30 And he said, Nay father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 He said vnto him, If they heare not Moses & the Prophets, neyther will they beleeue though one rise from the dead.

## The xvii. Chapter.

1 Christ teacheth to auoid offences. 5 The manner of offences.

THen said vnto his disciples, It cannot be but offences must come, neuertheles wo vnto him through whom they come.

Mark. 10. Matt. 9. f

2 It were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 Take heede to your selues: If thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if hee repent, forgiue him:

4 And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day

a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent: thou shalt forgiue him. Matt. 18

5 And the Apostles said to the Lord, Encrease our faith.

6 And the Lord said, If yee had faith as much as a graine of mustard seede, ye should say vnto this Sycamine tree, Be thou plucked vp by the roote and be thou planted in the Sea: and it should obey you. Mark. 11. 22 and 11. 23

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say vnto him by and by when he were come from the field, Goe and sit downe at the table.

9 And will not rather say vnto him, Dresse where with I may sup, gird vp thy selfe, and serue me till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward thou shalt eate and drinke,

9 Doth he thanke that seruant because hee did the things that were commanded vnto him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee shall haue done all those things which are commanded you, say, Were are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which is our duty to doe.

11 And so it was as hee went to Hierusalem, that hee passed through the middest of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certaine village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stoode a farre off.

13 And they put forth their voices, and said Iesu maister, haue mercy on vs. Leuit. 14.

14 When hee sawe them, hee said vnto them, Goe shew your selues vnto the Priestes. And it came to passe, that as they went they were cleansed. Matt. 8 & c.

15 And one of them, when hee saw that hee was healed, turned backe againe with a loude voice, glorifying God: Leuit 14.

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, giuing him thankes, and the same was a Samaritane.

By Iesus

17 And Jesus answering, sayd, Are there not ten cleansed, but where are those nine?

18 There are not founde that returned againe to giue glory to God, saue onely this stranger.

19 And he sayd vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 When he was demanded of the Pharisees whē the kingdome of God commeth: he answering them sayd, The kingdome of God commeth not with obseruation.

21 Neither shall they say, Loe here, or loe there: for beholde, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he sayd vnto the disciples, The dayes will come when ye shall desire to see one day of the sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See here, see there: go not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as the lightning that lighteth out of the one part that is vnder heauen shineth vnto the other part that is vnder heauen: so shall also the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be disalowed of this nation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe: so shall it be also in the dayes of the sonne of man.

Gen. 7. b 27 They did eate and drinke, they married wiues, and were married, euen vnto the same day that Noe went into the arke: and the flood came also and destroyed them all.

28 Likewise also as it was in the daies of Lot, they did eate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

Gen. 19. f 29 But euen the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rayned fire and brimstone from heauen, and destroyed them all:

30 Euen thus shall it be in the day when the sonne of man is reuealed:

Matt. 24 31 At that day he which shalbe on the house top & his stuffe in the house, let him not come down to take it out: and let not him that is in the fielde, turne backe

againe likewise to the things that he left behinde.
32 Remember Lots wife.
33 Whosoeuer will goe about to saue his life, shal loose it: & whosoeuer shal loose his life, shal quicken it.
34 I tell you, in that night there shall bee two in one bed, the one shall bee receiued, the other shall bee left alone.
35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe receiued, and the other left alone.
36 Two men shalbe in the field: the one shal bee receiued, and the other forsaken.
37 And they answering, sayde vnto him, Where Lord? He sayd vnto them, Where soeuer the body shal be, there will also the Eagles be gathered together.

Gen. 19.f
Matt. 16. John 6. d Luke 9.c
Matt. 24. f
Math 23

## The xviii. Chapter.

1 Christ teacheth to continue in prayer, 32. He foresheweth his death.

AND he put forth a parable vnto them, to this ende, that men ought alwayes to pray, and not to bee wearie.
2 Saying. There was in a certaine citie a certaine iudge, which feared not God, neyther regarded man.
3 And there was a certaine widdow in the same citie, and she came vnto him saying, Auenge me of mine aduersary.
4 And he would not for a while. But afterwarde he sayd within himselfe: though I feare not God, nor care for man,
5 Yet because this widdow much troubleth mee, I will auenge her, least she come at the last and make me weary.
6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vnrighteous iudge saith.
7 And shall not God auenge his elect, which cry day and night vnto him, yea, though he defer them?
8 I tell you that hee will auenge them, and that quickly. Neuertheless, when the Sonne of man commeth, shall he find faith on the earth?
9 And he told this parable vnto certaine which trusted

1. Thess 5
28

trusted in themselues that they were righteous, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publicane.

Deu. 16. 11 The Pharisee stoode and prayed thus with him
Eccle. 7 a selfe, God, I thanke thee that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke, I giue tithe of all that I possesse.

13 And the Publicane standing a farre off, would not lift vp his eyes to heauen: but smote vpon his brest, saying, God be mercifull vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you this man departed downe to his house iustified rather then the other: For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shalbe brought low: & he that humbleth himselfe shalbe exalted.

15 They brought vnto him also infantes that he should touch them: when his disciples saw, they rebuked them.

¶ 16 But Jesus, when he had called them vnto him
Matt. 24 said, suffer little children to come vnto me, & forbid
Luk. 14 c them not: for to such belongeth the kingdome of God.

17 Verily I say vnto you Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good maister, what ought I to doe to possesse eternal life?

19 Jesus said vnto him, why callest thou me good?
Matt. 18 None is good, saue God only.
Mark. 10
Matt. 19 20 Thou knowest the commaundements. Do not
Exod 20 commit adulterie. Doe not kill. Doe not steale. Beare
Mark. 5 c not false witnesse. Honour thy father and thy
Deut 5. b mother.

21 And he sayde, All these haue I kept from my
¶ youth vp.

22 When Jesus heard that, he said vnto him, yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thou hast and distribute to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in

heauen

heauen, and come follow me

23 When he heard this, he was very sorie: for he was very rich.

24 When Iesus saw that he was very sorie, he said How hardly shall they that haue money, enter into the kingdome of God? Matt 19. Mark 10

25 For it is easier for a Cammell to goe through a needles eye, then for the rich man to enter into the kingdome of God. Matt 19.

26 And they that heard it, sayde, and who then can be saued? Mark 10

27 And he sayd, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God. Zach 8.b

28 Then Peter sayd, loe, we haue forsaken all, and followed thee

29 Hee sayd vnto them. Verily I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken house either parents, either brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake. E Matt 19. Mark 8 b

30 Which shall not receiue manifold more in this world, and in the world to come, life euerlasting

31 Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, and sayd vnto them, Behold, wee goe vp into Hierusalem, and all things shall be fulfilled to the sonne of man, that are written by the Prophets. Matt 17. Mark 8.d 9.d. and, 10.c

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentils, and shall bee mocked, and spitefully entreated and spitted on: Luke 6. e and 17.a

33 And when they haue scourged him, they will put him to death: and the third day he shall rise.

34 And they vnderstoode none of all these thinges and this saying was hid from them, so that they perceiued not the things which were spoken matt 16 and 17 b mark 9.a

35 And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate by the waies side begging. Luke 2.g and 9.f

36 And when he heard the people passe by, he asked what it ment. F matt 20.

37 And they sayde vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by. Mark 10.

38 And he cryed saying, Iesu thou sonne of Dauid haue mercy on me.

Mark 12 39 And they that went before rebuked him that he should hold his peace: but he cryed so much the more Thou sonne of Dauid haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus staying, commanded him to bee brought vnto him: and when he was come neere, he asked him.

41 Saying, what wilt thou that I shall doe vnto thee? And hee sayde, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Receiue thy sight, thy faith hath saued thee.

43 And immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gaue praise vnto God.

## The xix. Chapter.

*Christ rideth into Hierusalem, and weeping ouer it foreshoweth the destruction thereof.*

AND Iesus entered in, and went through Iericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chief among the Publicans, and was rich also.

3 And hee sought meanes to see Iesus what hee should bee, and could not for the preasse, because hee was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, & climed vp into a wild figge tree, to see him: for he was to come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp and saw him, and said vnto him, Zache come downe

Acts 16 at once: for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when they all saw it, they murmured saying, that hee was gone in to tary with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zache stood forth, and sayd vnto the Lord, Behold Lord, the halfe of my goodes I giue to the poore, and if I haue taken from any man by forged

extillation, I restore him foure folde

9 Jesus sayd vnto him, This day is salvation come to this house: because that hee is also the child of Abraham.

10 For the sonne of man is come to seeke and to save that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these things, hee added and spake a parable, because hee was nigh to Hierusalem and because they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare.

12 Hee said therefore, A certaine noble man went into a farre country, to receive for himselfe a kingdome, and to come againe.

13 And when he had called his tenne servants, he delivered them tenne peeces of money, saying vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him and sent a messenger after him, saying, Wee will not have this man to raigne over vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when hee had returned receiving his kingdome, then hee commanded those servantes to be called vnto him, to whome he had given the money, that hee might know how much every man had gained in occupying.

16 Then came the first saying, Lord, thy peece hath gained tenne peeces.

17 And he sayd vnto him, Well thou good servant because thou hast been faithfull in a very little thing have thou authority over tenne cities. Matt 25.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy peece hath increased five peeces.

19 And to the same hee sayde, Bee thou also ruler over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy peece, which I have layde vp in a napkin.

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a straight man: thou takest vp that thou laidst not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 Then he sayde vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I judge thee, thou evill servant: knowest thou

that I am a straight man, taking vp that I laide not
downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.
a.Reg.2c 23 And wherefore gauest thou not my monie into
the banke, and at my comming I might haue re-
quired mine owne with vantage?
24 And he sayde vnto them that stoode by, Take
from him that peice, and giue to him that hath ten
peeces.
25 And they sayde vnto him, Lord, hee hath ten
peeces.
Matt 13. and. 25.c Mark 4.c Luke 8.c 26 For I say vnto you, that vnto euery one which
hath, shall be giuen: and from him that hath not, shal
bee taken away euen that hee hath.
27 Moreouer, those mine enemies which would
not that I should raigne ouer them, bring hither, & slea them before me.
28 And when he had thus spoken, hee went for-
ward, ascending vp to Hierusalem.
Matt 21. Mark 9.a 29 And it came to passe when hee was come nigh
to Bethphage and Bethanie, besides the mount which
is called Oliuet, he sent two of his disciples.
30 Saying, Goe ye into the towne which is ouer
against you, in the which at your entring, yee shall
find a colt tyed, whereon yet neuer man sate: loose
him and bring him hither.
Matt 21. Mark 11. 31 And if any man aske you, Why doe yee loose
him? Thus shall yee say vnto him, Because the Lord
hath neede of him.
32 They that were sent, went their way, & found
euen as he had sayde vnto them.
33 And as they were a loosing of the colt, the ow-
ners thereof sayde vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?
34 And they sayde, For the Lord hath neede of
him.
35 And they brought him to Iesus, and their gar-
ments being cast on the colt, they set Iesus thereon.
36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the
way.
37 And when he was now come nigh to the going
downe of the mount Oliuet, the whole multitude of
the

the disciples began reioycing to praise God with a loud voyce, for all the miracles that they had seene.
38 Saying, Blessed be the king that commeth in the name of the Lorde, peace in heauen, and glory in the highest. Abac. 1. c
39 And some of the Pharisees of the company sayd vnto him, Maister, rebuke thy disciples. Iohn 11.
40 Hee answering, said vnto them, I tell you that if these would hold their peace, then shall the stones cry immediatly.
41 And when he was come neare, hee beheld the citie and wept on it. Iere 32. a Matt 24.
42 Saying, if thou haddest knowne these thinges which belong vnto thy peace, euen in this thy day: but nowe are they hid from thine eyes. Mich 3. d
43 For the dayes will come vpon thee, that thine enemies also shal cast a banke about thee, & compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side. Mark 13 Luk 21. a
44 And make thee euen with the ground and thy children which are in thee: and they shall not leaue in thee one stone vpon another: because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation. Math 21. Mark 11. Iohn. 2.
45 And he went into the temple and began to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought. 4. Reg. 8. c
46 Saying vnto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a den of theeues. Esay 56. c Iere 7. c
47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the high priests, and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people, went about to destroy him. Iohn 7. d
48 And could not find what to do: for all the people did hang of him, when they heard him. Mark 11 Luk 20. c and 21. c

The xx. Chapter.

1 Christ the stone reproued. 41. Christ the son of Dauid.

AND it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospell, the high Priests and the Scribes came vpon him, with the Elders.
2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what

authoritie doest thou these thinges? Either who is he that gaue thee this authoritie?

Matt 22. Mark 11. 3 He answering sayd vnto them, I will also aske you one word, and answere me.

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen or of men?

5 And they reasoned within themselues, saying, if we shall say from heauen, hee will say Why then beleeued ye him not?

6 But and if wee say of men, all the people will stone vs: For they be perswaded that Iohn is a Prophet.

7 And they answered that they could not tel whence it was.

Matt 22. Mark 12. Luke. 5. a Gen. 9. a Iere. 7. c 8 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Neyther tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

9 Then began he to put foorth to the people this parable. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it foorth to husbandmen, and went himselfe into a strange country for a great season.

10 And when the time was come hee sent a seruaunte to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard. But they, when they had beaten him, sent him away emptie.

11 And againe, hee sent yet another seruant. but they when they had beaten him also, and intreated him shamefully, sent him away emptie.

12 Againe, he sent the third, and when they had wounded him also, they cast him out.

Iohn 3. b Rom. 8. a Galat 4. a 13 Then sayd the Lord of the vineyarde, What shall I doe? I will send my deare sonne: it may bee they will reuerence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned within themselues, saying, This is the heyre come, let vs kil him, that the inheritance may be ours

15 And when they had cast him out of the vineyard they killed him, What then shall the Lord of the vineyard doe vnto them?

Gen 37. c Matt 21. Mark 12

16 Hee shall come and destroy those husbandmen, and shall let out his vineyard to other, When they

heard

heard this, they sayd, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and sayd, What is this then that is written, The stone that the builders disalow, the same is become the head of the corner? Psal 118

18 Whosoeuer shall stumble vpon that stone shalbe broken: but on whomesoeuer it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 And the high priests and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay handes on him, and they feared the people: for they perceiued that hee had spoken this similitude against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies which should faine themselues righteous men, that they might take hold of his wordes, to deliuer him into the power and authority of the deputie. Matt 21. Mark 11. Luk 19.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master we know that thou saiest & teachest right, neither considrest thou the outward appearance of any man: but teachest the way of God truely. Matt 22. Mark 13

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue tribute vnto Cesar or no?

23 When hee had perceiued their craftines: he sayd vnto them, Why tempt ye me? ℣

24 Shew me a penny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answering sayde, Cesars.

25 And he sayd vnto them, Giue then vnto Cesar the thinges which belong vnto Cesar: and to God the things that perteine to God. Matt 22. Mark 12

26 And they could not reproue his sayings before the people: and they marueiled at his answere, and held their peace.

27 Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces, (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him.

28 Saying, Master Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and he die without children, that then his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother. Matt 22. Mark 12 Actes 23.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first, when he had taken a wife, died without children ℣

30 And the second tooke her to wife, and he dyed childlesse.

31 And the third tooke her, and in likewise the seuen, and left no children behind them, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Now in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? For seuen had her to wife.

34 Iesus answering sayd vnto them, The children of this world marry wiues, and are married.

35 But they which shall be counted worthy to inioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, do not marry wiues, neither are maried,

36 For neither can they die any more, for they are equall vnto the angels, and are the sonnes of God, inasmuch as they are the children of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead be raised, Moses also shewed beside the bramble bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not a God of dead, but of liuing, for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Pharisees answering, sayd, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that durst they not aske him any question at all.

41 And he sayde vnto them, howe say they that Christ is Dauids sonne?

42 And Dauid himselfe saith in the booke of the Psalmes, The Lord sayd to my Lord, sit thou on my right hand.

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstoole.

44 Dauid therefore called him Lorde: and how is he then his sonne.

45 Then in the audience of all the people, he sayde vnto his Disciples.

46 Beware of the Scribes, which will goe in long robes, and loue greetings in the markets, and the highest seates in the Synagogues, and the cheife roomes at feastes.

47 Which

John 3. a
1. John 1

Exod. 3. c
Matt 22.
Mark 12.

matt 22.
mark 12.
Psal 110.

matt. 23.
mar 12 d

47 Which deuour widdowes houses vnder colour of long prayers: The same shall receiue greater damnation.

## The xxi Chapter.

1 The liberalitie of the poore widdow. 27, Of the end of the world.

AS he looked vp he saw the rich men, which cast their giftes into the treasurie. Matt 12.

2 Hee sawe also a certaine poore widdow casting in there two mites. 1. Cor. 8.

3 And he sayde, Of a truth I say vnto you that this poore widdow hath put in more then they all.

4 For these haue of their superfluitie cast vnto the offrings of God, but shee of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

4 And to some that spake of the temple how it was garnished with goodly stones, and giftes he sayd.

6 As for those things which ye beholde, the dayes matt 24. mark 13. wil come in the which there shal not be left one stone vpon another that shall not bee throwne downe.

7 And they asked him, saying, maister, when shall these things be? and what signe will there be, when these things shall come to passe? Colos. 2. Ephes 5b 1 Ioh 4a

8 And he sayd, Take heede that ye be not deceiued for many shall come in my name, saying I am Christ, and the time draweth neere: goe ye not therefore after them

9 But when ye shall heare of warres and seditions, be not afraid: for these things must first come to passe but the end followeth not by and by. Esay 19. 4 Esd. 13

10 Then sayd he vnto them, Nation shal rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome.

11 And great earthquakes shalbe in diuers places and hungers, and pestilence: and fearefull things, & great signes shall there be from heauen. Matt 10. Mark 13 Iohn 16a

12 But before all these, they shall lay their handes on you, & persecute you, deliuering you vp to the Synagogues, and into prisons, & shall bring you vnto kinges and rulers, for my names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimoniall.

14 Bee

14 Be at a sure point therfore in your harts, not to studie before what ye shall answere.

15 For I will ‡ giue you a mouth and wisedome, where against all your aduersaries shall not be able
Exod. 4. b to passe nor resist.

Matt 10. 16 Yea, yee shalbe betrayed also of your parents and brethren, and kinsfolke, and friends, and some of you shall they put to death.

17 And hated shall yee be of all men for my names
Acles 5. c sake.

Mich 7. b 18 And there shal in no case one haire of your head perish.

19 Possesse ye your soules by your patience.

20 And when ye shall see Hierusalem besieged with an host, then be yee sure that the desolation of the same is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Iurie, flee to the mountaines: and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in other countries enter therein.

22 For these be the daies of vengance, that all thinges which are written may bee fulfilled.

23 But wo vnto them that are with child, and to
1. Thess 2 them that giue sucke in those daies. for there shalbe great distresse in the land, & wrath ouer this people

24 And they shal fal through the edge of the sword and shalbe led away captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shalbe troden downe of the Gentiles, vntil the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Matt 24. 25 And there shalbe signes in the sunne and in the
Mark. 13 moone, and in the stars: and vpon the earth trouble
Ioel. 2. c among the nations, with perplexitie. the sea and
Ezech 28 the water roaring.

26 And mens hearts failing them for feare, and for looking after those things which are comming on the world: for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken

27 And then shall they see the sonne of man coming in a cloud, with power & great glory.

28 And when these thinges begin to come to passe then looke vp, and lift vp your heads, for your redemption

redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he shewed them a similitude, Beholde the
figge tree, and all trees, Matt 24.
30 When they shoote foorth their buddes, ye behol Mark 13.
ding know of your owne selues, that sommer is then
nigh at hand.
31 So likewise yee, when yee see these thinges
come to passe, be yee sure that the kingdome of God
is nigh.
32 Verily I say vnto you, this generation shall
in no wise passe, till all be fulfilled. Eccluf 31
33 Heauen and earth shall passe, but my wordes and 37. c
shall in no wise passe. Rom 13.
34 Take heede to your selues, least at any time
your hearts be ouercome with surfetting, and drun-
kennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come
vpon you vnawares. Matt 24.
35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that Mark 13.
dwell on the face of the whole earth.
36 Watch ye therefore, at all times praying, that
ye may be accounted worthie to escape all these
thinges that shall come, and that ye may stand before Iohn 7.a
the sonne of man:
37 In the day time he was teaching in the temple
and at night he went out, and abode in the mount
that is called Oliuet.
38 And all the people came early in the morning
to him in the temple to heare him.

## The xxii Chapter.

4 Iudas selleth Christ. 7. They eate the passeouer

M
THe feast of sweete bread drew nigh, which is cal- Matt 26
led the Passeouer: Mark 14
2 And the high priestes and scribes sought howe Iohn 7. d
they might kill him, for they feared the people
3 Then entred Satan into Iudas, whose surname
was Iscariot, being of the number of the twelue. Iohn 13c
4 And he went his way, and communed with the
high priests and captaines, how he might betray him
vnto them.
5 And they were glad, and promised to giue him
money

him money.

6 And he consented, and sought opportunitie to betrap him vnto them without tumult.

Matt 26 mark 14 7 Then came the day of sweet bread, wherein necessitie the Passeouer must be killed.

1 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate.

9 They said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we should prepare it.

10 And he said vnto them, Behold, when yee are entred into the Citie, there shall a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water, him follow vnto the house that he entreth in.

11 And yee shall say vnto the good man of the house, The master saith vnto thee, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

12 And he shall shewe you a great vpper chamber prepared, there make ready.

13 And they went and found as hee had said vnto them, and they made ready the passeouer.

C 14 And when the houre was come, he sate downe and the twelue apostles with him.

matt 16. mark 24. 15 And he said vnto them, With heartie desire I haue desired to eate this Passeouer with you before that I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, henceforth I will not in any wise eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And when he had taken the cup, & giuen thankes he said, Take this, and deuide it among you.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not in any wise drinke of the fruite of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God shall come.

matt 26. mark 14. 1. Cor. 6. 19 And when hee had taken bread, & giuen thankes hee brake it, and gaue vnto them, saying, This is my body which is giuen for you, this do in remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also when hee had supped, hee tooke the cuppe, saying, This cuppe is the new Testament in

in my bloud, which is shed for you. D
21 Yet behold the hand of him that betraieth me, is with me on the table.
22 And truely the sonne of man goeth as it is appointed, but woe vnto that man by whom hee is betraied.
23 And they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it was that should doe this thing.
24 And there was a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be greatest.
25 And he said vnto them, the kings of nations be lords ouer them, and they that haue authoritie vpon them, are called benefactors.
26 But ye shall not be so: but hee that is greatest among you, shall bee as the younger, and hee that is chiefe, shall be as he that doth minister. matt 20.
27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serueth? Is not he that sitteth at meate? But I am among you as he that ministreth.
28 Ye are they that haue continually bidden with me in my temptations. E
29 And I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my father hath appointed vnto me.
30 That ye may eate and drinke at my table in my kingdome, and sit on seates, iudging the twelue tribes of Israel. matt. 19.
31 And the Lord said, Simon Simon, behold: Satan hath earnestly desired to sift you, as it were wheate.
32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith should not faile and when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethen.
33 And he said vnto him Lord I am ready to goe with thee both into prison, and to death. matt 26. Mark. 14
34 And he said, I tell thee Peter, the Cocke shall in no wise crow this day, before that thou shalt thrise deny that thou knewest me. Iohn 13. F
35 And he said vnto them, when I sent you, without wallet, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, No. matt 10. mark 6. b Luke 9. a

36 Then

36 Then said he vnto them, But now he that hath a wallet, let him take it vp, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath none, let him sell his coate, and by a sword.

Esay 35. 37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which Matt. 27. is written must be performed in me which is, Euen Mark 15. among the wicked was he reputed: for those things Iohn 12. which are written of me, haue an end.

Matt. 26. 38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two Mark 14. swords. And he said vnto them, It is inough.

39 And he came out, and went as he was wont, to mount Oliuet and his disciples followed him.

Matt. 26. 40 And when he came to the place, hee said vnto Luk 11 a them, Pray, least ye fall into temptation.

Mat. 26. 41 And he was pulled away from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt remoue this cup Iohn 6. d from me, neuertheles, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angell vnto him, from heauen comforting him,

44 And he, was in an agonie, & hee prayed more earnestly, and his sweate was like drops of blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And when he rose vp from prayer, and was come to his disciples, hee found them sleeping for heauinesse.

46 And said vnto them, Why sleepe yee? rise and pray, least ye fall into temptation.

47 While he yet spake, behold there came a compa- Matt. 26. nie, and he that was called Iudas, one of the twelue, Mark 14. went before them, and prefsed nigh vnto Iesus to kisse him.

48 But Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him sawe what should follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall wee smite with the sword.

Matt. 26. 50 And one of them smote the seruant of the high Mark. 14 priest, and tooke away his right eare.

Iohn 18. 51 Iesus answered, and said, Suffer ye thus farre

with. And when he touched his eare, he healed him.
52 Then Jesus said vnto the high Priestes and
rers of the temple, and the Elders which were
me to him, Be ye come out as vnto a theefe with
words and staues?
53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye
stretched forth no hands against mee: But this is e-
en your very houre, and the power of darkenesse.
54 Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought
him to the high Priestes house, and Peter followed
afarre off.
55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of Matt. 26
the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate Mark. 14
downe among them. Iohn 18.
56 But when a certaine wench beheld him as hee
sate by the fire, and earnestly looked vpon him, she,
said, This same fellow was also with him.
57 And he denied him, saying, Woman I knowe Matt. 26.
him not. Mark. 14
58 And after a litle while another saw him and
said, Thou art also of them: And Peter said, Man,
I am not.
59 And about the space of an houre after, another
affirmed saying, verily this fellow was with him also
for he is of Galilee.
60 And Peter said, Man I wote not what thou
sayest, and immediately while he yet spake the Cocke
crew.
61 And the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon
Peter, and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, Luk. 22.
how he had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, Matt. 26.
thou shalt denie me thrise. Mark. 14
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
63 And the men that held Jesus, mocked him,
and smote him.
64 And when they had blindfolded him, they
stroke him on the face, and asked him saying, Areed,
who is it that smote thee?
65 And many other things blasphemously spake
they against him.

66 And

66 And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the high Priests & the Scribes came together and led him into their counsell, saying,

67 Art thou very Christ, tell vs? And he said vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue in any wise.

68 And if I aske you, you will not in any wise answer me, nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter shall the sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

Matt 26. Mark 14.

70 Then said they all, art thou then the sonne of God? He said, Ye say that I am.

71 And they said, What need we any further witnesse? For we our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

Matt. 26. Mark 14.

## The xxiii. Chapter.

Iesus is accused before Pilate, and hee is sent to Herode.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying We found this fellow peruerting the people, and forbidding to giue tribute to Cesar, saying that hee is Christ a king.

Matt. 27. Mar. 15. John 18.

3 And Pilate asked him saying, Art thou that king of the Iewes? He answered him, & said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the high Priests, and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, hee moueth the people, teaching throughout Iury, and began at Galilee, euen to this place.

6 When Pilate heard mention of Galilee, he asked him whether the man were of Galilee.

7 And assoone as he knew that he belonged vnto Herodes iurisdiction, he sent him to Herode, which was also at Hierusalem at that time.

Luke 3. 2

8 And when Herod saw Iesus, hee was exceeding glad for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and hee trusted

trusted to haue seene some miracle done by him.
9 And he questioned with him many wordes: but he answered him nothing.
10 The high priests and scribes stood forth and accused him straightly.
11 And Herod with his men of war despised him, and when he had mocked him, he araied him in white clothing, and sent him againe to Pilate.
12 And the same day Pilate and Herode were made friends together: for before they were at variance betweene themselues. Acts 4.27
13 And Pilate when he had called together, the high priests, and the rulers, and the people,
14 Said vnto them, ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerteth the people: and behold I haue examined him before you, & haue found no fault in this man, of those things whereof ye accuse him.
15 No, nor yet Herod, for I sent you to him, and loe nothing worthy of death is done by him.
16 I will therefore chasten him and let him loose.
17 For of necessitie he must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast. matt 27. Mark 15
18 And all the people cried aloud, saying, away with him, and deliuer vs Barabbas. Iohn 18.
19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and for murder was cast into prison.
20 Pilate therefore spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.
21 But they cried saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.
22 He said vnto them the third time, what euill hath he done, I haue found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chasten him, and let him goe.
23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the high Priests preuailed. Matt. 27 Mark 15. Iohn 19.
24 And Pilate gaue sentence that it should be as they required. Matt. 26 Mark 15.
25 And he let loose vnto them, him that for insur-

rection and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired: he delivered Jesus to their will.

Matt. 27 Mark. 15
26 And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the field, and on him laid they the crosse, that he might beare it after Jesus.

Luke 8.a
27 And there followed him a great company of people and of women, which also bewayled and lamented him.

e
28 But Jesus turning backe unto them, said: Ye daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for mee, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

Esay 54. Sapi. 3.c Gal. 4.d
29 For beholde, the dayes are comming in the which they shall say, Happy are the barren, and the wombes that never bare, and the paps which never gave sucke.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us, and to the hils, Cover us.

f
31 For if they do these things in a moist tree what shalbe done in the drie?

32 And there were other two evill doers led with him to be put to death.

Matt. 27 Mark. 15 John 19.
33 And after that they were come to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, & the evill doers, one of the right hand, and the other on the left.

Matt. 27 Mark. 15. Psa. 22.d
34 Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them, for they wote not what they doe: And they parted his rayment and cast lots.

f
35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers mocked him with them saying, Hee saved other men, let him save himselfe, if he be verey Christ the chosen of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, comming to him and offering him vineger.

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jewes, save thy selfe,

Matt. 27. John 19.
38 And a superscription was written over him, with letters of Greeke, and Latine, and Hebrue, This is the king of the Iewes.

39 And

39 And one of the euil doers which were hanged, railed on him saying, If thou be Christ saue thy self and vs.

40 But the other answering rebuked him saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same damnation? Matt 27. mark. 15

41 And we truely are righteously punished, for we receiue according to our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember mee, when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verily, I say vnto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth houre, and there was darkenesse ouer all the earth, vntill the ninth houre. Matt. 27. Mark 15.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, & the vaile of the temple was rent, euen through the midst. Matt. 27.

46 And when Iesus had cried with a loud voice, Mark. 15 hee said, Father into thy hands I will commend my spirit: And when he had thus said, hee gaue vp the Ghost.

47 When the Centurion sawe what was done, hee glorified God, saying, Verily this was a righte- Matt. 27. ous man. Mark. 15

48 And all the people that came together to the sight, when they saw the things which were done, Mat. 27. smote their breasts and returned. Mark 15.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood a farre off beholding these things.

50 And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, a counseller, and he was a good man and a iust.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deed of them) which was of Arimathea a citie of Matt. 27. the Iewes, which same also waited for the kingdome mark 15. of God. Iohn 19.

52 He went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus.

53 And when hee had taken it downe, hee wrap-

put it in a linnen cloth, & laid it in a ſepulchre that was hewen in ſtone, wherein neuer man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparing of the Sabboth, and the Sabboth drue on.

55 The women that followed after, which had come with him from Galilee, beheelde the ſepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned and prepared ſweet odours and ointmente, but reſted the Sabboth day accordyng to the commaundement.

## The xxiiii Chapter.

13 Chriſt appeared to the two Diſciples that were at Emaus.

Vpon the firſt day of the Sabboths, verye early in the morning they came vnto the ſepulchre, bryng-
Matt. 28 ing ſweete odoures which they had prepared, and
Mark. 16 other women with them,
Iohn 20. 2 And they found the ſtone rolled away from the ſepulchre.

3 And they went in, but found not the body of the Lord Ieſus.

4 And it came to paſſe as they were amazed therat, behold, two men ſtoode by them in ſhining garmente.

Math. 28 5 And as they were afraid and bowed downe their
Mark. 16 faces to the earth, they ſayd vnto them, Why ſeeke ye the liuing among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is riſen: Remember how he ſpake vnto you, when he was yet in Galilee.

28 7 Saying, The ſonne of man muſt be delyuered into the handes of ſinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day riſe.

8 And they remembred his wordes.

9 And returned from the ſepulchre, & told all theſe thinges vnto thoſe eleuen, and to all the remnant.

Matt. 28. 10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Ioanna, and
Mark. 16 Mary Iacobi, & other that were with them, which told theſe thinges vnto the Apoſtles.

11 And

11 And their wordes seemed vnto them fayned
things, neither beleeued they them.
12 Then arose Peter and ran vnto the Sepulchre,
and when he had looked in, he saw the linnen clothes
laide by themselues, and departed wondering at him-
selfe at that which was come to passe.
13 And behold, two of them went that same day Mark 15.
to a village called Emaus, which was from Hierusa-
lem about threescore furlongs.
14 And they talked together of all these things
that had come to passe.
15 And it came to passe, that while they communed
together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drew neere,
and went with them.
16 But their eyes were holden, that they should
not know him.
17 And he said vnto them: What manner of com-
munications are these that yee haue one to another
as ye walke, and are sad?
18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleo-
phas answering said to him, Art thou only a stran-
ger in Hierusalem, and hast not knowen the things
which are come to passe there in these daies?
19 He said vnto them, What things? And they
said vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a
Prophet, mighty in deed & word before God, and
all the people.
20 And how the high priests and our rulers deli- Mat. 27.
uered him to be condemned to death, and haue cruci- Iohn 20.
fied him.
21 But we trusted that it had him he which should
haue redeemed Israel: & as touching all these things,
to day is euen the third day since they were done.
22 Yea, and certaine women also of our company
made vs astonied, which came early vnto the Se-
pulchre.
23 And when they found not his body, they came
saying, that they had seene a vision of Angels, which
say that he was aliue.
24 And certaine of them which were with vs,

went to the sepulchre, & found it euen as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 And he said vnto them, O fooles and slowe of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken.

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things and enter into his glory?

Matt. 26. Mark 14. 27 And he began at Moses, & all the prophets & throughly interpreted vnto them in al the scriptures, those things which were written of himselfe.

28 And they drewe nigh vnto the village which they went vnto, and he made as though hee would haue gone further.

Gen. 19. 29 And they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs, for it draweth towards night, & the day is farre passed: And he went in to tarry with them.

Luke 24. Math 15. 30 And it came to passe as hee sate at meate with them he tooke bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gaue to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and opened to vs the Scriptures?

Luke 22. 33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned againe to Hierusalem and found the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them.

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how hee was knowne of them in the breaking of bread.

Iohn 20. 36 And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe stood in the middest of them, and saith vnto them: Peace be vnto you.

37 But they were abashed and afraid, and supposed that they had seene a spirit.

38 And he said vnto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feete, that it is euen I my selfe: handle me, & see, for a spirit hath not flesh

and

and bones as ye see me haue
40 And when he had thus spoken he shewed them his hands and his feete.
41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondered, hee said vnto them, haue yee here any meate?
42 And they offered him a peece of a broyled fishe and of an hony combe.
43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.
44 And he said vnto them, These are the wordes which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must needs be fulfilled which were written of me in the law of Moses and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.
45 Then opened he their wittes, that they might vnderstand the scriptures?
46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoued Christ to suffer, & to rise from death the third day.
47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his name among all nations, and must begin at Hierusalem.
48 And ye are witnesse of these things.
49 And behold, I will send the promise of my father vpon you: but tarry ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be indued with power from on high.
50 And he led them out into Bethany, and lift vp his hands and blessed them.
51 And it came to passe, as he blessed them, he departed from them, and was carried vp to heauen,
52 And when they had worshipped him, they returned to Hierusalem with great ioy.
53 And were continually in the temple, praysing and lauding God. Amen.

G Iohn 21.

Matt. 19.

Acts 17.

Acts 1.b

Acts 1.b Mark. 16

*Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Luke.*

# The Gospell by Saint *Iohn.*

## The first Chapter

1 The diuinitie, humanitie, and office of Christ. 15 The testimony of Iohn. 39. The calling of Andrew, Peter, Philip and Nathaniel.

A

IN the beginning was the worde, and the worde was with God, and God was that worde.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

Gen. 1.a Prou 8.d

3 All things were made by it, and without it was made nothing that was made.

4 In it was life, and the life was the light of men.

Iohn 1.a 3.d Iohn 8.b and 9.a

5 And the light shined in the darkenesse, and the darkenes comprehended it not.

B

6 There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnesse, that hee shoulde beare witnes of the light, that all men through him, might beleeue.

8 He was not that light, but was sent to beare witnes of that light.

Iohn 5.d Psal. 57.

9 That light was the true light which lighteth euery man that commeth into the worlde.

10 He was in the worlde, and the worlde was made by him, and the worlde knew him not.

11 He came into his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them gaue he power to be the sonnes of God: euen to them that beleeued on his name.

13 Which were borne, not of bloud, nor of the will of the flesh, nor yet of the will of man, but of God.

14 And

14 And the same word became flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we saw the glory of it, as the glory of the only begotten sonne that came from the father) full of grace and truth.

15 John beareth witnesse of him, and cryed, saying This is hee of whom I spake, He that commeth after me is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his fruites haue all wee receiued, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was giuen by Moses, but grace & truth came by Iesus Christ.

18 No man hath seene God at any time, the only begotten sonne which is in the bosome of the father, he hath declared him.

19 And this is the record of John, when the Iewes sent Priestes & Leuites from Hierusalem to aske him What art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not, and said plainly, I am not that Christ.

21 And they asked him, what then? art thou that Elias? and he saith, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? and he answered, No.

22 Then said they vnto him, What art thou that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? What saiest thou of thy selfe?

23 He said, I am the voice of a cryer in the wildernes: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptisest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias, neither a Prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whome ye know not.

27 He it is which though he come after me, was before me, whose shooes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan,

Baru. 1. e
Matt. 27
2. Pet. 1. c
1. Iohn 1
Mat 3. b
Mark. 1. a
Colo. 2. b
Iohn 15.
Matt. 17
Deut. 17
Matt. 3. c
Mark 1. a
Luke 3. a
Esay 40.
math 4. b
Mark 1. a
Luke 3. c
Acts 19
Iohn 3. d

Esay 53. Iordan, where Iohn was baptising.
1.Cor 5b 29 The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto
E him, and saith, Behold, the lambe of God which ta-
keth away the sinnes of the world.
30 This is hee, of whom I said, After mee com-
meth a man, which is preferred before me: for hee
was before me.
31 And I knew him not: but that hee should bee
declared to Israel, therefore am I come baptising
with water.
Math 17 32 And Iohn bare record, saying, I saw the spirit
Luk. 1.b descending from heauen, like vnto a done and it a-
Luke 3.d bode vpon him.
33 And I knew him not: but he that sent mee to
baptize with water, the same said vnto me, Vpon
whom thou shalt see the spirit descending, and tarry-
ing still on him, the same is hee that baptizeth with
the holy Ghost.
34 And I saw, and bare record, that this is the
F sonne of God.
35 The next day after, Iohn stood againe, and two
of his disciples.
36 And when he beheld Iesus walking, hee saith
Behold the Lambe of God.
37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and
they followed Iesus.
38 And Iesus when he turned about, & saw them
following him, saith vnto them, What seeke ye? they
said vnto him Rabbi (which is to say if one interpret
it, Maister,) where dwellest thou?
39 He saith vnto them, Come and see. They came,
and saw wher he dwelt, and abode with him that day
for it was about the tenth houre.
40 One of the two which heard Iohn speake and
followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters bro-
ther.
41 The same findeth his brother Simon first, and
saith vnto him, We haue found the Messias, which
Matt 16. is by interpretation, the annointed.
42 And brought him to Iesus. And when Iesus
beheld

beheld him, he ſayd, thou art Simon the ſon of Iona thou ſhalt be called Cephas, which is, by interpretation, a ſtone.

43 The day following, Jeſus would goe forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and ſayth vnto him, Follow me

44 Philip was of Bethſaida, out of the citie of Andrew and Peter. Iohn 1.30

45 Philip findeth Nathaniel, and ſaith vnto him, We haue found him of whom Moſes in the law and the Prophets did write, Jeſus of Nazareth the ſonne of Joſeph. Gen. 4 e and 22 e Deut 18.

46 And Nathaniel ſayd vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip ſayth vnto him, Come and ſee.

47 Jeſus ſaw Nathaniel comming to him, & ſayth vnto him, behold a right Iſraelite, in whome is no guile.

48 Nathaniel ſayth vnto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Jeſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, being vnder the figge tree, I ſaw thee.

49 Nathaniel anſwered, and ſayth vnto him, Rabbi, thou art euen the very ſonne of God: thou art the king of Iſrael. B

50 Jeſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, becauſe I ſayd vnto thee, I ſaw thee vnder the figge tree thou beleeueſt: thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And he ſaith vnto him, Verily, verily I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall ye ſee heauen open, and the angels of God aſcending and deſcending vpon the ſonne of man.

## The ii Chapter.

7 Chriſt turneth water into wine.

AND the third day was there a mariage in Cana a Citie of Galilee, and the mother of Jeſus was there A

2 And both Jeſus was called and his Diſciples vnto the mariage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of

Jeſus

Jesus saith vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Jesus saith vnto her, Woman, what haue I to do with thee? Mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saieth vnto the ministers, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, do it.

6 And there were set there sixe water pots of stone after the manner of the purifying of the Jewes, containing two or three firkins a peece.

7 Jesus saith vnto them, Fil the water pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brimme. 23

8 And he saith vnto them, Draw out now and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, (and knewe not whence it was but the ministers which drew the water, knewe) the gouernour of the feast calleth the bridegroome,

10 And he saith vnto him, Euery man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, & when the guests haue well drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine vntill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus, in Cana of Galilee, and shewed his glory: and his disciples beleeued on him. Matt 4.b Mark 1.b Luke 4.d

12 After this he went downe to Capernaum, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and there continued not many dayes.

13 And the Jewes Passeouer was at hand, and Jesus went vp to Hierusalem. Math. 21 Mark 11 Luk 19.g

14 And found sitting in the temple, those that sold Oxen, and Sheepe, and Doues, and changers of money.

15 And when hee had made as it were a scourge of small cords, he droue them all out of the temple, with the sheepe and oxen, & powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables:

16 And said vnto them that solde Doues, Take these things hence, and make not my fathers house a house of marchandize.

16 And his Disciples remembred that it was written

written, The zeale of thine house hath euen eaten me. Psal 69.9

18 Then answered the Iewes, and sayde vnto him What token shewest thou vnto vs, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered and sayde vnto them, Destroy this temple, and in three dayes will I reare it vp. Matt 6. Mark. 14

20 Then sayde the Iewes, fortie and sixe yeares was this temple a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body

22 When therefore hee was risen from death, his disciples remembred that he had this sayd: and they beleeued the scripture, and the wordes which Iesus had sayd.

23 When he was at Hierusalem at the passeouer, in the feast day, many beleeued on his name when they saw his miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew all men:

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man. Iere. 17. Apoc. 1 d

## The iii Chapter.

3 Christ teacheth Nicodemus, 16 The loue of God toward the world.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes:

2 The same came vnto Iesus by night, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, wee knowe that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can doe these miracles that thou doest, except God bee with him. Iohn 7. c

3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, except a man be borne from aboue he cannot see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus saith vnto him, how can a man bee borne when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, except a man be borne of water and of the spirit, hee cannot enter into the kingdome of God. Iohn 4. e and 7. d Titus 3. c

6 That

Rom.8.a 6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: & that which is borne of the spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not then that I sayd vnto thee, Ye must be borne from aboue.

Eccle.11 8 The wind bloweth where it listeth and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tel whence it commeth, and whether it goeth: So is euery one that is borne of the spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and sayd vnto him, how can these things be?

10 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him, Art thou a maister of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily I say vnto thee. We speake that we know, and testifie that we haue seene: and ye receiue not our witnesse.

12 If I haue told you earthly things, and ye beleeue not: how shall ye beleeue if I tell you of heauenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen but he that came downe from heauen, euen the sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wildernesse: euen so must the sonne of man be lift vp.

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth on him, should not perish, but haue eternall life.

16 For God so loued the world that hee gaue his onely begotten sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life

Acte.20 17 For God sent not his sonne into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saued.

18 Hee that beleeueth on him, is not condemned: but he that beleeueth not, is condemned already, be-

Luk 19.a cause hee hath not beleeued in the name of the onely begotten sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loued darkenes rather then light, because their deedes were euill.

20 For euery one that euill doth, hateth the light,

Exec.5 neyther commeth to the light, least his deeds should

be

be regenerate.

21 But he that doth trueth, commeth to the light. that his deedes may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 After these things came Jesus & his Disciples into the land of Jurie, and there he tarried with them and baptized,

23 And John also was baptising in Aenon, neere to Salim because there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast in prison. Mark. 4.b

25 And there arose a question betweene Johns disciples and the Jewes, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bearest witnesse, behold the same baptiseth, and all men come to him. Iohn 4.a

27 John answered, and sayde, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

28 Ye your selues are witnesses, how that I sayde I am not that Christ, but am sent before him

29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroome: but the friend of the bridegroome, which standeth & heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of the bridegroomes voyce: This my ioy therefore is fulfilled. Iohn 1.b

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that commeth from on high, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that commeth from heaven is above all:

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seale that God is true. Rom. 3.a

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: For God giveth not the spirit by measure unto him. Esay 61 Mark. 11 Luke 1.d

34 The father loveth the sonne, and hath given all things into his hand. Iohn 5.b

36 He that beleeveth on the sonne, hath everlasting life: but he that beleeveth not the sonne, shall not see Iohn 6.f

life.

lyfe, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

The iiii. Chapter.

7 Christ wearied, asketh water of the woman of Samaria.
19 The liuely water.

AFter that the Lord knewe how the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized moe disciples then Iohn.

2 (Though that Iesus himselfe baptized not, but his disciples:)

Matt.4.b 3 Hee left Iurie, and departed againe into Galilee.

4 For it was so that he must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then commeth he to a citie of Samaria, which
Gen. 48. is called Sichar, neere to the possession that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph.

6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then being wearie of his iourney, sate thus on the well: and it was about the sixt houre.

B 7 And there commeth a woman of Samaria to draw water: Iesus saith vnto her, Giue me drinke.

8 For his disciples were gone away vnto the towne to buy meate.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou being a Iew, askest drinke of me
4.Reg 17 which am a woman of Samaria? for the Iewes
Iohn 7 b meddle not with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered, and sayde vnto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, giue me drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he would haue giuen thee water of life.

Iere .2.b 11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast no
Iohn 7. b thing to draw with, & the well is deepe, from whence then hast thou that water of life?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs this well, and he himselfe dranke thereof and his children and his cattell?

13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, whosoeuer drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe.

14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shall

shall giue him, shall neuer bee more a thirst: but the water that I shall giue him, shall be in him a well of water springing vppe into euerlasting life.

15 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, giue mee of that water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Goe call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said vnto him, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband. Luke 7.b

18 For thou hast had fiue husbands: and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: In that saidst thou truely. 3.Reg 9.a 2.Par 7.c

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perceiue that thou art a Prophet, D

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say that in Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, beleeue mee, the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet at Hierusalem worship the father, Exod 21

22 Ye worship ye wote not what, wee know what we worshippe: for saluation commeth of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the father in spirit and in the truth: for such the father also requireth to worship him. Rom. 1.a 2.Cor. 3.

24 God is a spirite, and they that worship him must worship him in spirite, and in the truth.

25 The woman saith vnto him, I wot that Messias commeth, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus saith vnto her, I that speake vnto thee am he. Matt 26. mark 14. Luk 22.e Iohn 9.d and 10.a

27 And immediatly came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the citie, & saith to the men.

29 Come, see a man which told me al things that euer I did: is not he that Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came vnto him.

31 In the meane while his disciples prayed him, saying, Maister, eate.

32 He said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye wote not off.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eate?

34 Iesus saith vnto them, My meate is that I do the will of him that sent me, and finish his worke.

35 Say not ye, there are yet foure moneths and then commeth harueſt? Behold, I say vnto you, lift vp your eies, and looke on the regions: for they are white already vnto harueſt.

Matt 9.b Luk 10.2

36 And he that reapeth receiueth wages, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall. that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth might reioyce together.

37 And herein is the saying true, That one soweth and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 Many of the Samaritans of the citie beleeued on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified that he told me all that euer I did.

40 So, when the Samaritanes were come vnto him they besought him that he would tary with them and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many moe beleeued, because of his owne word.

42 And said vnto the woman, now we beleeue not because of thy saying: for we haue heard him our selues and know that this is euen that Christ, the saueour of the world.

B

1ohn 17b

43 After two dayes he departed thence, and went away into Galilee.

44 For Iesus himselfe testifieth, that a prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans receiued him, when they had seene all the thinges that he did at Hierusalem at the day of the feast: for they went also vnto the feast day.

Matt 13. mark 6 2. Luke 4. c

46 So Jesus came againe into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certaine ruler whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When the same heard that Jesus was come out of Iurie into Galilee, he went vnto him, and besought him that he would come downe, and heale his sonne: for he was euen at the point of death.

Iohn. 2. 2. Matt 8. 2

48 Then said Jesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will in no wise beleeue.

49 The ruler saith vnto him, Sir, come downe ere euer that my sonne die.

50 Jesus saith vnto him, Go thy way thy sonne liueth. And the man beleeued the worde that Jesus had spoken vnto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was nowe going downe, the seruantes met him, and told him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend: and they sayde vnto him, Yesterday at the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

Acts 13

53 So the father knew, that it was done the same houre in which Jesus said vnto him, Thy son liueth: and he beleeued, and all his houshold.

54 This is againe the second myracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Iurie into Galilee.

The v. Chapter,

5 Christ healeth on the Sabboth the man that was sicke thirtie and eight yeeres.

AFter this was there a feast day of the Iewes, and Jesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 And there is at Hierusalem by the sheep market a poole, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, hauing fiue porches:

3 In which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blind, halt, and withered, waiting for the mouing of the water.

4 For the angell went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: Whosoeuer then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there which had beene diseased thirtie and eight yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knew that he now long time had beene diseased, hee saith vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

23 Math 9.a mark 2.b Luke 5.a Actes 3.b and. 9. f

7 The sick man answered him, Sir, I haue no man when the water is troubled to put mee into the poole: but in the meane time, while I am about to come, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus saith vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed and walked: and on the same day was the Sabboth.

10 The Iewes therefore said vnto him that was made whole, It is the Sabboth day it is not lawfull for thee to carry thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made mee whole, said vnto me, Take vp thy bed and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bedde, and walke?

13 And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Iesus had gotten himselfe away because there was preasse of people in the place.

14 Afterward Iesus findeth him in the temple, and said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole, sin no more least a worse thing come to thee.

Iohn 8.a

13 The man departed, and told the Iewes that it was Iesus that made him whole.

1. Cor. 2

16 And therefore did the Iewes persecute Iesus, and sought the meanes to slea him, because he had done these things on the Sabboth day.

matt 21.f mark 14 Luk 21.c

17 Iesus answered them, My father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him, not only because he had broken the Sabboth, but

said

sayd also that God was his father, and making himselfe equall with God

19 Then answered Jesus, & said vnto them, Verily verily I say vnto you, The sonne can do nothing of himselfe, but that he seeth the father doe: for whatsoeuer he doth, that also doth the sonne likewise. Iohn 9. a.

20 For the father loueth the son, & sheweth him all things that he himselfe doth: and he will shewe him greater workes then these, because ye should marualle

21 For likewise as the father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them: euen so the sonne quickeneth whom hee will. Matt 11. Luke 10.

22 Neither iudgeth the father any man: but hath committed all iudgement vnto the sonne.

23 Because that all men should honor the son euen as they honour the father. He that honoureth not the sonne, the same honoureth not the father which hath sent him. Iohn 6. c

24 Verily, verily I say vnto you. He that heareth my word, and beleeueth on him that sent mee, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into damnation: but is escaped from death vnto life Luk 22. c Matth 5. c Iohn 11. c

25 Verily, verily I say vnto you The houre is comming and now is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the sonne of God: & they that heare shal liue

26 For as the father hath life in himselfe: so likewise hath he giuen to the son to haue life in himselfe.

27 And hath giuen him power also to iudge, because he is the sonne of man.

28 Marualle not at this, for the houre is comming in the which they that are in the graues, shall heare his voyce.

29 And shall come forth, they that haue done good vnto the resurrection of life, & they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of damnation. Matt 25 d

30 I can of mine owne selfe doe nothing: as I heare I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not my owne will, but the will of my father, which sent me.

31 If I beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse

is not true.

32 There is another that beareth witnes of me,
Iohn 8. d and I am sure that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me is true.

33 Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he barewitnesse vnto the truech.

34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuerthe
Iohn 1. b lesse, these things I say, that ye might be saued.

35 Hee was a burning and a shining light: and ye would for a season haue reioyced in his light.

F 36 But I haue greater witnes then the witnes of Iohn: for the workes which the father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I do beare witnes of me, that the father hath sent me.

Iohn 5. a 37 And the father himselfe which hath sent me
Iohn 10. hath borne witnesse of me, Ye haue not heard his voice at any time, nor seene his shape.

38 And his wordes haue ye not abiding in you: for whome he hath sent, him ye beleeue not.

39 Search the Scriptures, for in them ye thinke
Matth 3 b and 17. b ye haue eternall life: and they are they that testifie
Marke 1. of me.
Luke. 3d
2. Pet 3d 40 And yet will ye not come to me, that ye might
Actes 17 haue life.
Deut 18. 41 I receiue not the praise of men,

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my fathers name, and ye receiue me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue.

G 44 How can ye beleeue which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God onely.

Iohn 2. c 45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to my
1. Tess 2 father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses in whom ye trust.

Deut 17. 46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued me, for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how shall ye beleeue my words?

The

The vi. Chapter.

19 Faith is the worke of God. 25 Of the bread of life. 40. Of faith.

AFter these thinges, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galilee which is the sea of Tiberias: A
2 And a great multitude followed him because they saw the miracles which he did on them that were diseased. Matt 14.
3 And Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples. Mark 6.b Matth 4. Luke 6.c
4 And the Passeouer, a feast of the Iewes, was nigh.
5 When Iesus then lift vp his eyes, and sawe a great company come vnto him, he said vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eate
6 (This he said to proue him: for he himselfe knew what he would do.)
7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penny worth of bread are not sufficient for them, that euery man may take a little.
8 One of his disciples, Andrew Simon Peters brother saith vnto him. Matt 14. Mark 9.b
9 There is a little lad here which hath fiue barely loaues and two fishes: but what are they among so many. Luke 9.b
10 And Iesus saide, Make the people sitte downe. There was much grasse in the place, So the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand: 23 3.Reg.4
11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had giuen thankes, he distributed to the disciples and the disciples to them that were sate downe, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.
12 When they were filled, he said vnto his disciples Gather vp the broken meate that remaineth, that nothing be lost.
13 And they gathered it together and filled twelue baskets with the broaken meate of the fiue barely loaues, which broaken meate remained vnto them that had eaten.
14 Then those men when they had seen the miracle

that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth the same Pro-
Luke 7. c phet, that should come into the world.
Iohn 4. b 15 When Jesus therefore perceiued that they
Luke 5. d would come & take him by force, to make him king,
he departed again into a mountaine himselfe alone.
16 And when euen was now come, his disciples
Matt 14. went downe into the sea.
Mark 6. f 17 And gate vp into a ship, and went ouer the sea,
towards Capernaum: and it was now darke, and
Jesus was not come to them.
18 And the sea arose with a great wind that
blew.
19 So when they had rowed about xxv or xxx fur-
longes, they saw Jesus walking on the sea and draw-
ing nigh to the ship: and they were afrayd.
20 But he saith vnto them, It is I bee not a-
frayd.
21 And they would haue receiued him into the
ship, and immediatly the shippe was at the land whe-
ther they went.
22 The day following, when the people which
stoode on the other side of the sea, saw that there was
none other ship there, saue that one, whereinto his
disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not in
with his disciples into the ship, but that his disciples
were gone away alone.
23 Howbeit, there came other shippes from Tibe-
rias, nigh vnto the place where they did eate bread,
after that the Lord had giuen thankes.
24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus
was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke
shipping, & came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus
25 And when they had found him on the other
side of the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest
thou hither.
26 Jesus answered them, and said, Verily, verily
I say vnto you, Yee seeke mee, not because yee saw
the miracles, but because yee did eate of the loaues,
and were filled.
27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but
for

for that meat which endureth vnto euer lasting life, which meat the sonne of man shall giue vnto you: for him hath God the father sealed. e

28 Then said they vnto him, What shall wee doe, that we might worke the workes of God?

29 Iesus answered, and sayde vnto them. This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue on him whome he hath sent.

30 They saide therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that wee may see and beleeue thee What doest thou worke? Matt 12. and. 16. a Mark 8. b Luk 11. d

31 Our fathers did eat Manna in the desert, as it is written, hee gaue them bread from heauen to eate. Exod 16

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verily verily, I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my father giueth you the true bread from heauen. Matt 16.

33 For the bread of God, is he which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world

34 Then said they vnto him, Lord euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus sayde vnto them, I am the bread of life: he that commeth to me, shall not hunger in any wise and he that beleeueth on me shal neuer thirst.

36 But I say vnto you, that ye also haue seen mee and yet ye beleeue not. f

37 All that the father giueth me, shall come to me, and him that commeth to mee, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but the will of him that sent me Luk. 22. a

39 And this is the fathers will which hath sent me that of all which he hath giuen me, I shall loose nothing, but raise it vp againe at the last day. Iohn. 5. c

40 And this is the will of him that sent me that euery one that seeth the sonne and beleeueth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him because he

he said I am the bread of life which came downe from
G heauen.
Matt 12. 42 And they said, Is not this Iesus the sonne of
Mark 6.a Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? How is
it then that he saith, I come downe from heauen?
43 Iesus answered and said vnto them, murmure
Iohn 7. g not among your selues.
44 No man commeth to me, except the Father
which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him
vp at the last day.
Esay. 54 45 It is written in the Prophets, And they shalbe
8. Iohn 2 all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath
heard, & hath learned of the father commeth vnto me.
46 Not that any man hath seene the father, saue he
which is of God, the same hath seene the father.
47 Verily, verily I say vnto you, He that putteth
Exod 23. his trust in me, hath euer lasting life.
Deut 4.b 48 I am the bread of life.
Iudg, 6.c 49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse,
and 13. d and are dead.
50 This is that bread that commeth downe from
heauen, that if any man eate thereof, hee should not
die.
51 I am that liuing bread, which came down from
heauen: If any man eate this bread he shall liue for
Luk 22.c euer: and the bread that I will giue is my flesh, which
I will giue for the life of the world.
52 The Iewes therefore stroue among themselues
saying, How can this fellow giue vs that flesh of his
to eate.
53 Then Iesus said vnto them, verily, verily, I
say vnto you, Except ye eate the flesh of the sonne of
man and drinke his bloud ye haue no life in you.
54 Whoso eateth my flesh and drinketh my bloud,
hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last
day.
55 For my flesh is meate indeede, and my bloud,
is drinke indeede.
56 Hee that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my bloud
dwelleth in me and I in him.

57 As the liuing father hath sent me, and I liue by the father: Euen so he that eateth me shall liue by the meanes of me

58 This is the bread, which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers did eat Manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall liue euer.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this said. This is an hard saying, who can abide the hearing of it?

61 When Iesus knew in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at it, he said vnto them: doth this offend you?

62 What and if yee should see the sonne of man ascended vp thither where he was before? Iohn 7. c

63 It is the spirite that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: The wordes that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life. Matt. 16. c Mark 8. c Luke 9. c

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew from the beginning which they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him. Iohn 11. Luk 12 2

65 And hee said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it were giuen vnto him of my father. Iohn 13.

66 From that time many of his Disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away.

68 Then Simon Peter answered him. Lord to whome shall wee goe? Thou hast the wordes of eternall life.

69 And wee beleeue and are sure that thou art that Christ, the sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered him: Haue I not chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

71 He spake of Iudas Iscariot the son of Simon: for hee it was that should betray him, being one of the twelue.

The

## The vii. Chapter.

a Iesus fled the murmuring Iewes. 5. Christes kinsmen beleeued not in him.

AFter these things, Iesus went about in Galilee: for hee would not goe about in Iury, because that the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 The Iewes feast of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Get thee
Leuit. 23 hence, and goe into Iury, that thy disciples also may see the workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in secret and he himselfe seeketh to be knowne openly, if thou doe such things, shew thy selfe to the world.

5 For neither his brethren beleeued in him

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alwayes readie.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth,
John 15. because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe yee vp vnto this feast, I goe not vp yet vnto this feast, for my time is not yet full come.

9 When he had said these words vnto them, hee abode still in Galilee.

10 But when his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were priuily.

11 Then sought him the Iewes at the feast, and
John 21. said, Where is hee?

12 And much murmuring of him was there among the people: for some said: Hee is good: Other said
Matt 21. nay, but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for
John 4. c and, 6. c feare of the Iewes.

14 Now when halfe the feast was done, Iesus
John 12 f went vp into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth he the scriptures, seeing that he neuer learned.

16 Iesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me

17 If any man will doe his will, hee shall knowe

of

of the doctrine, whether it bee of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousnesse is in him.

19 Did not Moses giue you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go yee about to kill me? Exo. 20. Deut. 5. a

20 The people answered, and sayd, Thou hast the Deuill, who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, I haue done one worke, and ye all maruell.

22 Moses therfore gaue vnto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers) & ye on the Sabboth day circumcise a man. D Iohn 5. a Gen. 17.

23 If a man on the Sabboth day recieue circumcision, without breaking of the law of Moses, disdaine yee at me because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabboth day?

24 Iudge not after the outward appearance, but iudge with a righteous iudgement. Deu. 1. c Leu. 19 c Prou. 24.

25 Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he whom they go about to kill?

26 But loe he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing vnto him: Do the rulers know indeed that this is very Christ?

27 Howbeit, wee know this man whence he is: but when Christ commeth, no man knoweth whence he is. Matt. 13. mark 6. a Iohn 1 6.

28 Then cried Iesus in the temple, as hee taught, saying, ye both know me, and whence I am ye know, and I am not come of my selfe: but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. E

29 But I know him, for I am of him, and he sent mee. Mark 12 Luk 20. g

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laide hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 Many of the people beleeued on him and said, when Christ commeth, will he do moe miracles then Iohn 8. b

these

these that this man hath done?

32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: & the Pharisees and the high Priestes sent seruants to take him.

Matt. 22
Mark. 12
Iohn 10

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a little while with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent me.

t

34 Ye shall seeke mee and shall not find me: and where I am, thither can ye not come.

Iohn 8.c
and 17.d

35 Then said the Iewes among themselues, Whither will he goe, that we shall not find him? will he goe vnto the dispersed among the Greekes, and teach the Gentiles?

f

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not find me: and where I am thither can ye not come.

37 In the last day, that great day of the feast Iesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst let him come vnto mee and drinke.

Esay 53.

38 He that beleeueth on mee, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow riuers of water of life.

39 (But this spake hee of the spirite which they that beleeue on him should receiue. For the holy Ghost was not yet there, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 Many of the people therefore when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet.

41 Other said, This is Christ. But some said, shall Christ come out of Galilee?

Ioel 3.c
6.b

42 Hath not the Scripture said, that Christ commeth of the seed of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethlehem, where Dauid was?

Luk 7.c
Mich. 5.a
Matt. 2.c

43 So was there dissention among the people, because of him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him but no man laid hands on him.

45 Then came the seruants to the high Priestes and Pharisees, and they said vnto them, Why haue yee not brought him?

46 The

46 The ſeruants anſwered, Neuer man ſpake, as this man doth.

47 Then anſwered them the Phariſees, Are yee alſo deceiued?

48 Haue any of the rulers or of the Phariſees beleeued on him?

49 But this common people, which know not the law, are curſed.

50 Nicodemus ſaith vnto them (he that came to Ieſus by night, being one of them.) Iohn. 3. a

51 Doth our law iudge any man, before it heare him and know what he doth?

52 They anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Art thou alſo of Galilee? ſearch, and looke: for out of Galilee ariſeth no prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne houſe.

The viii. Chapter.

1 Chriſt the light of the world. 58. Abraham did ſee Chriſts day.

IEſus went vnto mount Oliuet.

2 And early in the morning he came againe into the temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he ſate downe, and taught them. 28 Matt. 21 Mark 11. Luk. 19. c

3 And the Scribes and Phariſees brought vnto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had ſet her in the midſt,

4 They ſay vnto him, Maiſter, this woman was taken in adultery, euen as the deed was a doing. Luk 10. b

5 Moſes in the law commaunded vs, that ſuch ſhould be ſtoned: but what ſayeſt thou?

6 This they ſaide, tempting him, that they might accuſe him But Ieſus ſtouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift vp himſelfe, and ſaid vnto them, Let him that is among you without ſinne, firſt caſt the ſtone at her.

8 And againe he ſtouped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And when they heard this, being accuſed of their

their owne consciences they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, euen vnto the last, & Iesus was left alone and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe, and saw no man but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

Iohn 5. 11 She sayd, No man Lord. And Iesus said, Neither doe I condemne thee, Goe, and sinne no more.

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I am the light of the world: hee that followeth me, Iohn 1.4 8.12 shall not in any wise walke in darkenes, but shall haue the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therfore said vnto them, Thou beares record of thy selfe, thy record is not true.

14 Iesus answered & said vnto them, Though I ¶ haue record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know from whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come & whither I goe.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh, I iudge no man.

16 And if I iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the father that sent me.

17 It is also written in your law, that the testi- Num. 35. monie of two men is true. Deut. 17

18 I am one that beareth witnesse of my selfe and Matt. 18 the father that sent me beareth witnesse of me

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is thy father? Iesus answered: Ye neither know mee, nor yet my father: if ye had knowne me, ye should haue Matt. 6.e knowne my father also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasurie, as he taught in the temple: and no man layd hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

Iohn 7.c 21 Then said Iesus againe to them, I goe my and 13.d way, & ye shall seeke me, and shall die in your sinnes. Whether I goe, thither can ye not come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himself, be cause he saith, whither I go thither ca ye not come.

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath,

I

I am from aboue: yee are of this world, I am not of this world. Matt 16. Iohn 3.d

24 I said therefore vnto you, that ye shall die in your sinnes. For if ye beleeue not that I am he, yee shall die in your sinne.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the very same thing that I said vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, & to iudge of you: yea and he that sent me is true: and I speake to the world those things which I haue heard of him. Iohn 14.

27 Howbeit, they vnderstood not that he spake to them of his father.

28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp on high the son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, & that I do nothing of my selfe: but as my father hath taught me, euen so I speake these things. Iohn 13 d and 14.b

29 And he that sent me, is with mee: the father hath not left mee alone: for I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 As he spake those words, many beleeued on him. Iohn 7.b

31 Then said Iesus to those Iewes which beleeued on him, If you continue in my word, then are ye my very disciples.

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall shall make you free.

33 They answered him, wee be Abrahams seed, and were neuer bound to any man: how saiest thou then, Ye shalbe made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verily, verily I say vnto you, That whosoeuer committeth sin, is the seruant of sinne,

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the sonne abideth euer. Rom. 7.a and 8.a

36 If the sonne therefore shall make you free, then ye shalbe free indeed. Rom 6.c 2 Pet. 2.d.

37 I know that yee are of Abrahams seede but ye seeke meanes to kill mee, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my fa-
ther. and ye doe that which ye haue seene with your
father.

39 They answered & said vnto him: Abraham is
our father, Iesus saith vnto them. If ye were Abra-
hams children, ye would do the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye goe about to kill me, a man that
hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of
God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deedes of your father. Then said they
vnto him, We be not borne of fornication, we haue
one father, euen God.

42 Iesus sayd vnto them, If God were your fa-
ther, truely ye would loue me, for I proceeded forth,
and came from God: neither come I of myselfe but
he sent me.

43 Why doe yee not know my speach? euen be-
cause ye cannot heare my word.

44 Ye are of your father the deuill, & the lustes of
your father will ye doe: he was a murderer frō the
1. Ioh. 3. beginning & abode not in the truth, because there is
Gen. 3. a no trueth in him: when he speaketh a lie, he speaketh
of his owne: For he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, therefore ye
beleeue me not.

46 Which of you rebuketh me of sinne? If I say
the trueth, why do not ye beleeue me?

Iohn 10. 47 He that is of God, heareth Gods words: Ye
therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him,
Ion 10. d Say we not well, that thou art a Samaritane, and
hast a deuill.

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill: but I
honour my father, and yee dishonour me.

50 I seeke not mine owne glory, there is one that
seeketh and iudgeth.

51 Verily, verily, I say vnto you, If a man keepe
my sayings, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then said the Iewes vnto him: Now know
wee that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and

the

the Prophets: and thou sayest, if a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? And the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I glorifie my selfe, my glorie is nothing: It is my father that glorifieth mee, which ye say, that he is your God.

55 And yet ye haue not knowne him, but I know him: and if that I say that I know him not, I shall be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his saying. Gen. 17.2.

56 Your father Abraham was glad to see my day: and he saw it and reioyced.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeeres olde, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, Before Abraham was, I am. Exod. 3.14. Iohn 1.0. Luke 4.3

59 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him but Iesus was hid, and went out of the temple.

## The ix. Chapter.

1 Christ restoreth sight vpon the Sabboth day to him that was borne blinde.

AND as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth. A.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Maister, who did sinne, this man or his parents that he was borne blinde?

3 Iesus answered, Neyther hath this man sinned, nor yet his parents: but that the workes of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: The night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. Iob. 1.2. 8.b. 12.g

6 When he had thus spoken he spat on the ground, & made clay of the spittle, and he annointed the clay vpon the eyes of the blinde.

7 And said vnto him, Goe wash thee in the poole Esay 8.6

of Siloe (which by interpretation is asmuch to say, as sent) he went his way therefore and washed, and came againe seeing.

8 The neighbours therefore, & they that had seene him before when he was blinde said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: Other said, Hee is like him, He himselfe said, I am euen he.

10 Therefore said they vnto him, how were thine eies opened,

11 He answered and said, The man that is called Iesus, made clay, and annointed mine eies, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole Siloe and washe: And when I went and washed, I receiued my sight.

12 Then said they vnto him, where is he? He said, I cannot tell.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that a little before was blinde.

¶ 14 And it was the Sabboth day, when Iesus made clay, and opened his eyes.

matt. 12. mark. 2. d luke 6. a iohn 5. b and 7.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had receiued his sight? He said vnto them, He put clay vpon mine eies and I washed, and do see.

iohn 7. d and 10. d

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God because hee keepeth not the Sabboth day. Other said How can a man that is a sinner, doe such myracles? And there was a strife among them.

iohn 7. f

17 They say vnto the blinde man againe what saist thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? He said, he is a Prophet.

18 But the Iewes did not beleeue the man how that he had beene blind, and receiued his sight, vntill they called the parents of him that had receiued his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son whom ye say that he was borne blind? How doth he now see then?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we cannot
tell, or who hath opened his eyes, can not we tell, he D
is of age, aske him, he shall speake for himselfe.
22 Such words spake his parents, because they Iohn 12.
feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed already,
that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, hee
should be excommunicated out of their Synagogue.
23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age aske
him.
24 Then againe called they the man that was blind
and said vnto him, Giue God the praise: wee know
that this man is a sinner.
25 He answered, and said, Whether he bee a sinner
or noe, I cannot tell: one thing I am sure of, that
whereas I was blind, now I see.
26 Then said they to him againe, what did hee to
thee? how opened he thine eyes?
27 Hee answered them, I told you per while, and
ye did not heare: wherefore would you heare it a-
gaine? will ye also be his disciples?
28 Then rated they him, and said, Thou art his di- E
sciple: we are Moses disciples.
29 We are sure that God spake vnto Moses: as
for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.
30 The man answered and said vnto them, this
is a marueilous thing, that ye wote not from whence
he is and what he is, yet he hath opened mine eyes.
31 For we be sure that God heareth no sinners:
but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his
will, him heareth he.
32 Since the world began was it not heard that a-
ny man opened the eies of one that was borne blind.
33 If this man were not of God, hee could doe
nothing.
34 They answered and said vnto him, thou art
altogether borne in sinne, and doest thou teach vs?
And they cast him out.
35 Iesus heard that they had excommunicate F
him: and when he had found him, he said vnto him,
Doest thou beleeue on the sonne of God?

36 He answered, and said, Who is he Lord, that I might beleeue on him.

37 And Jesus said vnto him, Thou hast both seene him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

John 4. c 38 And he said, Lord, I beleeue: and he worshipped him.

39 And Jesus said vnto them, I am come vnto iudgement in this world, that they which see not, might see, & that they which see, might be made blind.

John 15. 40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these words and said vnto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Jesus said vnto them, If ye were blind, ye would haue no sinne, but now ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

The x. Chapter.

1 Christ the true shepeheard and the doore. 34. Princes called Gods.

Verily, verily I say vnto you, He that entreth not in by the dooze into the sheepfold, but climeth vp some other way, the same is a theefe, and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the dooze, is the shepheard of the sheepe.

Prou. 10. 3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voice: and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when hee shall put forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him for they know his voyce.

5 A stranger will they in no wise follow, but will flee from him, for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This prouerbe spake Jesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not what things they were which he spake vnto them.

28 7 Then said Jesus vnto them againe, Verily, verily I say vnto you, I am the dooze of the sheepe.

John 14. 5. 8 All euen as many as came before me, are theeues and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am the dooze: by me if any man enter in, he shalbe

shalbe sake and shall goe in, & goe out, & finde pasture.
10 The theefe cõmeth not, but for to steale, kill, & to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and that they might haue more abundantly.
11 I am the good shepheard, the good shepheard giueth his life for the sheepe. Ezec. 34 Mich. 5.4
12 An hireling and he which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the Wolfe cõming, and leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth: & the Wolfe ratcheth them, and scatereth the sheepe.
13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.
14 I am the good shepheard, and know my sheepe & am knowne of mine. & 1. Tim. 2
15 As the father knoweth me, euẽ so know I also the father: and I giue my life for the sheepe. Matt. 11 Luk. 10.
16 And other sheepe haue I, which are not of this fold: them also must I bring, and they shall heare my voice, and there shalbe one fold, and one shepheard. Mark 10
17 Therefore doth my father loue me, because I put my life from me that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it frõ me but I put it away of my selfe. I haue power to put it from me, & I haue power to take it againe. This commaundement haue I receiued of my father.
19 There was a dissention therefore againe among the Iewes for these sayings.
20 And many of them said, He hath a Deuill and is mad why heare ye him?
21 Other said. These are not the wordes of him that hath a deuill, Can a Deuill open the eyes of the blinde? Matt 9.d and 12.b Mark 3.b Iohn 8. f
22 And it was at Hierusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. D
23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, euen in Salomons porch. 3. Reg. 6. Acts 3. b and 5. c
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him. How long doest thou make vs to doubt? if thou be Christ, tell vs plainely.
25 Iesus answered them, I told you & ye beleeue not:

not: the workes that I doe in my fathers name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleeue not, because ye are not of my sheepe, as I sayd vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them
Iohn 8.f and they follow me.

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they
E shall neuer perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand.

29 My father which gaue them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to take them out of my fathers hand.

30 I and my father are one.

Iohn 14 31 Then the Iewes tooke vp stones, to stone him
and 17.c withall.

Iohn 8.g 32 Iesus answered them, many good workes haue I shewed you from my father, for which worke of them doe you stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For a good
Iohn 5.d worke we stone thee not, but for thy blasphemie: and because that thou being a man makest thy selfe God.

Psal. 82. 34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your
Exod.22 law, I sayd ye are Gods?

35 If he called them Gods, vnto whom the word of God was spoken, and the Scripture can not be broken.

Matt.26 36 Say ye of him whom the father hath sanctified
Mark.14 and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because
Luk.22.g I sayd, I am the sonne of God?

Iohn 9.a 37 If I doe not the workes of my father, beleeue
and 15.d me not.

38 But if I doe, and if ye beleeue not me, beleeue the workes: that yee may know and beleeue that the father is in me, and I in him.

Matt.21. 39 Againe they went about to take him: and hee
Iohn 7 g escaped out of their hand.

Iohn 1.d 40 And went away againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn was first baptising: and there
Iohn 3. he abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and sayde, Iohn

John did no myracle: but al things that John spake of this man were true.

42 And many beleeued on him there.

The xi. Chapter.

43 Christ raiseth Lazarus from death. 45 certaine Iewes beleeue in Christ.

A Certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus, of Bethanie, the towne of Mary and her sister Martha

2 (And it was Mary which anointed the Lorde with ointment, and wiped his feete with her hayre, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.) Luke 7.f

3 Therefore his sister sent vnto him, saying, Lord behold, he whom thou louest is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that, he sayd, This infirmitie is not vnto death, but for the glory of God: that the sonne of man might be glorified thereby. Iohn 9.a

5 Iesus loued Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sicke, hee abode two dayes still in the same place where he was,

7 Then after that hee saith to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iurie againe. B

8 His disciples say vnto him, Master the Iewes lately sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe? Iohn 7.a

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? if any man walke in the day he stumbleth not: because he seeth the light of the world.

10 But if a man walke in the night he stumbleth: because there is no light in him.

11 These things sayd he, and after that, hee saith vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe that I may awake him out of sleepe. Matt.9.e Luke 8.g Mark.5.d

12 Then said his disciples, Lord if he sleep, he shal doe well inough

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that hee had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is

is dead:

Luke 10. 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, (because ye may beleeue:) Neuertheless, let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then sayd Thomas, which is called Didimus, vnto his fellow Disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Iesus came, he found that he had laine in his graue foure dayes already.

18 Bethanie was nigh vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs off:)

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha, and Mary, to comfort them ouer their brother.

20 Martha as soone as she heard that Iesus was comming, went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou

Iohn 11. hadst beene here, my brother had not died

22 But euen now I know, that whatsoeuer thou wilt aske of God God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus sayd vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha sayth vnto him, I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus sayd vnto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: hee that beleeueth on mee, yea though he

Iohn 1. 2 and 14 2 were dead yet shall he liue.

26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth on me, shall neuer die. Beleeuest thou this?

Iohn 3.b Rom. 1.b Aba 2.a 27 She sayth vnto him, Yea Lord, I beleeue that thou art that Christ the sonne of God, which should come into the world.

Hebr, 10 E 28 And when she had so sayde, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying The Master is come and calleth for thee.

29 As soone as she heard that, she ariseth quickly and commeth vnto him.

30 Iesus was not yet come into the towne: but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the

house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose vp hastily and went out, followed her, saying she goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was and saw him, she fell downe at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord if thou hadst beene here, my brother had not beene dead. Iohn 11.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping, which came with her, he groned in the spirit, and was troubled in himselfe,

34 And said, Where haue ye laid him? They say vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold how hee loued him. Iohn 19 f

37 And some of them said, Could not this man which opened the eyes of the blind, haue caused that this man also should not haue died. Iohn 9.b

38 Iesus therefore againe groning in himselfe, commeth to the graue: It was a caue, and a stone laid on it.

39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone, Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith vnto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath beene dead foure dayes.

40 Iesus saith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou wouldst beleeue, thou shouldst see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes and said, Father, I thanke thee that thou hast heard me.

42 Howbeit, I know that thou hearest me alwaies but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me Iohn 12.

43 And when he had thus spoken, he cryed with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with graue clothes, & his face was bound about with a napkin. Iesus saith vnto them loose him Iohn 3. e

and

and let him goe.

45 Then many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things which Iesus did, beleeued on him.

Iohn 7 c 46 But some of them went their waies to the Phariſees, and told them what Iesus had done.

Matt. 26. Mark. 14 Luk 22. a 47 Then gathered the high Prieſtes and the Phariſees a counſell, and ſayd, What doe wee? for this man doth many myracles.

Acts 4. c 48 If we let him ſcape thus, all men will beleeue on him, and the Romanes ſhall come, and take away both our roome and the people.

49 And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high Prieſt that ſame yeere, ſayd vnto them, yee perceiue nothing at all.

Iohn 18 a 50 Nor conſider that it is expedient for vs, that one man ſhould die for the people, and not that all the nation periſh.

51 This ſpake he not of himſelfe: but being high Prieſt that ſame yeare, hee prophecied that Iesus ſhould die for that nation.

52 And not for that nation onely, but that also he ſhoulde gather together in one the children of God that were ſcattered abroad.

Matt. 26 Mark. 14 53 Then from that day forth, they tooke counſel together for to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes: but went his way thence into a country nigh to a wildernesse, into a citie which is called Ephraim, and there continued with his diſciples.

Matt. 26 Mark. 14 Luk 22. a 55 And the Iewes Eaſter was nigh at hand, and many went out of the country vp to Hieruſalem before the Eaſter, to purifie themſelues.

Iohn 7. b 56 Then ſought they for Iesus, and ſpake among themſelues, as they ſtood in the temple, What thinke ye, seeing he commeth not to the feaſt day?

Iohn 18 c 57 But the high Prieſts and the Phariſees, had giuen a commaundement, that if any man knewe where he were, hee ſhould ſhewe it, that they might take him.

The

The xii. Chapter.

3 Marie annoynteth Iesus feete. Wherefore the Iewes beleeue not.

THen Iesus before sixe daies of the Passeouer, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had beene dead, whom he raysed from death. A Matt. 26

2 There they made him a supper and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him. Mark. 14 Luk. 22 a

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment, of Spikenard, very costly, and annoynted Iesus feete, and wiped his feete cleane with her haire: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. Luke. 7. b

4 Then saith one of his disciples Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, which should betray him. Matt. 26 Mark. 14

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poore: but because he was a theefe, and had the bag, and bare that which was giuen.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this. 26 Iohn 13.

8 For the poore always yee haue with you: but me haue ye not always.

9 Much people of the Iewes therefore had knowledge that he was there: and they came not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he raised from death.

10 But the high priests held a counsell, that they might put Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away and beleeued on Iesus. Iohn 11. Matt. 21

12 On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus commeth to Hierusalem. Mark. 11

13 Tooke branches of Palme trees, & went forth to meete him, and cryed, Hosanna, blessed is hee that commeth in the name of the Lord, king of Israel.

14 And Iesus, when he had found a young Asse, sate thereon, as it is written,

15 Feare

Esay 40.
Zach. 2. b
John 1. c

15 Feare not daughter of Sion: behold, thy king commeth, sitting on an Asses colt.

16 These things vnderstood not his disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified then remembred they that such things were written of him, and that such things they had done vnto him.

17 The people that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his graue, and raysed him from death bare record

18 Therefore met him much people also, because they heard that he had done such a miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore sayde among themselues, Perceiue ye how we preuaile nothing? Behold, all the whole world is gone after him.

3. Regū c
Acts 8. c
2. Par. 6. d

20 There were certaine Greekes among them that came vp to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida, a citie of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Syr, we would faine see Iesus.

22 Philip commeth and telleth Andrewe: and againe Andrew and Philip told Iesus.

John 13.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come that the sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily I say vnto you, Except the
Esay 53.
1 Cor 15
wheat corne fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: if it die, it bringeth forth much fruite.

25 He that loueth his life, shall loose it: and hee
Matt. 16
and 16. d
Mark. 8 d
Luk 12 b
John 13 a
and 17. a
that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 If any man minister vnto mee, let him follow mee: and where I am, there shal also my minister be if any man minister vnto mee, him will my father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled. And what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre, but therefore came I into this houre.

28 Father glorifie thy name. Then came there a voyce from heauen saying, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it againe.

29 The people therefore that stoode by, and heard

it, sayd that it thundred: other sayd, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered and said, this voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this worlde: nowe shall the prince of this worlde be cast out. Iohn 12.

32 And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me. Iohn 5 and 15.b

33 (This he sayd, signifying what death he should die.)

34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of the law, that Christ bideth euer: and howe sayest thou, the sonne of man must be lift vp: Who is that sonne of man? Psal. 110 Esay 9.b Dan 7.d

35 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walke while ye haue light, least the darknes come on you: for hee that walketh in the darke, wotteth not whether he goeth. Mich. 5 f Ephes. 5.

36 While ye haue light, beleeue on the light, that ye may bee the children of the light. These thinges spake Iesus, and departed, & was hid from them.

37 But though he had done so many miracles before them yet beleeued not they on him:

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake. Lord who hath beleeued our saying? and to whom hath the arme of the Lord bene declared? Esay 53. Rom. 10

39 Therefore could they not beleeue, because that Esaias sayd againe, Esay 6.c

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, and least they should understand with their hearte, and should bee conuerted, And I should heale them. Matt. 13 Mark 4 b

41 Such thinges sayde Esaias, when hee saw his glory, and spake of him. Luke 2 b Acts 28.f

42 Neuertheles, among the cheife rulers also many beleeued on him: but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, least they should be put out of the Synagogue.

43 For

43 For they loued the prayse of men, more then
Iohn 9.b
Iohn 5 g the prayse of God.

44 Iesus cryed, and said, He that beleeueth on me beleeueth not on me, but on him that sent mee.

45 And hee that seeth mee, seeth him that sent me.

46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth on me, should not abide in darkenesse.
Iohn 1.a
3.c & 8.d
Iohn 3 b 47 And if any man heare my words, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world.

48 He that refuseth me, & receiueth not my words hath one that iudgeth him: the word that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the father which sent me, hee gaue mee a commandement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I knowe that his commandement is life euerlasting: Whatsoeuer I speake therefore, euen as the father bad me, so I speake.

## The xiii. Chapter.

5 Christ washeth his Apostles feete 35 Whereby Christs disciples are knowne.

NOw before the feast of the passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come that he should depart out of this world vnto the father, when he loued his owne which were in the world vnto the end he loued them.

2 And when it was nowe supper, (after the deuill had put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne to betray him:)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come from
Matt. 26 God, and went to God:
Mark. 14
Matt. 11 and 28.d
Luke 10. 4 He ariseth from supper, and layeth aside his vpper garments: and when he had taken a towell, hee girded himselfe.

5 After that hee powreth water into a basen and began to wash his Disciples feete, and to wipe them cleane with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then commeth he to Simon Peter: and Peter

saith vnto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feete?
7 Iesus answered: and said vnto him, What I do thou wotest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.
8 Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete, Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not thou hast no part with me.
9 Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also my handes and my head.
10 Iesus saith to him he that is washed, needeth not saue to wash his feete, but is cleane euery whit: and ye are cleane, but not all.
11 For he knewe who it was that should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane.
12 So after he had washed their feete and receiued his clothes and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Wote ye what I haue done to you?
13 Ye call me Maister, and Lord, and ye say well: for so am I. Iohn 9.
14 If I then your Lorde and Maister haue washed your feete, ye also ought to wash one another's feete.
15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should do as I haue done vnto you. Ephes. 5.a 1. Pet. 2.d
16 Verily, verily I say vnto you, the seruant is not greater then his maister, neyther the messenger greater then he that sent him. Mark 10 Luke 6.f
17 If ye know these things, happie are ye if ye doe them. Iohn 15.
18 I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against mee. Luk 11.d Psal 41.b
19 Now tell I you before it come, that when it is come to passe ye might beleeue that I am hee. Iohn 14. and 16.a.
20 Verily, verily I say vnto you he that receiueth whomsoeuer I send, receiueth me: and hee that receiueth mee, receiueth him that sent mee. Matt 10 Luk 11.a Mark 9.a
21 When Iesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified and said, Verily, verily I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the Disciples looked one on another, doubting of whome hee spake.

Matt 26. Mark. 14 Luk 22 b Iohn 13 c 20. and 21. f

23 There was one of Iesus disciples leaning on Iesus bosome, euen he whome Iesus loued.

24 To him beckened Simon Peter therefore, that hee should aske who it should bee of whome hee spake.

25 He then when he leaned on Iesus breast sayd vnto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Iesus answered, Hee it is to whome I shall giue a sop, when I haue dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, hee gaue it to Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon.

Iohn 13. I.

27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him: Then sayde Iesus vnto him, that thou doest, doe quickly.

28 That wist no man at the table, for what intent he spake vnto him.

Iohn 12.

29 Some of them thought, because Iudas had the bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things that we haue need of against the feast, or that he should giue some thing to the poore.

30 After then as hee had receiued the sop, hee went immediately out and it was night.

Iohn 12. and 17. a

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Iesus said, now is the sonne of man glorified: and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straight way glorifie him.

Iohn 7. a

33 Little children, yet a little while am I with you, Ye shall seeke me, and as I said vnto the Iewes, whither I goe, thither can ye not come: so vnto you also say I now.

34 A new commandement giue I vnto you, that Iohn 5. e ye loue together as I haue loued you that ye also loue one another.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye loue one another.

36 Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord whither goest

goest thou? Jesus answered him, whither I goe thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow mee afterwards. F 1. Iohn. 2

37 Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will ieopard my life for thy sake. Iohn 21 f

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou ieopard thy life for my sake? Verily, verily I say vnto thee, the Cocke shall not crow, till thou haue denied me thrise. Acts 12 Matt 26. Mark 14. Luk 22. d Iohn 13.

The xiiii. Chapter

2 He armeth his disciples with consolation against trouble.

And hee saide vnto his disciples. Let not your heart be troubled: yee beleeue in God, beleeue also in me. A

2 In my fathers house are many dwelling places, if it were not so, I would haue told you, I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe and prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you euen vnto my selfe: that where I am, there may ye be also. Iohn 12. and 17 b

4 And whether I goe, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith vnto him, Lord, we know not whether thou goest: and how can wee know the way?

6 Jesus saith vnto him, I am the way, and the truth and the life: no man commeth vnto the father, but by me. Iohn 1. 2. and. 11. 25 Matt 11.

7 If ye had knowne me, ye should haue known my father also: and now ye know him, and haue seene him. Iohn 8. d

8 Philip saith vnto him, Lord, shew vs the father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Jesus saith vnto him, Haue I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not knowne mee? Philip? he that hath seene me, hath seene the father: and how sayst thou then, Shew vs the father? Iohn 10.

10 Beleeuest thou not that I am in the father, and the father in me? the words that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe. but the father that dwelleth in me, is he that doth the workes. Iohn 14

11 Beleeue me that I am in the father, and the

father in me: or else beleeue me for the workes sake
12 Verily, verily I say vnto you he that beleeueth on me, the workes that I doe the same shall hee doe also and greater works then these shall he doe: be-
Matt 17. and. 21. c Mark 12 Luk 11 b cause I goe vnto the father.
13 And whatsoeuer yee shall aske in my name: that will I doe: that the father may be glorified in the sonne.
¶ 14 If yee shall aske any thing in my name, I will doe it.
15 If ye loue me keepe my commandements.
16 And I will pray the father, and hee shall giue you another comforter, that he may bide with you for euer.
17 Euen the spirit of truth, whome the world cannot receiue, because the world seeth him not neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shalbe in you.
Matt 18. 18 I will not leaue you comfortlesse, I come to you.
19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth mee no more: but yee see mee, because I liue, and yee shall liue also.
20 That day shall yee know that I am in the father, and you in me, and I in you.
D 21 He that hath my commandementes, and keepeth them, the same is he that loueth me, and he that
Iohn 15 a 1 Iohn 5. 2. Iohn 1 Actes 15. loueth me, shalbe loued of my father, & I will loue him and will shew mine owne selfe vnto him.
22 Iudas saith vnto him, not Iudas Iscariot Lord what is done, that thou wilt shew thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?
23 Iesus answered and saide vnto him If a man loue me he will keepe my sayings, and my father will loue him, and we will come vnto him, and make our dwelling with him.
24 He that loueth me not keepeth not my sayings, and the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the fathers that sent me.
25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being

pet present with pou.

26 But the comforter which is the holy ghost, whō the father will send in my name, he shall teach pou all thinges, and bring all thinges to pour remembrance whatsoeuer I haue saide vnto pou. John 20 b Actes 15 John 16.

27 Peace I leaue vnto pou: my peace I giue vnto pou not as the world giueth, giue I vnto pou: let not pour heart be troubled, neither let it feare.

28 Pe haue heard how I said vnto pou, I goe away, and come againe vnto pou If pe loued mee pe would verily reioyce, because I said I goe vnto the father: for the father is greater then I. John 6. b and. 16 a

29 And now haue I shewed pou before it come to passe, that when it comes to passe, pee might beleeue

30 Here after I will not talke many words with pou, for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me.

31 But that the world may know that I loue the father: and as the father gaue me commandement, euen so do I. Arise, let vs goe hence.

## The XV. Chapter.

5 The consolation betwene Christ and his members vnder the parable of the vine.

I Am the true vine, and my father is the husbandman.

2 Euery branch that beareth not fruit in me, hee taketh away; and euery branch that beareth fruit he purgeth that it may bring forth more fruite

3 Now are pee cleane through the worde which I haue spoken vnto pou.

4 Bide in me, and I in pou: As the branch cannot beare fruite in it selfe, except pe bide in the vine, no more can pe, except pe abide in me.

5 I am the vine, pe are the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruite: for without me can pe doe nothing John 12. Actes 15

6 If a man bide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and withereth, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they burne.

7 If ye bide in me and my wordes abide in you, ye
shall aske what ye will, and it shalbe done for you
25 8 Herein is my father glorified that ye beare much
Iohn. 3. d fruite, and be come my disciples.
Mark 11. 9 As the father hath loued me, euen so haue I
Iohn 15. loued you: continue ye in my loue.
Iames 1 a 10 If ye keepe my commandements, ye shall abide
in my loue: euen as I haue kept my fathers, com-
mandements and abide in his loue.
Iohn, 3. 11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that
my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy
might be full.
12 This is my commandement, that ye loue to-
gether, as I haue loued you.
13 Greater loue hath no man than this: that a
man bestow his life for his friends.
14 Ye are my friendes, if ye doe whatsoeuer I com
mand you.
E 15 Henceforth call I you not seruantes for the
seruant knoweth not what his lorde doth, but you
haue I called friendes, for all thinges that I
haue heard of my father, haue I made knowne to
you.
16 Yee haue not chosen mee, but I haue chosen
you and ordeined you, that you should goe and bring
forth fruit, and that your fruit should remaine: and
whatsoeuer yee shall aske of the father in my name, he
may giue it you.
17 This commaund I you, that yee loue toge
ther.
18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated
me before it hated you.
19 If yee were of the world, the world would loue
his owne: howbeit, because ye are not of the world
Iohn. 17 c but I haue chosen you out of the world therefore the
Matt 10. world hateth you.
Luk 21. c 20 Remember the worde that I said vnto you, the
Mark 10 seruant is not greater then the lorde: if they haue
persecuted me, they will persecute you; if they haue
kept my saying, they will keepe yours also.

21 But

21 But all these things will they doe vnto you, for my names sake, because they haue not knowne him that sent me.

22 If I had not come, and spoken vnto them they should haue had no sinne but now haue they nothing to cloake their sinne withall. 2.Cor.4

23 He that hateth me hateth my father also.

24 If I had not don among them the workes which none other man did, they should haue had no sinne but now haue they both seene, and hated me and my father. Psal 39 c and 69.a

25 But this commeth to passe, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. Iohn 14. and 16.b

26 But when the comforter is come, whome I will send vnto you from the father, euen the spirite of truth, which proceedeth of the father he shall testifie of me. Actes 2 a

26 And ye shal beare witnesse also, because ye haue been with me from the beginning.

## The xvi. Chapter.

7 Of the holy Ghost, and of his office. 17. Of Christes ascension. 23. To aske in the name of Christ.

THese things haue I spoken vnto you, because yee should not be offended. M Matt 10.

2 They shall put you out of their Synagogues: yea the time commeth, that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that hee doth Godseruice. Mark 13 Luk 21.c

3 And such things will they doe vnto you: because they haue not knowne the father, neyther yet me. Actes 9 a

4 But these thinges haue I told you, that when the time shall come, yee may remember them that I told you. These things said I not vnto you at the beginning, because I was present with you. Iohn 15 d

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said such things vnto you: sorow hath filled your hearts.

7 Neuertheles, I tell you the truth, it is expedient

for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away the
John 14.d and 15.d comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart,
Actes 2.a I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, he will rebuke the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement.

9 Of sinne because they beleeue not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse because I goe to my father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the Prince of this world is iudged already.

Acts 2.d 12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot beare them away now.

13 Howbeit, when he is come, which is the spirit of truth, he will leade you into all truth. For he shall not speake of himselfe: but whatsoeuer hee shall heare, ℭ that shall hee speake: and hee will shew you things
Mat. 11. to come.
Luke 1.d 14 Hee shall glorifie me, for he shal receiue of mine
John. 3.d and shall shew vnto you.
John 7.d 15 All things that the father hath, are mine: therefore said I vnto you, that he taketh of mine and shall shew vnto you.

16 After a while, and yee shall not see mee: and againe after a while, and ye shall see mee: for I goe to the father.

17 Then said some of his disciples betweene themselues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, After a while and ye shall not see me: and againe after a while, and ye shall see mee: and that I goe to the father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith after a while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Iesus perceiued that they would aske him and said vnto them, Do ye inquire among your selues of that I said, After a while, and ye shall not see me: and againe after a while and ye shall see me?

John. 16. 20 Verily, verily I say vnto you, that ye shal weepe and lament but the world shall reioyce: ye shal sorrow but your sorrow shall be turned to ioy.

21 A woman when she trauileth hath sorrow, because her houre is come, but assoone as she is deliuered

of

of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore haue sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shal reioyce, & your ioy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day shall ye aske me no question. Verily, verily I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the father in my name he will giue it you.

24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my name: aske and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you by prouerbes: the time commeth when I shall no more speake vnto you by prouerbes, but I shall shew you plainly of my father.

26 At that day shall ye aske in my name: & I say not vnto you that I will pray vnto my father for you.

27 For the father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, and haue beleeued that I came out from God.

28 I went out from the father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the world, and goe to the father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Loe, now talkest thou plainly, and speakest no prouerbe.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things and needest not that any man should aske thee any question: therefore beleeue we that thou camest from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe ye now beleeue.

32 Behold the houre draweth nigh, and is already come that ye shall be scattered euery man to his own and shall leaue me alone: and yet am I not alone, for the father is with me.

33 These words haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace, for in the world ye haue tribulation: but bee of good cheare, I haue ouercome the world.

Iohn 20.d
Iohn 2.e
Zach 13.
Matt 26.
Mark 14.
Iohn 16.

## The xvii Chapter.

1 Christ prayeth to his father, that their glory might bee made manifest.

These

These wordes spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to
Iohn 13d heauen, and sayd, Father, the houre is come,
glorifie thy sonne, that thy sonne may also glorifie
thee.

2 As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that
he should giue eternall life to as many as thou hast
giuen him.

1 Iohn 1. 3 This is the life eternall, that they might know
thee the onely true God, & Iesus Christ whom thou
hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finis-
shed the worke which thou gauest mee to doe.

5 And now glorifie thou me, O father with thine
owne self with the glory which I had with thee pet
Iohn 19. the world was.

6 I haue declared thy name vnto the men which
thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and
thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy word.

25 7 Now they haue knowne that all things what so
euer thou hast giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes which
thou gauest me, and they haue receiued them, and
haue knowne surely that I came out from thee, and
they haue beleeued that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world: but
for them which thou hast giuen me, for they are thine

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine: and
am glorified in them.

11 And now am I not in the world, and they are
in the world, and I come to thee, Holy father, keepe
Iohn 18. through thy owne name them which thou hast giuen
mee, that they may also be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world I kept
them in thy name: those which thou gauest me, haue
I kept and none of them is lost, but that lost child
Psal 109 that the scripture might be fulfilled.

13 Now come I to thee, and these wordes speake
I in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled
in themselues.

14 I haue giuen them thy worde, and the world
hath

hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I also am not of the world. E

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keepe them from the euill. Iohn. 15. Sapi 2. d Matth 9. Luk 11. 4

16 They are not of the world, as also I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth: thy word is the truth.

18 As thou diddest send me into the world, euen so haue I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

20 Neuertheless, I pray not for them alone: but for them also which shal beleeue in me through their preaching:

21 That they all may be one, as thou father art in me, & I in thee, and that they also may be one in vs: that the world may beleeue that thou hast sent me. D Galat 3d

22 And the glory which thou gauest me, I haue giuen them: that they also may be one, as we also are one.

23 I in them, and thou in mee, that they may be made perfect in one: and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me. Iohn 1 1d

24 Father, I wil that they which thou hast giuen me, be with me where I am: that they may see my glory, which thou hast giuen me, for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world. Matt 11. Luk 10. d

25 O righteous father, the world also hath not knowne thee, but I haue knowne thee, and these haue knowne that thou hast sent mee.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy name, and will declare it: that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me may be in them, and I in them.

The xviii. Chapter

3 Christ is betrayed by Iudas. 40. The Iewes aske Barabbas to be let loose.

When Iesus had spoken these words, hee went forth

forth with his disciples ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples.

Matt 26. Mark 13. Luk 22. d

2 Iudas also which betraied him, knew the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Iudas then after hee had receiued a band of men and officers of the high Priestes and Pharisees commeth thither with lanternes, and torches, and weapons.

4 And Iesus knowing all things that should come on him, went forth and said vnto them: Whom seeke yee?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith vnto them, I am hee. Iudas also which betraied him, stood with them.

6 As soone then as he had said vnto them, I am hee, they went backeward, and fell to the ground.

25 7 Then asked he them againe, whome seeke yee? They said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I haue told you, that I am he: if ye seeke me therefore let these goe their way.

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which hee spake: of them which thou gauest me haue I not

Iohn 17. b lost one.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests seruant and cut off his right eare. The seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then saith Iesus vnto Peter, put vp thy sword into thy sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup

Matt 26. which my father hath giuen me?

Gen. 9. a 12 Then the company and the captain, and officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus and bounde him.

13 And led him away to Annas first, (for hee was father in law vnto Caiaphas) which was the high

¶ Iohn 11. Priest the same yeere. And Annas sent Christ bound vnto Caiaphas the high priest.

14 Caiaphas was hee which gaue counsell to the Iewes that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

15 And

15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple was knowen vnto the high Priest and went in with Jesus vnto the palace of the high priest. Matt. 26

16 But Peter stoode at the dooze without. Then went out that other disciple, which was knowne vnto the high Priest, and spake vnto the damsell that kept the dooze, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsell that kept the dooze vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans Disciples? he saith, I am not.

18 The seruants and officers stood there, which had made a fire of coales (for it was colde) and they warmed themselues: Peter also was standing among them, warming him.

19 The high Priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine. Mark 14. Luk 11.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I euer taught in the Synagogue and in the temple whether all the Iewes resort, and in secret haue I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? Aske them which heard me what I haue said vnto them: behold they can tell what I said. D

22 When he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by smote Jesus with a rod, saying, answerest thou the high Priest so? Acts 23.

23 Jesus answered him, if I haue euill spoken, beare witnes of the euill: but if I haue wel spoken, why smitest thou me?

24 Now Annas had sent him bound vnto Caiphas the high Priest.

25 Simon Peter was standing and warming himselfe: Then said they vnto him, Art not thou also one of his Disciples? Hee denied it and said, I am not.

26 One of the seruants of the high Priests (his cosen whose eare Peter smote off) saith vnto him, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter therefore denied againe, and immediately

diately the cocke crew.

Iohn 12. Matt. 27 Mark 15 Luk 23. a E

28 Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas, into the hall of iudgment: It was in the morning and they themselues went not into the iudgment hall, least they should be defiled: but that they might eate the Passeouer.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man.

30 They answered and said vnto him, if hee were not an euill doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then said Pilate vnto them. Take yee him, and iudge him after your owne lawe. The Iewes therefore said vnto him, it is not lawfull for vs to kill any man.

32 That the wordes of Iesus might bee fulfilled: which he spake, signifying what death hee should die.

Matt. 20 Matt. 27 Mark. 15 Luk 23. b F

33 Then Pilate entred into the iudgement hall againe, and called Iesus, and said vnto him Art thou the king of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Saiest thou this thing of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered Am I a Iew? Thine owne nation and high Priestes haue deliuered thee vnto mee: what hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world then would my seruants surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

Iohn 6.

37 Pilate therefore said vnto him Art thou a king then: Iesus answered, Thou saiest that I am a king: For this cause am I borne, & for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnes vnto the truth, and all that are of the truth, heare my voice.

38 Pilate saith vnto him. What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

39 Ye haue a custome that I should deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will ye that I loose vnto you the king of the Iewes? Matt. 27 Mark. 15 Luke 23.

40 Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas. This Barabbas was a robber. Acts 3. c

## The xix. Chapter.

1 Christ is whipped, beaten, and crowned, 12. All power is of God.

THen Pilate tooke Iesus therefore, and scourged him. A Matt. 27

2 And the souldiers when they had wound a crowne of thornes, they put it on his head, and they did cast about him a purple garment. Mark. 15

3 And saide, Haile king of the Iewes: and strooke him with rods.

4 Pilate went forth againe, and said vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing the crowne of thornes, and the robe of purple: and Pilate saith vnto them, Behold the man.

6 When the high Priestes therefore, and officers saw him, they cried saying, Crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him, for I find no fault in him. Matt. 27 Mark. 15 Luke. 23. B

7 The Iewes answered him, Wee haue a lawe, and by our law he ought to die, because hee made himselfe the sonne of God. Leuit. 23 Iohn 5. b

8 When Pilate heard that saying, he was the more afraid.

9 And went againe into the iudgement hall, and saith vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him no answere.

10 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against mee, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the more sinne. Sapi. 6, a

11 And

Iohn 3. d
Rom. 13
Matt. 27.
Mark 15
Luke. 23.
Acts 17.

12 And from thencefoorth ſought Pilate meanes to
looſe him: but the Iewes cried, ſaying, if thou let him
goe, thou art not Cæſars friend: for whoſoeuer ma-
keth himſelfe a king, ſpeaketh againſt Cæſar.

13 When Pilate heard that ſaying, he brought Ie-
ſus forth, and ſate downe in the iudgement ſeate,
in a place that is called the Pauement, but in the He-
brew tongue Gabbatha.

14 It was the preparing of the paſſeouer, and a-
bout the ſixth houre: and hee ſaith vnto the Iewes,
Behold your king.

15 They cried, Away with him, away with him,
crucifie him. Pilate ſaith vnto them, ſhall I crucifie
your king? The high Prieſts anſwered, Wee haue
no king but Cæſar.

Matt. 27.
Mark 15
Luke 23.
Hebr. 13

16 Then deliuered he him therefore vnto them
to be crucified: and they tooke Ieſus, and led him
away.

17 And he bearing his croſſe, went forth into a
place, which is called the place of a ſkull, but in the
Hebrew Golgotha.

18 Where they crucified him, & two other with
him, on either ſide one, and Ieſus in the middeſt.

19 And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the
croſſe. The writing was, Ieſus of Nazareth the king of
the Iewes.

Matt. 27
Mark 23.
Luk 12. c

20 This title read many of the Iewes: for the
place where Ieſus was crucified was nigh to the ci-
tie: And it was written in Hebrew, Greeke, & Latine.

21 Then ſaid the high Prieſts of the Iewes to Pi-
late, Write not the king of the Iewes, but that hee
ſaid, I am king of the Iewes.

22 Pilate anſwered, What I haue written, that
haue I written.

Matt. 17.
Mark 15.
Luk 23. c

23 Then the ſouldiers, when they had crucified
Ieſus, tooke his garmentes, (& made foure parties, to
euery ſouldier a part) & alſo his coate: the coat was
without ſeame, woouen from the top throughout.

24 They ſaid therefore among themſelues, Let vs
not deuide it, but caſt lots for it whoſe it ſhall bee.

That

That the Scripture might be fulfilled, saying, They parted my raiment among them, and for my coate did they cast lots. And the souldiers did such things indeede. Psal 22.2

25 There stood by the crosse of Jesus his mother and his mothers sister Marie the wife of Cleophas, and Marie Magdalene.

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, & the disciple standing by whom he loued, he saith vnto his mother, Woman behold thy sonne. Iohn 13.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother, And from that houre the disciple tooke her into his owne house.

28 After these things, Jesus knowing that all things were now performed, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, he saith, I thirst. Psa.69.c

29 So there stood a vessel by full of vineger, therefore when they had filled a spunge full of vineger, & put it vpon hyssope they offered it to his mouth Mar. 27. Matt. 15

30 When Jesus therefore had receiued the vineger, he said, it is finished: and when hee had bowed his head he gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore, because it was the preparing of the Sabboth, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabboth day, (for that Sabboth day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legges might be broken and that they might be taken downe.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legges of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legges

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare thrust him into the side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleeue also.

36 For these things were done, that the scripture

should be fulfilled, A bone of him shal not be broken.
Num. 9. b 37 And againe another Scripture saieth, They
Exo. 12. shall looke on him whom they pearced.
Zach. 12. 38 After this, Ioseph of Armathea (being a
matt 27. disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes)
Mark 15. besought Pilate that he might take downe the body
Luk 23. g of Iesus: and Pilate gaue him licence. He came therefore and tooke the body of Iesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the beginning came to Iesus by night) and brought of Myrrhe and Aloes mingled together, about an hundred pound (weight.)

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, & wound it in linnen clothes, with the odours, as the manner of the Iewes is to burie.

41 And in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laid.

42 There laid they Iesus therefore, because of the preparing of the Sabboth of the Iewes, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

## The xx. Chapter.

2 Marie commeth to the sepulcher. 9. The Apostles were ignorant of the resurrection.

A The first day of the Sabbothes, commeth Marie Magdalene early, when it was yet darke, vnto
matt 27. the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from
Luk 24. 2 the graue.
Mark 16. 2 Then she runneth, and commeth to Simon Pe-
Iohn 13. ter, and to the other Disciple whom Iesus loued and saieth vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the graue, and we cannot tell where they haue laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 They ranne both together, and that other disciple did out runne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And when he had stouped downe, he sawe the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then

6 Then commeth Simon Peter following him, and went into the ſepulchre, and ſeeth the linnen clothes lie. Luk 14.

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it ſelfe. 23

8 Then went in alſo that other Diſciple which came firſt to the ſepulchre, & he ſaw and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that he ſhould riſe from death. Pſal. 16. Acts 2.b

10 Then the Diſciples went away againe vnto their owne houſe.

11 Mary ſtood without at the Sepulchre weeping: So as ſhee wept, ſhe bowed herſelfe into the ſepulchre. Luke 24.

12 And ſeeth two Angels clothed in white ſitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Jeſus was layd.

13 They ſay vnto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? She ſaith vnto them, For they haue taken away my Lord, and I wot not where they haue layd him.

14 When ſhee had thus ſaid, ſhee turned her ſelfe backe and ſaw Jeſus ſtanding, and knew not that it was Jeſus. ¶

15 Jeſus ſaith vnto her, Woman why weepeſt thou? Whom ſeekeſt thou? She ſuppoſing that he had bin the gardiner, ſaith vnto him, Sir, if thou haue borne him hence, tell me where thou haſt layd him, & I will fetch him.

16 Jeſus ſaith vnto her, Mary: She turned her ſelfe, and ſaid vnto him, Rabboni, which is to ſay, Maiſter.

17 Jeſus ſaith vnto her, Touch me not, for I am not yet aſcended to my father, but goe to my brethren and ſay vnto them, I aſcend vnto my father, and to your father, and to my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene commeth, bringing tidings to the diſciples that ſhe had ſeene the Lord, and that he had ſpoken ſuch things vnto her.

19 The ſame day at night, which was the firſt

day of the Sabbaths, when the doores were shut where the Disciples were assembled together for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus, & stood in the midst, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you. Luke 22.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed vnto them his hands and his side: Then were the Disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: As my father hath sent me, euen so send I you also.

22 And when he had said these words, he breathed on them, and saieth vnto them, Receiue ye the holy Ghost.

23 Whosoeuers sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them, and whosoeuers sinnes ye retaine, they are retained.

24 But Thomas one of the twelue, which is called Didimus, was not with them when Iesus came. Iohn 11.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord. But he said vnto them, Except I see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger in the print of the nailes, & thrust my hand into his side, I will in no wise beleeue.

26 And after eight dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: Then came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace vnto you.

27 After that saith he to Thomas, bring thy finger hither, and see my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse but beleeuing.

28 Thomas answered, and said vnto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou hast beleeued, blessed are they that haue not seene, and yet haue beleeued.

30 And many other things truly did Iesus before the eyes of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 These are written that ye might beleeue that Iesus

Jesus is Christ the sonne of God, and that in beleeuing ye might haue life through his name.

The xxi. Chapter.

19 Christ forewarneth Peter of his death and persecution.

AFterward did Jesus shewe himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and on this wise shewed he himselfe. 21

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didimus, and Nathanaell of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Iohn 1.

3 Simon Peter saieth vnto them, I goe a fishing. They say vnto him, Wee also goe with thee. They went their way, and entered into a ship immediatly, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: neuertheless, the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Jesus saith vnto them, Children, haue yee any meate? They answered him, No.

6 And he saieth vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the shippe, and yee shall find. They cast out therefore, and anon they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Then said the disciple whom Jesus loued, vnto Peter, it is the Lord: When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girte his coate vnto him (for hee was naked) and did cast himselfe into the sea. 23

8 The other disciples came in a little shippe (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundreth cubites) drawing the net with fishes.

9 As soone as they were come to land, they sawe hote coales, and fish laid there on, and bread.

10 Jesus saith vnto them, Bring of the fish which ye haue now caught. Luk 2.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drewe the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three, and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come, and dine. And none of the Disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, and giueth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus appeared to his Disciples, after that he was risen from death.

15 So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simō Peter, Simō Ioanna, louest thou me more then these? He saith vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He saith to him againe the second time, Simon Ioanna, louest thou me? He saith vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee, He saith vnto him Feede my sheepe.

Iohn 21. 17 He said vnto him the third time, Simon Ioanna, louest thou me? Peter was sorie, because he said vnto him the third time, louest thou mee? And he said vnto him Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I loue thee: Iesus saith vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

18 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, when thou wast Iohn 13. yonger, thou girdest thy selfe, & walkedst whether Acts 12. thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, & another shall gird thee, and carie thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake hee, signifying, by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith vnto him, Follow me.

20 Peter turning about seeth the disciple whom Iohn 13. Iesus loued, following, which also leaned on his and 19. breast at supper and said, Lord, which is he that betraieth thee?

21 When Peter therefore saw him, he saith vnto Iesus Lord, what shall he doe?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, If I will haue him to tarie till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou mee.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the bre-

brethren

brethren, that this disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not to him, He shall not die: but if I will that that he tarie till I come, what is that to thee?

24 The same disciple is he which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, & we know that his testimonie is true. Iohn 20.

25 There are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world could not conteine the bookes: that should be written. Amen.

*Here endeth the Gospell by Saint Iohn.*

# The Actes of the *Apostles.*

The first Chapter.

7 The words of Christ and his Angels, to the apostles. 9. His assention. 14. Wherein the Apostles are occupied, till the holy Ghost be sent. 26. And of the election of Matthias.

THe former booke haue I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to doe and teach,

2 Until the day in which hee was take vp after that he through the holy Ghost, had giuen commaundements vnto the Apostles whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also hee shewed himselfe aliue after his passion, and that by many tokens, appearing vnto them fourtie dayes, and speaking of the kingdome of God. Iohn 20. 2, & 21. c

Luk 24.g 4 And gathering them together, commanded them that they should not depart from Hierusalem but wayte for the promise of the father, whereof sayth he ye haue heard of me.

Iohn 4.d 5 For Iohn truly baptized with water, but yee
15.d.and shall be baptized with the holy Ghost after these few
16.b dayes.

Iohn 1.c 6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him saying Lord, wilt thou at this time restore againe the kingdome of Israell?

Matt.14. 7 And he sayd vnto them, it is not for you to know
25 the times or the seasons, which the father hath put in his owne power.

Luk 24.g 8 But ye shall receiue power after that the holy
Actes 2.a Ghost is come vpon you and ye shalbe witnesses vnto
Iohn 14. to me, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iurie, and in Samaria and euen vnto the worlds end.

Mark.16 9 And when hee had spoken these things, while
Luk 24.g they beheld, he was taken vp on high, and a cloud receiued him out of their sight.

Dan. 7.d 10 And while they looked vp stedfastly toward
Matt.24. heauen, as he went, behold two men stood by them
and 25. c in white apparell.

Mark 13. 11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand
Luke 19. ye gazing vp into heauen? This same Iesus which
and 21.a is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come euen
Apoc 1.b as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount that is called Oliuet which is from Hierusalem a Sabboth dayes iourney.

Matt. 10 13 And when they were come in, they went vp
Mark 3. into a parlour, where abode both Peter, and James,
Luk.6.c and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomewe, and Matthew, James the sonne Alphei, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas the brother of James.

¶ 14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the mid-

of

of the disciples, and said, (The number of names together, were about an hundred and twentie.

16 Ye men and brethren, this scripture must needs haue beene fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before of Iudas, which was guide to them that tooke Iesus: Mark. 15 Mark. 14 Luke 22. Matt. 10 Mark 1. c Luke 3. c

17 For hee was numbred with vs, and had obtei-ned fellowship in this ministerie.

18 And the same hath now purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie, and when he was hanged he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it is knowne vnto all the dwellers at Hierusalem, insomuch that the same fielde is called in their mother tongue Aceldema, that is to say, the fielde of bloud.

20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation bee desart, and no man bee dwelling therein, and his bishoprike let another take, Pſa. 69. Pſa. 109

21 Where one of these men which haue companied with vs all the time that the Lord Iesus went in and out among vs.

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto that same day that he was taken vp from vs, must one be ordeined to be a witnesse with vs of his resurrection,

23 And they appointed two, Ioseph which is called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And when they had prayed, they said, thou Lord which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen.

25 That he may take the roome of his ministerie and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that he might goe to his owne place.

26 And they gaue forth their lots, and the lot fell vpon Matthias, & hee was counted with the eleuen Apostles.

## The ii. Chapter.

1 The holy Ghost came vpon the Apostles in visible signes

42 The

42. The godly exercise of the faithfull.

A And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

Deut. 16 Leu. 23.c 2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen, as it had beene the comming of a mightie wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting,

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, Actes 4.f and 11.b like as they had been of fire, and it sat vpon each one of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, & began to speake with other tongues, as the spirite gaue them vtterance,

5 There were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, deuout men, out of euery nation of them that are vnder heauen.

6 When this was noysed abroad, the multitude came together, and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake in his owne language.

26 7 They wondred all, and marueiled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake of Galilee?

8 And how heare we euery man his owne tongue wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Iurie, and in Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia.

10 Phrygia, and Pamphilia, in Egypt and in the partes of Lybia, which is vnto Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Iewes and Proselytes.

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do heare them speake in our tongues, the wonderfull workes of God.

12 They were all amazed, and were in a doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Other mocking, said, these men are full of new wine.

C 14 But Peter standing forth with the eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iurie, and all ye that dwel at Hierusalem, be this knowne vnto you, and heare my wordes.

15 For these are not drunken as ye suppose, seeing it

it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Ioel.

16 And it shall be in the last dayes, (saith God) of my spirit I will powre out vppon all flesh: and your sonnes and your daughters shal prophecie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames:

18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaidens, I will powre out of my spirit in those dayes, & they shall prophecie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, bloud and fire, and the vapour of smoke.

20 The sunne shall be turned into darkenes, & the moone into bloud, before the great and notable day of the Lord come. Ioel 2. g Matt. 24. Luk. 23. f

21 And it shall come to passe, that whosoeuer shall call on the name of the Lord, shalbe saued. Rom. 10

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approued of God among you with miracles, wonders, and signes which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selues also know

23 Him after that ye had taken by wicked handes being deliuered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, haue ye crucified and slaine.

24 Whom God hath raised vp, hauing loosed the sorrowes of death, because it was impossible that he should be holden of it.

25 For Dauid speaketh of him, I sawe the Lorde alwaies set forth before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moued. Psa. 16

26 Therefore did my hart reioyce, and my tongue was glad: Moreouer also, My flesh shall rest in hope.

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed me the wayes of life: thou shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance.

29 Yee

2. Reg. 2. 29 Ye men and brethren, let me freely speake vnto you of the Patriarch Dauid: for he is both dead and buried and his sepulchre is with vs vntill this day.

33 Therefore being a Prophet and knowing that God had sworne with an oath to him, that he would raise vp Christ as concerning the flesh, of the fruit of his loynes, to sit on his seate,

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soule was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption,

Acts 1. 2 32 This Iesus hath God raysed vp, whereof we are witnesses.

33 Then being by the right hand of God exalted, and hauing receiued of the father the promise of the holy Ghost, hee hath shed forth this, which ye now see and heare.

Psal 110 matt 22 34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauens, but he sayth himselfe, The Lord sayd to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Vntill I make thy foes thy footstoole.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know for a surety that God hath made the same Iesus, whom ye haue crucified, both Lord and Christ,

37 Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and sayd vnto Peter, and to the other Apostles, Ye men and brethren, what shall we do?

38 Then Peter sayd vnto them, Repent ye and let Luke 3 b euery one of you bee baptized in the name of Iesus Christ, for the remission of sinnes, and ye shal receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For this promise was made vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are a farre off, euen as many as the Lord our God shall call.

45 And with many other wordes bare he witnesse and exhorted them, saying, Saue your selues from this vntoward generation.

41 Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized, and the same day there was added vnto them about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine

doctrine and fellowshyp, and in breaking of bread, & in prayers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule, & many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued were together, and had all things common.

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery man had neede.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meate together with gladnesse, of heart.

47 Praysing God, and having fauour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saued.

## The iii Chapter.

7 The halt is restored to his feete. 12. Peter preacheth vnto the people.

NOw Peter and John went vp together into the A
temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man that was lame from his mothers wombe was brought, whom they layd daily at the gate of the temple, which is called beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to goe into the temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes vpon him, with John sayd Looke on vs.

5 And he gaue heede vnto them, trusting to receiue something of them.

6 Then sayd Peter, Siluer and gold haue I none but such as I haue, giue I thee: in the name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hande, and lift him vp, and immediately his feete and ankle bones B
receiued strength. Matt 9. a

8 And he leaping vp, stood and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking & leaping, and praysing God.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praysing God.

10 And

10 And they knewe him that it was he which sate for the almes at the beautifull gate of the temple: and they wondred and were sore astonied at that which had happened vnto him.

11 And as the lame which was healed held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran together greatly amazed vnto them in the porch that is called Solomons.

12 And when Peter saw that, hee answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israell, why marvell ye at this
2.Reg 5.a or why looke ye so earnestly on vs, as though by our
Iohn 2.b owne power or godlinesse wee had made this man
Acts 5.c walke?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isahac, and of Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his sonne Iesus, whom ye betraied and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be loosed.

14 But yee denied the holy and iust, and desired a murderer to be giuen vnto you.

Matt. 27 15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath rai-
Mark 15 sed from the dead, of the which we are witnesses.
Luke 23.

16 And his name, through the faith in his name,
Matt. 27 hath made this man sound, whom ye see and know: the faith which is by him, hath giuen to this man health in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren I wote that through ignorance, ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

Iohn 1.8. 19 Repent ye therefore, and reuert, that your sinnes
Matt.4.c may be blotted out, when the time of refreshing shall come in the presence of the Lord.

20 And hee shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must receiue, vntil the time that all things be restored, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses truely said vnto the fathers, A pro-
phet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you of
your

your brethren, like vnto me, him shall ye heare in all things, whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you. Deut. 18 Acts. 7c

23 For the time will come, that euery soule which will not heare that same prophet, shall bee destroied from among the people.

24 All the prophets also from Samuel, and those that followed in order, as many as haue spoken, haue likewise told of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the couenant which God made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, Euen in thy seede shall all the kinreds in the earth be blessed. Gen. 22.

26 Vnto you first, God hauing raised vp his sonne Iesus, sent him to bleſſe you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

## The iiii. Chapter.

7 The Apostles are brought before the counsell. 32 The Church encreaseth in doctrine, and exercises of all godlinesse.

AND as they spake vnto the people, the priests and the ruler of the temple, and the Sadduces came vpon them,

2 Taking it greeuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in holde vntill the next day for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued: and the number of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 And it came to passe on the morrow, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes.

6 And Annas the cheife priest, and Caiaphas, and and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the high Priestes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what name haue yee done this? 25 Exod. 2c Matth. 2

8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, sayde vnto them

Actes 7 d them. Be rulers of the people and elders of Israell.
9 If wee this day be examined of the good deede done to the sicke man, by what meanes hee is made whole.
Matt. 1 c 10 Be it knowne vnto you all, and to all the peo-
Phil. 2 b ple of Israel that by the name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised againe from the dead euen by him doth this man stand here before you whole.
11 This is the stone which was set at nought by you builders, which is the head of the corner.
12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for among men vnder heauen, there is giuen none other name, in which we must be saued.
13 Now when they saw the boldnes of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstoode that they were vnlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled: and they knewe them that they had beene with Iesus.
14 And beholding the man also which was healed standing with them, they could not say against it.
15 But when they had commaunded them to goe aside out of the counsell, they counselled among themselues.
16 Saying, what shall we do to these men? for a manifest signe is done by them and is openly known to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and we cannot denie it.
17 But that it be noysed no further among the peo-
Actes 5. 28 ple, let vs threaten, and charge them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.
18 And they called them, and commaunded them, that in no wise they shoulde speake nor teach in the name of Iesus.
19 But Peter and Iohn answered, and said vnto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken vnto you more than to God, iudge yee.
20 For we cannot but speake that, which we haue seene and heard.
21 So when they had more sharply threatned them they let them go, finding nothing how to punish them

because

because of that which was done.

22 For the man was about fourty yeares olde, on whome this myracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let goe, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all that the high priests and elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voices with one accord, and said Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that therein is.

25 Which by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why doe the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The kinges of the earth stoode up, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy child Jesus whome thou hast annointed, both Herode and also Pontius Pilate with the Gentiles, and the people of Israell gathered themselues together.

28 For to doe whatsoeuer thy hand, and thy counsell determined to be done.

29 And nowe Lorde, behold their threatninges, and graunt unto thy servants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word.

30 So that thou stretch forth thine hand, that healing, and signes, & wonders be done by the name of thy holy child Jesus.

31 And assoone as they had prayed, the place moued, where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God boldly.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one soule: Neyther said any of them that ought of the thinges which hee possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was with them all.

34 Neyther was there any amongthem that lacked

for as many as were possessors of lands or houses: sold them, and brought the price of the thinges that were sold.

35 And laid it downe at the Apostles feete: And distribution was made vnto euery man according as he had neede.

36 And Joses which was also called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is to say, if ye interpret it, the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite: and of the Acts 4 d countrey of Cyprus.

37 Hauing land, sold it, and brought the money, and layd it downe at the Apostles feete.

## The v. Chapter.

12 Myracles are done by the Apostles. 34. The sentence of Gamaliel.

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Saphira his wife, sold a possession.

2 And kept awaye part of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and layde it downe at the Apostles feete.

3 But Peter sayd, Ananias, howe is it that Satan hath filled thine heart, to lye vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe awaye part of the price of the land?

4 Whyles it remained, was it not thine owne and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power: why hast thou conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lyed vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Ananias hearing these wordes, fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost: and great feare came on all them that heard these thinges.

6 And the young men rose and put him apart, and caryed him out, and buryed him.

26 7 And it came to passe, that as it were about the space of three houres after, his wife came in, not knowing that which was done.

8 Then Peter sayd vnto her, Tell me, sold yee not the land for so much? And she sayd, yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter sayd vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together to tempt the spirit of the Lorde? behold, the feete of them which haue buryed thy husband, are at the

the dooze, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she downe straight way at his feet, and yeelded vp the Ghost: and the yong men came in and found her dead, and carped her out, and buryed her by her husband. Matt 10

11 And great feare came vpon all the church and vpon as many as heard these thinges.

12 And by the handes of the Apostles were many signes and wonders shewed among the people. (And they were altogether with one accord in Salomons porch. 3 Reg. 8c Ioh 10c Actes 3 b

13 And of other durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: neuertheles the people magnified them

14 The number of them that beleeued in the Lord, both of men and women grew more and more.)

15 Insomuch that they brought the sick into the streetes, and laide them on beddes and couches, that at the least wap the shadow of Peter, when hee came by might shadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes: and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, and they were healed euery one.

17 Then the chiefe priest rose vp, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Saddu-ees) and were full of indignation.

18 And laid handes on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angell of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and said.

20 Goe, and stand and speake in the temple to the people, all the wordes of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught: but the chiefe priest came and they that were with him, and called a counsell together, and all the Elders of the children of Israell: and sent to the prison to fetch them, Actes 4 e Actes 22 and 16. f

22 But when the officers came, and founde them

not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, the prison truely found we shut with all diligence, and the keepers standing without before the doores, but when wee had opened, wee found no man within.

24 Then when the chiefe priest, and the captaine of the temple, & the high Priests heard these thinges, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and shewed them saying, Behold, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine of the temple with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, least they should haue been stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the counsell, and the chiefe priest asked them.

28 Saying, did not we straightly commande you
Actes 4 b that ye should not teach in this name, And behold, ye
Matt 17. haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans bloud vpon vs.

29 Then Peter and the other Apostles answered and sayde, Wee ought more to obey God than men.

30 The God of our fathers raisd vp Iesus, whome ye slew, and hanged on a tree.

Actes 4 d 31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand to be a Prince and a sauiour, for to giue repentance to Israell and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

32 And wee are recordes of these thinges which wee say, and so is also the holy Ghost, whome God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 When they heard that, they cloue asunder, and
Actes 22 sought meanes to slea them.

34 Then stoode there vp one in the counsell, Pha-
Ⓔ risee named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in reputation among all the people and commaunded to put the Apostles foorth a little space.

35 And said vnto them, Yee men of Israell take heede

heede to your selues, what ye entend to doe as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp one Theudas, reporting himselfe to be some great man, to whome a number of men about foure hundred, ioyned themselues: which was slaine, and they all which beleeued him were scattered abroad, and brought to naught. Luk 13.8

37 After this man rose vp one Iudas of Galilee in the dayes of the tribute, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all euen as many as obeyed him, were scattered abroad.

38 And nowe I say vnto you, refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this worke be of men, it will come to naught. Acts 4.d

39 But and if it be of God ye cannot destroy it lest happily ye be found to striue against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles and beaten them, they commaunded that they should not speake, in the name of Iesus and let them goe. Matt 5.b

41 And they departed from the face of the counsel, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name. f

42 And daily in the temple, and in euery house they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

## The vi Chapter

1 Seuen deacons are ordeyned in the Church. 11. Steuen is accused.

AND in these daies, when the number of the disciples grewe, there arose a grudge among the Greekes against the Hebrewes, because their widowes were despised in the daily ministery. a

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and said, It is not good that wee should leaue the word of God and serue tables. 1 Tim.3.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost and wisedome, to whome we may commit this businesse.

4 But we will giue our selues continually to
prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and
they chose Steuen, a man full of faith and of the holy
Apoc 2 b Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor,
and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicholas, a con-
uert of Antioch.

6 These they set before the Apostles: and when
they had prayed they laid their hands on them.

7 And the worde of God increased, and the num-
Num 27. ber of the disciples multiplyed in Hierusalem greatly
1 Tim 4. and a great company of the ligh priestes were obe-
2 Tim 1. dient to the faith,

25 8 And Steuen full of faith and power, did great
wonders and myracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue,
which is called the Synagogue of the Libertins, and
Cyrenians and of Alexandria, and of Cilicia, and Asia
disputing with Steuen.

10 And they could not resiste the wisedome, and
the spirite by which he spake.

11 Then they priuily prepared men, which sayde,
We haue heard him speake blasphemous wordes a-
gainst Moses, and against God.

12 And they moued the people, and the elders and
the scribes, and came vpon him, & caughte him, and
brought him to the counsell.

13 And brought foorth false witnesses, which said
This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous wordes
against this holy place, and the law.

14 For we heard him say, that this Iesus of Na-
zareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the or-
dinances which Moses gaue vs.

15 And all that sate in the counsell, looking stedfa-
stly on him, sawe his face as it had beene the face
of an Angell.

## The vii. Chapter.

2 Steuen maketh answere to his accusation 51. rebuketh the hardnecked Iewes 58. and is stoned to death.

THen said the chiefe Priestes Are these things so?

2 And

2 And hee ſaid, Yee men, brethren, and fathers hearken: The God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran.

4 And ſaid vnto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I ſhall ſhew thee.

4 Then came hee out of the land of the Chaldeans and dwelt in Charran: and from thence when his father was dead, hee brought him into this land where in ye now dwell. Gen 12.b

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it, no not the breadth of a foot: and promiſed that hee would giue it him to poſſeſſe, and to his ſeed after him, whē as yet he had no child. Gen 15.c

6 God verily ſpake on this wiſe, that his ſeede ſhould ſoiourne in a ſtrange land, and that they ſhould keepe it in bondage, and intreate them euil foure hundred yeeres. Exod 1.8 2.b

7 And the nation to whome they ſhalbe in bondage will I iudge, ſaid God: And after that ſhall they come forth and ſerue me in this place.

8 And he gaue them the couenant of circumciſion: and ſo Abraham begate Iſahac and circumciſed him the eight day, and Iſahac begate Iacob, and Iacob begate the twelue Patriarches.

9 And the patriarches moued with enuie, ſolde Ioſeph into Egypt: and God was with him. Gen 37.f Sap 10.8

10 And deliuered him out of all aduerſities, and gaue him fauour and wiſedome in the ſight of Pharao king of Egypt: and he made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and ouer all his houſholde.

11 But there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no ſuſtenance. Gen 41.c

12 But when Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt he ſent our fathers firſt, Gen 40.g

13 And at the ſecond time Ioſeph was knowne of his brethren, and Ioſephs kinred was made knowne vnto Pharao. Gen 45.d

14 Then sent Joseph, and caused his father Ja-
C cob to be brought, and all his kin, threescore and fif-
teene soules.

15 And Jacob descended into Egypte, and dyed
both he, and our fathers.

16 And were caried over into Sichem and layd in
Gen 46 a the Sepulchre that Abraham bought for money of
the sonnes of Emor the sonne of Sichem.

Gen 23 d 17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh,
which God had sworne to Abraham, the people
grew and multiplyed in Egypt.

18 Till another king arose, which knew not of
Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, & euill
intreated our fathers, and made them cast out their
yong children, that they should not remaine aliue.

20 The same time was Moses borne, and was
Exod 22, acceptable vnto God and nourished vp in his fathers
Hebr 11. house three moneths.

D 21 And when hee was cast out, Pharaos daughter
tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne
sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all manner of wis-
dome of the Egyptians, and was mightie both in
deedes and in wordes.

23 And when hee was full fourty yeeres old, it
came into his heart to visite his brethren the childr-
of Israell.

24 And when he saw one of them suffer wrong, he
defended him, and auenged his quarell that had the
harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian.

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vn-
derstood, how that God by his hand should deliuer
them: but they vnderstood not.

26 And the next day he shewed himselfe to them as
Gen 19 d they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe,
Exod 2 c saying, Sirs, yee are brethren, why doe ye wrong
one to another.

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust
him away saying, Who made thee a ruler, and a
iudge

iudge ouer vs.

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday. Matt 19.

29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes. Acts 3b

30 And when fourty yeeres were expired there appeared to him in the wildernesse of mount Sina, an angell of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bramble bush. Exod 2.c

31 When Moses saw it he wondred at the sight: and as hee drew nere to behold the voice of the Lord came vnto him. Exod 3.a Matt 22. Mark 12.

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isahac and the God of Iacob Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold Luk 20.c Ioila.4.b

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put of thy shoes from thy feete, for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt. and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: And now come, and I will sende thee into Egypt Exod 3.c

35 This Moses whom they forsook, saying Who made thee ruler, and a iudge? the same did God send to be a ruler deliuerer, by the handes of the angell which appeared vnto him in the bramble bush.

36 He brought them out after that hee had shewed wonders and signes in Egypt, and in the red sea and in the wildernesse fourty yeares. Deut 18.

37 This is that Moses which said vnto the children of Israell, A prophet shall the Lord God raise vp vnto you of your brethren like vnto me, him shall ye heare. Actes 3.d

38 This is he that was in the Church in the wildernes with the angell, which spake to him in the mount Sinai, & with our fathers: this man receiued the word of life to giue vnto vs. Exod 19 Galat 3.c

39 To whome our fathers would not obey but thrust him from them, & in their hearts turned backe againe

againe into Egypt.

Exod 32 40 Saying vnto Aaron, make vs gods to go before vs: for as for this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those daies and offered sacrifice vnto the idoll: and reioyced ouer the workes of their owne handes.

G 42 Then God turned himselfe away, and gaue them
Rom 1.c vp to worship the host of heauen, as it is written in
Amos 5.d the booke of the Prophets, O ye house of Israell.
Iere 7.c haue ye offered to me slaine beastes, and sacrifices by the space of fourtie yeares in the wildernesse.

43 Yea ye tooke vnto you the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your God Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babilon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnes in the wildernes as he had appointed speaking vnto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

45 Which also our fathers that came after brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God draue out before the face of our fathers, and vnto the daies of Dauid.

46 Which found fauour before God, and would faine haue found a tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 But Solomon built him an house.

48 Howbeit, hee that is highest of all, dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet,

49 Heauen is my seate, and earth is my foote stoole:
H What house will ye build for me, saith the Lord? Or which is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 Ye stiffnecked and of vncircumcised hearts and eares, ye doe alway resist the holy ghost: as your
Iohn 7.b fathers did, so do ye.
Actes 23

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? And they haue slaine them which shewed

before

before of the comming of that iuſt, of whom ye haue now beene the betrayers and murderers:

53 Which alſo haue receiued the law by the diſpoſition of Angels, and haue not kept it.

54 When they heard theſe things, their hearts claue aſunder, and they gnaſhed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghoſt, looked vp ſtedfaſtly into heauen, and ſaw the glory of God, and Ieſus ſtanding on the right hand of God.

56 And ſayd behold, I ſee the heauens open, and the ſonne of man ſtanding on the right hand of God. Pſal 58 a 3, Rc. 21.

57 Then they gaue a ſhout with a loud voice, and ſtopped their eares, & ran vpon him all at once.

58 And caſt him out of the citie, and ſtoned him: & the witneſſes laid down their clothes at a young mans feete, whoſe name was Saul.

59 And they ſtoned Steuen, calling on, and ſaying, Lord Ieſus receiue my ſpirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this ſinne to their charge. And when he had thus ſpoken, he fell aſleepe.

The viii. Chapter.

4 The Apoſtles are ſcattered abroad. 38. Philip baptizeth the Eunuch.

AND Saul was conſenting vnto his death: And at that time there was a great perſecution againſt the Church which was at Hieruſalem, and they were all ſcattered abroad throughout the regions of Iury and Samaria except the Apoſtles. Matt 10. Actes 11

2 And deuout men carried Steuen together to his buriall, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul he made hauock of the Church entring into euery houſe, and drawing out both men and women, did put them into priſon, Actes 9. a 1 Cor 15 Galat. 1 a

4 Therefore they that were ſcattered abroad went euery where preaching the word of God.

5 Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, & preached Chriſt vnto them.

6 And the people gaue eared vnto thoſe things which Philip

Philip spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the myracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with a loud voice
Matt. 10 came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and many that halted were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed witchcraft, bewitched the people of Samaria saying that he was a man that could do great things:

10 To whom they all gaue heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, this man is the great power of God.

11 And him they set much by, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeued Philips preaching of the kingdome of God, & of the name of Iesus Christ they were baptized both men and women

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also: & when he was baptized he continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the myracles and signes which were done.

14 When the Apostles which were in Hierusalem heard say that Samaria had receiued the worde of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was come downe vpon none of them: but they were baptized onely in the name of Christ Iesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the Apostles handes, the holy Ghost was giuen, he offered them money.

19 Saying, Giue mee also this power, that on whomsoeuer I put my hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter sayde vnto him, Thy money perish with

with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be obteined with money

21 Thou hast neither parte nor fellowshyp in this bu∣nesse: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Matt. 10. D.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.

23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bit∣ternesse, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray yee to the Lord for me, that none of these things which yee haue spoken, fall on me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned toward Hierusalem, and preached the Gospell in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the Angell of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe toward the south, vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem, vnto Gaza which is desart.

27 And he arose, and went on: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch and of great authoritie with Candace Queene of the Ethiopians, and had the rule of all her treasure, which came to Hierusalem for to worship.

28 And as he returned home againe, sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet. 3. Reg. 1

29 Then the spirit said vnto Philip, Come neare, and ioyne thy selfe to this charet. Iohn 12c

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the Prophet Esaias, and said, Vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, how can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come vp, and sit with him.

32 The tenor of the scripture which he read, was this, He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before the shearer, so opened he not his mouth. Esay 53.

33 In

33 In his humilitie his iudgement is exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water and the Eunuch said, See, here is water, what doth let me to be baptized?

37 Philip said vnto him, If thou beleevest with all thine heart, thou mayst. And he answered, and said, I beleeve that Iesus Christ is the sonne of God.

38 And he commaunded the charret to stand still, & they went downe both into the water, both Philip and also the Eunuch: and hee baptized him.

39 And assoone as they were come out of the water, the spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: and hee went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and he walked throughout the countrey, preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

## The ix. Chapter.

3 The conuersion of Paul. 34. Peter healeth Eneas. 40 And raiseth vp Tabitha.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings & slaughter against the Disciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Priest.

2 And desired of him letters to carry to Damascus to the Synagogues: that if he found any of this way whether they were men or women, hee might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 And when hee iourneied it came to passe that as he was come nigh to Damascus, suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And he fell to the earth and heard a voice saying vnto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, who art thou Lord? And the Lord said

said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kicke against the pricks. Luke 3.d Acts 2.f

6 And he both trembling and astonied said, Lord, what wilt thou have me doe? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and goe into the Citie, and it shalbe told thee what thou must doe.

7 The men also which iourneied with him, stood 26 amazed, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three daies without sight, and neither did eate nor drinke.

10 And there was a certaine Disciple at Damascus, named Ananias: and to him saide the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here Lord.

11 And the Lord said unto him. Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Judas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ananias comming unto him, and putting his hands on him, that he might receive his sight. Acts 9.e

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evill hee hath done to thy saints at Hierusalem. Actes 8. 1 Par. 15

14 And here he hath authoritie of the high priests to bind all that call on thy name.

15 The Lord said unto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessell unto mee, to beare my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israell.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, & put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul the Lord (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Acts 21. 1 Co. 12 Acts 22.

Ghost,

Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had beene scales, and he receiued sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had receiued meat, he was comforted. Then was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he is the sonne of God.

D 21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroied them which called on this name in Hierusalem, & came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound vnto the high priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, proouing by conferring one Scripture with another, that this is very Christ.

23 And after that many daies were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell together to kill him.

24 But their laying awaite was knowne of Saul: And they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

2.Cor.11 1.Re.12 25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and put him downe by the wall, and let him downe in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, hee assayed to couple himselfe to the disciples, but they were all afraide of him, and beleeued not that hee was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared to them how hee had seene the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Iesus.

E 28 And he was with them comming in, and going out at Hierusalem.

29 Speaking boldly in the name of the Lord Iesus, and he spake and disputed against the Greekes: but they went about to slea him.

30 Which

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. Acts 22.

31 Then had the Churches rest throughout all Iurie, & Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, & walked in the feare of the Lord, and multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all quarters, he came also to the Saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certaine man named Eneas, which had kept his bed eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 And Peter said vnto him, Eneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately. Matt. 9 b Mark 2 b Luke 5 a

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron sawe him, which turned to the Lord. Iohn 5 Acts 3. b

36 There were also at Ioppa a certaine woman a disciple, named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: the same was full of good workes, and almes deedes which shee did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that shee was sicke, and died, whom when they had washed, they laid her in an vpper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring him that hee would not be grieued to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose and came with them: when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber: & all the widdowes stood round about him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 And Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe, and prayd, and turned him to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise, and she opened her eies, and when she saw Peter, she sate vp.

41 And Peter gaue her the hand, and lift her vp: and when he had called the saints and widdowes, he deliuered her aliue. 3. Re. 17 4 Reg. 4. Luke 7.

42 And it was knowne throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he taried many dayes in Ioppa, with one Simon a Tanner.

## The x. Chapter.

11 The vision that Peter saw. 17 He was sent to Cornelius.

1 THere was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a captaine of the band, called the Italian band.

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his houshold, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God alway.

3 The same saw by a vision euidently, about the ninth houre of the day, an Angell of God comming in vnto him, and saying to him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looketh on him, he was afraid and said, What is it Lord? and he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 And now send men to Ioppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the Angell which spake vnto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his houshold seruants and a deuout souldier of them that waited on him.

8 And told them all matter, and sent them to Ioppa.

9 On the morrow as they went on their iourney, and drew nigh vnto the Citie, Peter went vnto the highest part of the house to pray, about the sixth houre.

10 And when hee was hungry, hee would haue eaten: But while they made ready, he fell into a trance.

11 And he seeth heauen opened, & a certaine vessel came downe vnto him, as it had bene a great sheete,

knit

mid at the foure corners, & let downe on the earth:
12 Wherein were all manner foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and such as creepe, and foules of the ayre.
13 And there came a voyce to him, Arise Peter, kill, and eate.
14 But Peter said, not so Lord: for I have never eaten any thing that is common or vncleane.
15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.
16 This was done thrise, and the vessell was receiued vp into heauen.
17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene should meane: behold the men which were come from Cornelius, had made inquirance for Simons house, and stood before the doore.
18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, where lodged there?
19 While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said vnto him, Behold three men seeke thee.
20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, doubting nothing, for I have sent them.
21 Then Peter went downe to the men which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?
22 And they said, Cornelius the captaine, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the people of the Iewes, was warned by an holy Angell to sende for thee into his house, and to heare words of thee.
23 Then called he them in, & lodgeth them: And on the morrow, Peter went away with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him. Gen. 18. Actes 18.
24 And the third day after entred they into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and speciall friends.
25 And it came to passe as Peter came in, Cornelius met

met him, and fell downe at his feet, & worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I my selfe also am a man.

Deu. 18. 27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know how that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to company or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed mee, that I should not call any man common or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without delay, assoone as I was sent for: I aske therefore for what intent ye haue sent for me?

30 And Cornelius said, Foure dayes agoe vntill this houre I was fasting, and at the ninth houre I prayed in my house, and behold a man stood before me in bright clothing.

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard & thine almes deeds are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner, by the sea side, who when hee commeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, & thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded vnto thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceiue that God hath no regard of persons.

F 35 But in euery nation, hee that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

2. Par. 9 c
Rom. 2 b
Ephe. 6 b
Matt. 4. b
36 Touching the word which God sent vnto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (he is Lord ouer all.)

37 Ye know how the word was published through all Iurie, beginning in Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

Esay 61.
Luke 4. c
38 How God annoin'ed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing

doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did in the land of the Iewes, & at Hierusalem, whom they slue, when they had hanged him on a tree.

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but vnto vs witnesses, chosen before of God, euen to vs which did eate and drinke with him after he rose from the dead. Luk. 23. d

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, & to testifie that it is he which was ordeined of God to be the iudge of quicke and dead. G Iohn 22. Matt. 28.

43 To him giue all the Prophets witnesse, that through his name whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes. Esay 53.

44 While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word, Actes 2.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbidde water, that these should not be baptized which haue receiued the holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to bee baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certaine dayes. Actes 8. f

## The xi. Chapter.

22 Barnabas and Paul preach at Antiochia. 28 Agabus preacheth dearth to come.

AND the Apostles and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the heathen had also receiued the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest into men vncircumcised, Deut 7. e

and didst eate with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order vnto them saying,

Acts 10. 5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certaine vessel descended, as it had beene a great sheete, let downe from heauen, by the foure corners, and it came euen vnto me,

Leuit. 11 Deut 14 6 Vpon the which when I had fastned mine eies I considered and saw fourefooted beasts of the earth and wild beastes, and such as creepe, and foules of the aire.

23 7 And I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, arise Peter, slea, and eate.

8 But I said, Not so Lord: for nothing common or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered mee againe from heauen, doe not thou make them common which God hath cleansed.

10 And this was done three times: and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men alreadie come vnto the house wher I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

Acts 10. 12 And the spirit said vnto me, that I should goe with them nothing doubting: Moreouer, these six brethren accompanied mee, and wee entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an Angell in his house, which stood and said vnto him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose syname is Peter.

14 He shall tell thee wordes, whereby both thou, & all thine house shall be saued.

Acts 2 a Iohn 1 d 15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, as it did on vs at the beginning.

Acts 1 a 16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, Iohn baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then, as God gaue them the like gift as he did vnto vs when we beleeued on the Lord

Iesus

Iesus Christ: what was I that I should haue with stood God?

18 When they heard these thinges, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

19 They also which were scattered abroad through the affliction that arose about Steuen walked through out vnto Phenice, and Cypres, and Antioch, preaching the word to no man, but vnto the Iewes only. Acts 8

20 And some of them were men of Cypres, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake vnto the Grekes, preached the Lord Iesus

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeued, and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of these thinges came vnto the eares of the Church which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that hee should go to Antioch.

23 Which when he came, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they should cleaue vnto the Lord. Acts 13

24 For hee was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost and of faith: And much people was added vnto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus for to seeke Saul.

26 And when hee had found him, hee brought him vnto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeare they had their conuersation with the Church there, and taught much people: insomuch that the disciples of Antioch were the first that were called Christians.

27 And in those dayes came Prophetes from Hierusalem to Antioch.

28 And there stoode vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should bee great dearth throughout all the world: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to

his abilitie, purposed to sende succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iurie.

30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders by the handes of Barnabas and Saul.

## The xii. Chapter.

1 Herod persecuteth the Christians. 24. The gospel flourisheth.

AT the same time Herod the king stretched forth his handes to vexe certaine of the Church

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword.

Matt 4.21

3 And because he saw it pleased the Iewes, hee proceeded further, and tooke Peter also, (Then were the dayes of sweet bread.)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison also, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intending, after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 And Peter was kept in prison, but prayer was made without ceasing of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him forth vnto the people, the same night Peter was sleeping betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaines, & the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

26 Actes 5 d

7 And behold, the Angell of the Lord was there present, and a light shined in the prison, and he smote Peter on the side, and stirred him vp, saying, Arise vp quickly. And his chaines fell off from his handes

8 And the Angell sayd vnto him: Girde thy selfe, and bind on thy sandales. And so he did. And he sayth vnto him; Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And Peter came out and followed him, and wist not that it was truth, which was done by the Angel, but he thought he had seene a vision.

Actes 5 d

10 When they were past the first, and the second watch, they came vnto the yron gate that leadeth vnto the Citie, which opened to them by the one accord: and they went out, and passed through one streete, & forth

forthwith the Angell departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himsel'e he said Nowe I knowe of a surete that the Lord hath sent his Angell, and hath delivered me out of the hande of Herod, and from all the waiting for of the people of the Iewes.

12 And as he considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of Iohn, whose sirname was Marke, where many were gathered together in prayer. Actes 4 b

13 As Peter knocked at the entry dooze, a damsel came forth to hearken, named Rhoda,

14 And when shee knew Peters voice, shee opened not the dooze for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the dooze. C

15 And they sayde vnto her Thou art mad. But she affirmed that it was euen so. Then sayd they, it is his Angell.

16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened the dooze, and saw him, they were astonied.

17 And when he had beckened vnto them with the hand, that they might hold their peace, he told them by what meanes the Lord had brought him out of the prison: And he sayd, Go shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren And he departed, & went into another place.

18 Now assoone as it was day, there was no little adoe among the souldiers what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herode had sought for him, & found him not, he examined the keepers, and commaunded them to be carried away, And he descended from Iury to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 And Herode was sore displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came all with one accord to him, and made intercession vnto Blastus the kings Chamberlaine, and desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

21 And vpon the day appointed, Herode arayed

him

him in royall apparell, and set him in his seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, It is the voice of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the Angell of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not God the honor: and he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the Ghost.

24 And the word of God grewe and multiplied.

35 And Barnabas and Saul returned to Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

The xiii. Chapter.

7 Of Sergius Paulus and Elymas the sorcerer. 26 The Iewes are reiected.

A There was also at the Church that was at Antioch certaine Prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, & Simon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene and Manaen, which had been nourished vp with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they let them goe.

4 And they after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

Act. 13. 5 And when they were at Salamine, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their minister.

6 And when they had gone through the Ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine Sorcerer, a false prophet, a Iew whose name was Bariesu.

7 Which was with the deputy of the countrey one 28 Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: the same, when he had called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstoode them, seeking to turne the deputy

deputy away from the faith. Exod. 7. b and 8. b

9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) being Actes 8. b
full of the holy Ghost set his eyes on him.

10 And said, O full of all subtilitie, and al mischeife
thou child of the deuill, thou enemie of all righteous-
nesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the wayes of the
Lord?

11 And now behold the hand of the Lord is vpon
thee, and thou shalt be blind not seeing the sunne for
a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist
and a darknesse, and he went about seeking them that
should lead him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputy, when hee sawe what was Iohn 4. d
done beleeued, and wondred at the doctrine of the
Lord.

13 Now when they that were with Paul were de- Actes 13.
parted from Paphos, they came to Pergain Pamphy-
lia: and Iohn when he departed from them, returned
to Hierusalem. ℭ

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came
to Antioch in Phisidia, & went into the Synagogue
on the Sabboth day, and sate downe.

15 And after the reading of the law and the Pro-
phets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them,
saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word to
exhort the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stoode vp, and when he had beckned Actes 12.
with the hand for silence, said, Men of Israell, and
ye that feare God, giue audience.

17 The God of this people of Israell, chose our Exo. 14.
fathers, and exalted the people, when they dwelt as
strangers in the lande of Egypt, and with an high
arme brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of fourtie yeeres suffered he Iosua 13
their manners in the wildernesse.

19 And when hee had destroyed seuen nations in
the land of Canaan, he deuided their land to them by
lot.

20 And afterward hee gaue vnto them Iudges a-
bout the space of foure hundred & fiftie yeeres, vntil

the time of Samuel the prophet.

1.Reg.8a 21 And afterwarde they desired a king, and God
1 Reg.10 gaue vnto them Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the
tribe of Beniamin, by the space of fourtie yeares.

22 And when he had remoued him, he set vp Da-
1.Reg.16 uid to be their king, of whom he reported saying, I
Psal.89c haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after
mine owne heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

Psal.132 23 Of this mans seede hath God, according to
1.Reg.7b his promise, brought forth to Israell the Sauiour
Mark 1a Iesus.
Luke 3.c
Iohn 1d 24 When Iohn had first preached before his com-
ming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of
Israel.

25 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, he
Mat 3.b sayd, whom thinke ye that I am? I am not he: but
behold, there commeth one after mee, whose shoes
of his feete, I am not worthy to loose.

Matt.10 29 Ye men and brethren, children of the genera-
tion of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth
God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

1.Cor 2b 27 For they that dwelt at Hierusalem, and their
rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voy-
ces of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabboth
day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 And though they found no cause of death in him
yet desired they Pilate that he should be slaine.

Mark.15 29 And when they had fulfilled all that were writ-
ten of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and
Actes 13a put him in a sepulchre.

30 But God raised him from the dead.

31 And he was seene many dayes of them which
came vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, which
are his witnesses vnto the people.

32 And wee declare vnto you glad tidinges, howe
Psal 2.a that the promise, which was made vnto the fathers.
Heb.1b 33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their chil-
dren, in that he hath raised vp Iesus againe, as it is
Esay 55. also written in the second Psalme, Thou art my Son
this day haue I begotten thee.

34 And as concerning that he raysed him vp from the dead, now no more to returne to corruption, he sayd on this wise, I will giue vnto you the holy things of Dauid, which are faithfull.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another place, Thou shalt not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

36 For Dauid after he had serued his time, by the will of God, fell on sleepe, and was laid vnto his fathers, and saw corruption.

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no cor- 2. Reg 2.
ruption. Luk 14.g

38 Be it knowne vnto you therefore, ye men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

39 And by him all that beleeue are iustified from all things, from which ye could not be iustified by the law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore least that fall on you, which G
is spoken of in the Prophets. Abac 1 a

41 Behold ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I doe a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye shall in no wise beleeue, though a man declare it to you plainely.

42 And when they were gone out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought that these wordes might bee preached to them the next Sabboth. Acts 18.

43 Now when the congregation was broken vp, many of the Iewes and deuout Proselites followed Paul and Barnabas, which speaking to them, exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabboth day came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the people, they were full of indignation, and spake against those things which were spoken of Paul, speaking against, and rayling.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, & sayde Matth 15.
It was necessary that the word of God should first Esai 9.b
haue beene spoken to you, but seeing ye put it from Luke 2.e
you

you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou be the saluation vnto the end of the world.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life beleeued.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Iewes moued the deuout and honest women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes.

51 But they shooke off the dust of their feet against them, and came to Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, & with the holy Ghost.

## The xiiii Chapter.

1 God giueth successe to his word. Paul is stoned.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and also of the Greekes beleeued.

2 But the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they there speaking boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimonie vnto the word of his grace, and granted signes & wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was deuided: & part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to doe them violence, and to stone them.

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region that lyeth

lyeth round about.

7 And there were they preaching the gospel.

8 And there sate a certaine man at Lystra weake in his feete, being a cripple from his mothers wombe and neuer had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake: which beholding him, and perceiuing that hee had faith to be whole,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand vpright on thy feete: And he start vp, and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voices, saying in the speach of Lycaonia. The gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men. Esay 55. Matt. 15 Luke 7.d

12 And they call Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker. Acts 18.

13 Then Jupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought oxen and garlands vnto the doore, and would haue done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas & Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in amonge the people crying: ℭ

15 And saying Sirs, why do ye these things? Wee also are mortall men like vnto you, and preach vnto you the Gospel, that ye should turne from these vanities vnto the liuing God which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that therein are. Acts 10 Apoc. 19 and 22. e Gen. 1 a Psa. 146

16 The which in times past, suffered all nations to walke in their owne wayes. Apoc 14

17 Neuertheless he left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he shewed his benefites from heauen, in giuing vs raine and fruitefull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse. Acts 17 Rom. 1 d

18 And with these sayinges scarse refrayned they the people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

19 Then thither came certaine Jewes from Antioch and Iconium, which when they had perswaded the people, and had stoned Paul, drew him out of the citie, supposing he had beene dead.

20 Howbeit when the disciples stood round about him, he rose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that citie, and had taught many, they returned againe to Lystra, and Iconium, and Antioch.

22 And strengthened the disciples soules, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders by election in euery Church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord on whom they beleeued.

24 And when they had gone throughout Pysidia they came to Pamphilia

25 And when they had spoken the word of God in Perga, they ascended into Attalia.

26 And thence departed by shippe to Antioch, from whence they were committed vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles,

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

## The xv. Chapter.

1 The decree of the Apostles concerning circumcision and other ceremonies of the Iewes. 35. Paul and Barnabas preach in Antioch. 37. Paul and Barnabas falling at strife, breake companie.

AND certaine men which came downe from Iurie, taught the brethren, and said Except yee be circumcised after the maner of Moses ye cannot be saued.

2 So when there was risen dissention and disputing, not a little vnto Paul and Barnabas against them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them should goe vp to Hierusalem, vnto

vnto the Apostles, and elders, about this question.

3 And after they were brought on their way by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersation of the Gentiles: and they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem they were receiued of the Church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all thinges that God had done with them.

5 Then arose vp certaine of the sect of the Pharisees, which did beleeue, saying that it was needfull to circumcise them, and to commaund to keepe the law of Moses.

6 And the Apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter. 25

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, Ye men and brethren yee know that a good while agoe, God did chuse among vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the worde of the Gospell and beleeue. Actes 15b Psal 7. c 1 Para 8. Iohn 1 3b

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnesse, and gaue vnto them the holy Ghost euen as he did vnto vs.

9 And put no difference betweene vs and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put on the disciples neckes the yoke, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare?

11 But we beleeue that through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, we shalbe saued euen as they.

12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and gaue audience to Barnabas and Paul, which told what signes and wonders God had shewed among the Gentiles by them. €

13 And when they held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon told how God at the beginning did visite, to receiue of the Gentiles a people in his name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets as it is written.

16 After this I will returne, and will build a
Amos 9b the tabernacle of Dauid which is fallen downe: and
that which is fallen in decay of it, wil I build againe
and I will set it vp.

17 That the residue of them might seeke after the
Lord, and all the Gentiles vpon whome my name is
called, saith the Lord, which doth all these thinges.

18 Knowne vnto God are all his workes from
the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not
them, which from among the Gentiles, are turned
to God.

Leuit 20 20 But that we write vnto them, that they abstaine
themselues from filthinesse of Idolles, and from for-
nication, and from strangled, and from bloud.

21 For Moses of old time, hath in euery citie
Gen. 9. 2 them that preach him the Synagogues when hee is
Leuite 7. read euery Sabboth day.

22 Then pleased the apostles and elders, with the
whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne
company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas, That
is, Judas whose surname was Barsabas, and Silas
which were chiefe men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them, after this maner,
Iohn 14c The Apostles, and elders, and brethren send greeting
vnto the brethren, which are of the Gentiles, in An-
tiochia, Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine
which departed from vs, haue troubled you with
words and combred your minds, saying Ye must be
circumcised, and keep the law, to whome we gaue no
such commandement

25 It seemed therefore to vs a good thing when
we were come together with one accord to send cho-
sen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and
Paul.

26 Men that haue ieoparded their liues for the
name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We haue sent therefore Judas and Silas
which shal also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay vpon you no greater burthen then these necessary things:

29 That is to say, that ye abstein from things offered to Idolles, and from bloud, and from strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your selues ye shall doe well. So fare ye well.

30 Now therefore when they were departed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they reioyced of the consolation:

32 And Judas and Silas, being Prophets also themselues, exhorted the brethren many wordes, and strengthened them.

33 And after they had tarryed there a space they were let goe in peace of the brethren, vnto the Apostles.

34 Not withstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch teaching and preaching the worde of the Lord, with many other also.

36 But after a certaine space, Paule said vnto Barnabas, let vs goe againe and visit our brethren in euery citie, where we haue vttered the word of the Lord, and know and see how they doe.

37 And Barnabas gaue the counsell to take with them John, whose surname was Marke.

38 But Paule would not take him vnto their companie, which departed from them from Phamphilia, and went not with them to the worke. Acte 13.

39 And the contention was so sharpe betweene them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed being committed of the brethren vnto the grace of God:

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, stablishing

shing the Churches.

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie, 7. The spirit calleth them from one countrey to another. 24. Lydia is converted.

THen came he to Derbe and to Lystra, and behold a certaine Disciple was there named Timotheus a womans sonne which was a Jewesse, and beleeued: but his father was a Greeke.

2 Which was well reported of the brethren that were at Listra and Iconium.

3 Paul would that he should goe forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Jewes which were in that quarters, for they knew all that his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went through the cities they deliuered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordined of the apostles & elders which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith and increased in number daily.

6 Nowe when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the
Rom 1.c holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia.

7 They comming to Mysia, sought to goe into Bethinia: but the spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing through Mysia, came downe
25 to Troada.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we prepared to goe into Macedonia, gathering by conference, that the Lord had called vs to preach the
Actes 28 Gospell vnto them:

11 Then we being carryed from Troada, came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis.

12 And from thence to Philippos, which is the chiefe city in the partes of Macedonia, and a free citie and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And

13 And on the day of the sabbothes, we went out of the citie, besides a riuer, where prayer was wont to be made: and we sate downe, and spake vnto the women that resorted thither.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia a seller of purple, of the city of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, gaue vs audience: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the thinges which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when shee was baptized, and her household she besought vs saying, If ye haue iudged mee to be faithfull to the Lord: come into my house, and abide there, And she constrayned vs.

16 And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certaine damesell possessed with a spirite of sooth saying, mette vs: which brought her masters much vantage with sooth saying.

17 The same followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruantes of the most high God which shewe vnto vs the way of saluation. Matt 16. Acts 19

18 And this did she many daies: But Paul not content, turned about, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 And when her masters saw that the hope of their gaines was gone, they caught Paul & Silas, & drewe them into the market place vnto the rulers.

20 And brought them tothe officers saying, These men being Iewes, doe exceedingly trouble our citie.

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receiue neither to obserue, seeing wee are Romanes. 1. Cor 8

22 And the people ran against them, and the officers rent their clothes, and commaunded to beate them with rods.

23 And when they hade laide many stripes vpon them, they cast them into prison commaunding the iayler of the prison to keepe them diligently.

24 Which when he had receiued such commaun-

dement, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feete fast in the stockes.

Actes 5.e and 12.b 25 And at midnight, Paul and Silas prayed and lauded God, and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and immediatly all the doores opened, and euery mans bandes were loosed.

27 When the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and saw the prison doores open, he drewe out his sworde, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing that the prisoners had beene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Do thy selfe no harme, for we are all here.

29 Then hee called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas.

Luke 3.a Actes 2.f 30 And brought them out and, sayd, Syrs what must I doe to be saued?

1 Ioha 5.b 31 And they said. Beleeue on the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued & thy household.

32 And they spake vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he tooke them the same houre of the night and washed their wondes, & was baptized himselfe, and all they of his household straight way.

Luk 19.g 34 And when he had brought them into his house he set meate before them, and ioyed that hee with all his household beleeued on God.

35 And when it was day the officers sent the sergeants, saying. Let those men goe.

36 And the keeper of the prison tolde this saying to Paul. The officers haue sent worde to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then sayd Paul vnto them, They haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, being Romans, and haue cast vs into prison, now doe they thrust vs out plaine lo? Nay verily: but let them come themselues and fetch vs out.

38 And the sergants told these wordes vnto the officers

officers: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie. Matt 8.6

40 And they went out of the prison: and entred into the house of Lydia, and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

## The xvii. Chapter.

1 Paul commeth to Thessalonica where the Iewes set the citie in an vprore.

NOw they made their iourney through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes. A

2 And Paul as his maner was, went in vnto them and three sabboth daies disputed with them out of the Scriptures.

3 Opening and alledging that Christ must needs haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and that this is Christ Iesus that I preach vnto you. Luk 24.8

4 And some of them beleeued, & ioyned with Paul and Silas, and of the deuoute Greekes a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few,

5 But the Iewes that beleeued not, mooued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine vagabondes & euill men and gathered a companie, and set all the citie on a roze: and made assault vnto the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people. Actes 18

6 And when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine of the brethren vnto the heads of the citie crying, These that haue troubled the world, are come hither also.

7 Whom Iason hath receiued priuily, and these all doe contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is another king one Iesus.

8 And they troubled the people and the officers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken sufficient suretie of Iason and of the other, they let them goe. 25

10 And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul

and Silas by night vnto Berea which when they were come thither, they entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were the noblest of birth among them of Thessalonica, which receiued the word with all readinesse of minde and searched the Scripture daily
Ioh. 5 b whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued also of honest women which were Greekes, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had
Actes 18 knowledge that the worde of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither, and mooued the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that guided Paul, brought him vnto Athens, and receiued acommaundement vnto Silas & Timotheus, for to come to him with speede, euen their wap.

16 While Paule waited for them at Athens, his spirit was moued in him, when he saw the citie giuen to worshiping of Idols.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market daily with them that cam vnto him by chance

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoikes, disputed with him, and some said What will this babler say? Other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of new gods: because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into the streete of Mars, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strang things to our eares, wee would know therefore what these things meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, had leasure to nothing else but either to tell

tell or to heare some new thing.)

22 Then Paul stoode in the middest of the streete of Mars, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceiue that in all thinges ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld the maner how ye worship your gods, I found an alter wherein was written, Vnto an vnknowne God. Whom therfore ignorantly worship, him shew I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, & all that are in it, seeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands: Gen 1.a Actes 14 Psal 45 a Apoc 14. Actes 7. f

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands as though he needed for anything, seeing he himselfe giueth life and breath to all euerie where. Esay 66. 4.Reg 8 a

26 And hath made of one bloud, all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed. and also the bonds of their habitation: 1.Pet 5 b Gen. 1. b

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if perhappes they might haue felt and found him: though he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue and moue, and haue our being, as certaine of your owne Poets haue said, for we are also his offspring.

29 For asmuch then as wee are the offspring of God, wee ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto gold, siluer, or stone, grauen by art and mans deuice:

30 And the time of this ignorance God winked at: but now bideth all men euery where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will iudge the world in righteousnes, by that man whom he hath appointed, & hath offered faith to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 And when they had heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked and other said, We will heare thee againe of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certaine men came vnto him, and beleeued: among the which was Dionys Areopagita: &

a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

## The xviii. Chapter.

3 Paul preacheth at Corinth 14. Of Apollos. 24 Aquila and Priscilla.

AFter these thinges, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth.

2 And founde a certayne Jewe named Aquila borne in Pontus, lately come from Italy with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius hath commanded all Jewes to depart from Rome) and hee came vnto them. Rom 16. 2. Tim 4.

3 And because he was of the same craft, hee abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tentmakers.)

4 And he disputed in the synagogue euery Sabboth, & exhorted the Jewes & the Greekes. Actes 17

5 And when Silas, and Timotheus were come from Macedonia Paul was constrained by the spirit to testifie to the Jewes, that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they sayd contrary, and blaspheme he shooke his raiment, and said vnto them. Your bloud be vpon your owne heades: from hence forth will I go blamelesse vnto the Gentiles. Matt 10. Mark 6d Actes 10

7 And he departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Justus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And one Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue beleeued on the Lorde with all his housholde: and many of the Corinthians hearing, beleeued and were baptized. Actes 18

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision: be not afraid, but: speake, and hold not thy peace.

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall inuade thee, to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

11 And he continued there a yeare & sixe monthes teaching the word of God among them.

12 And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia, the Jewes made insurrection with one accord against Paul

Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seat,

13 Saying, this fellow counselleth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul now was about to open his mouth, Gallio sayd vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O ye Iewes reason would that I should beare with you: &

15 But if it be a question of words & names or of your law, looke ye to it your selues: for I will be no iudge of such matters.

16 And hee draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then all the Greekes tooke Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and smote him before the iudgement seat, and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then tooke his leaue of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria. (Aquila & Priscilla accompanying him) And he shore his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he went to Ephesus, and left them there: but hee himselfe entered into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the Iewes.

20 When they desired him to tarie longer time with them, he consented not.

21 But bad them farewell, saying, I must needs D at this feast that commeth, be in Hierusalem, but I will returne againe vnto you if God will: and he sayled from Ephesus.

22 And when hee was come from Cesarea, and ascended vp, and saluted the Church, hee went to Antioch.

23 And when he had tarried there a while, he departed, & went ouer all the country of Galatia and Phrygia by order strengthening all the disciples.

24 And a certaine Iew named Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, & mighty in the scriptures.

25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord

Lord. and being feruent in the spirite, hee spake and taught diligently the thinges of the Lord, knowing onely the baptisme of Iohn.

26 And the same began to speake boldly in the synagogue: Whome when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to goe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the the disciples to receiue him: Which when hee was come, helped them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For he ouercame the Iewes mightely, and that openly, shewing by the scriptures that Iesus was that Christ.

## The xix. Chapter.

3 Of baptisme 6. Of the holy Ghost giuen by Paules hands
9. The Iewes blaspheme the doctrine of Paul

1 AND it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the vpper coastes and came to Ephesus, and found certaine disciples.

2 And said vnto them, Haue yee receiued the holy ghost since yee beleeued? And they said vnto him, We haue not heard whether there be any holy Ghost or no.

3 And he said vnto them Vnto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Vnto Iohns baptisme.

4 Then sayde Paul, Iohn verily baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people that they should beleeue on him which should come after him, that is one Christ Iesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his handes vpon them, the holy ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and they prophecied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 And hee went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading those things that appertain to the kingdome

dome of God.

9 But when diuerse waxed hard hearted and beleeued not, but spake euill of the way of the Lord, and that before the multitude, hee departed from them, & seperated the disciples, and he disputed daily in the schoole of one called Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeres, Mark 16. Actes 5.c so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Greekes.

11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the Matt 16. sicke, napkins and partlets and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes exor- Matt. 7.c cistes, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill spirits, the name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua, a ℭ Iewe, and chiefe of the priests, which did so.

15 And the euill spirite answered, & said, Iesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was ran on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowne to all the Iewes and Greeks also which dwelt at Ephesus, and feare came on them all, and the name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeued, came, and confessed, Mark 1.a and shewed their workes:

19 Many also of them which vsed curious crafts, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand peeces of siluer.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and preuailed.

21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirite, when he had passed ouer Macedonia, & Achaia

Achaia, to go to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue beene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So sent he vnto Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himselfe remained in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no little adoe about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius, a siluer smith, which made siluer shrines for Diana, ministred no small gaine vnto the craftesmen:

25 Whom he called together, with the workmen
Acts 16. of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we haue aduantage.

26 Moreouer, ye see and heare, that not alone at
Psa. 115. Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded & turned away much people, saying that they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this our craft commeth into perill to be set at naught: but also that the Temple of the great Goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were
E full of wrath and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And all the citie was on a roare, and they rushed into the common hall with one assent, & caught Gaius, and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions.

30 When Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 Certaine of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friendes, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not presse into the common hall.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: and the assembly was all out of quiet, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And certaine of the people drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes thrusting him forwards

And

And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would Acts 19
haue giuen the people an answere.

34 But when they knew that he was a Iew, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the towne Clarke had pacified the people, he sayd, Yee men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not how that the Citie of the Ephesians is the temple keeper of the great Goddesse Diana, and of the image which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftes men which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies, let them accuse one another.

39 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shalbe determined in a lawfull assembly.

40 For we are in iespardy to bee accused of this dayes vprore, for as much as there is no cause whereby we may giue a reckoning of this cõcourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assembly depart.

## The xx. Chapter.

1 Paul goeth into Macedonia and Grecia. 7. Hee celebrateth the Lords supper and preacheth.

AFter the vprore was ceased, Paul called the disciples, and tooke his leaue of them, and departed for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when hee had gone ouer those partes, and had giuen them a long exhortation, hee came into Greece.

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Iewes layd waite for him, as he went about to saile into

into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and out of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

Actes 21 5 These going before, taried for vs at Troas:

2. Tim. 4 6 And we sayled away from Philippos, after the dayes of sweet bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where he abode seuen dayes.

20 7 And vpon one of the Sabboth dayes, when the disciples came together for to breake bread, Paul reasoned with them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued their talke vntill midnight.

8 And there were many lights in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutichus being fallen into a deepe sleepe, as Paul was long reasoning, he was therof ouercome with sleepe, and fell downe from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

3. Reg. 7. 10 But when Paul went downe, hee fell on him,
4. Reg. 4. and imbraced him, and said, Make nothing a doe:
Luke 7. c for his life is in him.

Actes 9, g 11 When he therefore was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, & talked a long while, euen til the morning, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man aliue, and were not a little comforted.

13 And wee went afore to ship, and sayled vnto Assos, there to receiue Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himselfe to goe afoote.

14 And when he was come to vs to Assos, wee tooke him in, and came to Mitilene.

15 And we sayled thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and taried at Trogillium: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to saile ouer by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for

by he hasted, if it were possible for him to be at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost,

17 And from Miletum he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 Which when they were come to him, hee said vnto them, ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I haue been with you at all seasons.

19 Seruing the Lord with al humblenes of mind, & with many teares, and temptations which came vnto me by the lyings awaite of the Iewes:

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you but haue shewed you, & haue taught you openly, and throughout euery house,

21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and also to the Greekes, the repentance that is toward God, and the faith which is toward our Lord Iesus Christ. Luke 24.c

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shall come vnto me:

23 But that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying that bonds and troubles abide me,

24 But none of these thinges moue me, neyther count I my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I might fulfill my course with ioy, and the ministery which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus to testifie the Gospell of the grace of God. 2. Tim. 4.

25 And now behold, I am sure that henceforth ye all among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the bloud of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed all the counsell of God,

28 Take heed therefore vnto your selues, & to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy Ghost hath you ouerseers, to rule the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his owne bloud. c

29 For I know this, that after my departing, shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing

the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men arise, speaking peruerse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch and remember that by the space of three yeeres I ceased not to warne euery one night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren I commend you to God, & to the word of his grace, which is able to build further, and to giue you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

1.Co. 11 Gen. 3 c

33 I haue desired no mans siluer, or golde, or rayment.

2.Cor. 9.

34 Yea ye your selues know, that these hands haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring you ought to helpe the weake & to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus, (how that he sayd) It is more blessed to giue, then to receiue.

1.Thes. 3

36 And when hee had thus spoken, hee kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

Gen. 21.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kissed him,

38 Sorowing most of all for the wordes which he spake, that they should see his face no more: And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

## The xxi. Chapter.

1 Pauls iourney by ship. 8. Of Philip the Euangelist. 10. And Agabus the prophet.

AND when it came to passe that wee had launched forth & were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos the day following vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And when wee had found a shippe sayling, vnto Phenice, we went aboord, and set forth.

3 Now when Cyprus began to appeare vnto vs, we left it on the left hand, and sailed vnto Syria, & came vnto Tyre: for there the ship vnloded the burden.

Acts 20.

4 And when wee had found disciples, wee tarried there

there seuen daies who said to Paul through the spirite, that he should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when the daies were ended, we departed and went our way, and they al brought vs on our way, with wiues and children, til we were come out of the ctie: and we kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed. Acts 20.

6 And when wee had taken our leaue one of another, we tooke ship, and they returned home againe.

7 When we had full ended the course from Tyre, we went downe to Ptolomais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day. 23

8 And the next day, we that were of Paules company, departed and came vnto Cesarea, and we entred into the house of Philip the Euangelist (which was one of the seuen,) and abode with him. Acts 6.d and 8.a

9 And the same man had foure daughters, virgins, which did Prophecy. Ioel 2.g

10 And as we taried there a good many of dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iury named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs he tooke Paules girdle, and bound his owne hands and feet, and said. Thus saith the holy Ghost: so shall the Iewes at Hierusalem bind the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him in the hands of the Gentiles. Acts 9.e 2.Co. 12.

12 And when we heard these things, both we, and other which were of the same place, besought him that he would not go vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What do yee weeping and paining mine heart? For I am readie not to bee bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the name of the Lord Iesus.

14 And when wee could not turne his minde, wee ceased, saying, The will of the Lorde bee fulfilled. ℭ Matt. 7.d

15 And after those dayes wee tooke vp our burdens, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also certaine of the disciple of Cesarea, & brought with them one Manason of Cyprus, an old Disciple, with whom wee should Acts 9.e

lodge,

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And on the morow Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and all the elders came together.

19 And when he had saluted them, he tolde by order all thinges that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said vnto him, thou seest brother, how many thousand Iewes there are which beleeue and they are all earnest followers of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walke after the customes.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they shall heare that thou art come. Num. 6.

23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: we haue foure men which haue a vow on them,

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, & bestow coste on them, that they may shaue their heades: and all shall know that those thinges which they haue heard concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the law. Acts 14.

25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeue we haue written and concluded, that they obserue no such thing, saue onely that they keepe themselues from things offered to Idols, and from bloud, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day purifying himselfe with them, entred into the temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntill that an offering should be offered for euery one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, mooued the people, and laid hands

on

on him.

28 Crying, men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and the law, and this place: hee hath also brought Greekes into the temple, & polluted this holy place. &

29 (For they had seene before with him in the citie Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple. Acts 20. 2. Tim. 4.

30 And all the citie was moued, and the people swarmed together, and they tooke Paul, and drewe him out of the Temple: and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the high Captaine of the souldiers, that that all Hierusalem was in an vproare.

32 Which immediately tooke souldiers, and vnder captaines, and ran downe vnto them: and when they saw the chiefe captaine and the souldiers, they left smiting of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe captaine came neere and tooke him, and commaunded him to be bound with two chaines, and demaunded who he was and what hee had done.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the people: and when he could not know the certaintie for the rage, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came vpon the staires, it was so that he was borne of the souldiers for the violence of the people. &

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying away with him.

37 And when Paul began to be carried into the castle, he said vnto the high captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 Art not thou that Egyptian, which before these daies madest an vproare, & leddest out into the wildernesse some thousand men that were murderers? Acts 9. 6 and 22. 8

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Iewe of Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no vile citie:

Acts 12.f and I beseech thee suffer mee to speake vnto the people.

40 And when hee had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake vnto thē in the Hebrue tōgue, saying.

## The xxii. Chapter.

1 Paul rendreth an accompt of his life and doctrine. 25. He escapeth the whip, by reason he was a citizen of Rome.

MEn, brethren and fathers, heare ye mine answere which I make vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that hee spake in the Hebrue tongue to them, they kept the more silence) and he saith,

Acts 9. b and 21. g Acts 5. f 3 I am verily a man which am a Iewe, borne in Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, & yet brought vp in this citie at the feet of Gamaliel, & taught according to the perfect manner of the lawe of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this same day.

Acts 8. c and 26. a 1. Co. 15. Gal. 1. b 4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death binding and deliuering into prison both men and women.

5 As also the chiefe Priest doeth beare mee witnesse, & all the estate of the Elders, of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my iourney, & was come nigh vnto Damascus, about noone, sodainly there shone from heauen a great light round about me:

Acts 9. a 7 And I fell vnto the earth, & heard a voice saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And hee said vnto me, I am Iesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with mee, sawe verily the light, and were afrayd: but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And

10 And I said, what shall I doe Lord? And the Lord said vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I saw nothing for the brightnesse of the light being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a deuout man as pertaining to the law, hauing a good report of all the Iewes which there dwelt. Actes 9.c

13 Came vnto me, and stoode, and said vnto mee, Brother Saul receiue thy sight. And the same houre I looked vpon him.

14 And he said, The God of our Fathers hath ordained thee before, that thou shouldest know his will and see that iust one, & shouldest heare the voice of his mouth. C

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse vnto all men of those things which thou hast seene and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? Arise, and bee baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, in calling on the name of the Lord. Rom. 13.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the temple, I was in a trance.

18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make hast and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnesse concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I prisoned, and beate in euery synagogue them that beleeued on thee.

20 And when the bloud of thy witnes Steuen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting vnto his death, & kept the raiment of them that slue him. Actes 7. a

21 And he said vnto mee, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentils. D

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, and then lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth, for it is not reason that he should liue. Acts 22. Gal. 1.d

23 And as they cried and cast of their clothes and threw dust unto the aire.

24 The chiefe captaine commaunded him to be brought in to the castle, and badde that he should be scourged, and examined: that he might know wherefore they cried so on him.

25 And as they bound him with thonges, Paul said vnto the Centurion that stoode by: Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and vncondemned?

26 When the Centurion heard that, he went and told the chiefe captaine saying, Take heed what thou doest: for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captain came, & said vnto him, Tell me art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine answered with a great summe obteined I this freedome. And Paul said, I was free borne.

29 Then straight way departed from him they which should haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afrayd, after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow because he would haue known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, Acts 23. he loosed him from his bands, & commaunded the high priests, and all their counsell to come together, & brought Paul forth, and set him before them.

## The xxiii. Chapter.

1 Paul commeth before the counsell. 2 Ananias causeth him to be striken.

AND Paul earnestly beholding the counsell said, Men and brethren, I haue liued in all good conscience before God vntill this day.

Acts 24. 2 And the high Priest Ananias commaunded them that stoode by, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul vnto him, God shall smite thee thou painted wall: for sittest thou and iudgest mee after the law, and commaundest mee to be smitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that stoode by, said, reuilest thou Gods high

high priest?

5 Then sayd Paul, I wist not brethren, that hee was the high priest: For it is written, Thou shalt not curse the ruler of thy people. Deut. 17

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Sadduces, and the other Pharisees, hee cryed out in the counsell, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the sonne of a Pharisee: of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am iudged, 23

7 And when hee had so sayd, there arose a debate betweene the Pharisees and the Sadduces, and the multitude was deuided.

8 For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, nor angell, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confesse both. matt 22. Mark 12. Luk. 20.

9 And there arose a great cry. And when the scribes which were of the Pharisees part arose, they stroue saying: Wee find no euill in this man: but if a spirit or an angell hath spoken to him, let vs not striue against God.

10 And when there arose a great debate, the cheife Captaine fearing least Paul should haue beene pieckt asunder of them, commanded the souldiers to goe downe and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following the Lord stood by him, and sayd, Be of good cheare Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome. Acts 16

12 And when it was day, certaine of the Iewes gathered themselues together, and made a vowe, saying that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul. Acts. 27

13 And they were moe then fortie men which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the cheife Priestes and Elders, and sayd, Wee haue bound our selues with a vowe, that we will eate nothing vntill we haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore giue ye knowledge to the cheife captaine

captaine, and to the counsell, that hee bring him forth vnto you to morrow, as though ye would know some thing more perfectly of him: and we, or euer he come neare, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying awaite, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the vnder captaines vnto him, and said, Bring this young man vnto the high captaine: for hee hath a certaine thing to shewe him.

18 And he tooke him, and brought him to the high captaine and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bring this young man vnto thee, which hath a certaine matter to shew thee.

19 Then the high captaine tooke him by the hand, and went with him out of the way, and asked him, What is it that thou hast to tell me.

20 And he said, The Iewes are determined to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morrow into the counsell, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But follow thou not their mindes: for there lie in waite for him of them mo then forty men, which haue bound themselues with a vow, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and looke for a promise from thee.

22 The chiefe captaine then let young man depart and charged him, See thou tell it to no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And hee called vnto him two vnder Captaines, saying, Make readie two hundred souldiers to goe to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and speare men two hundred, at the third houre of the night.

24 And deliuer them beastes, that they may set Paul on: and bring him safe vnto Felix the high deputy.

Acts 20.f

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner.

26 Claudius

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most mightie ruler Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue beene killed of them: Then came I with an armie, and rescued him, and perceiued that hee was a Romane:

28 And when I would haue knowne the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their counsell. Actes 22

29 Whom I perceiued to bee accused of questions of their law: but hauing nothing laide to his charge worthy of death or bonds. Actes 23

30 And when it was shewed mee howe that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I sent him straightway to thee, and gaue commandement to his accusers, that they things which they haue against him, they should tell before thee. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow, they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned vnto the castle.

33 Which when they came to Cesarea, and deliuered the Epistle to the deputie, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the deputie had read the letter, he asked of what prouince he was. And when hee vnderstood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, said he, when thine accusers are come also. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall. Deut. 17

The xxiiii Chapter.

*Paul being accused: answereth for his life and doctrine*

AND after fiue dayes, Ananias the high priest descended, with the elders, and with a certaine Oratour, named Tertullus, which appeared before the deputie against Paul.

2 And when Paul was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, seeing that we haue obtai-

ned

ned great quietnes by the meanes of thee, & that ma-
ny good thinges are done vnto this nation through
thy prouidence.

3 That allow we euer, and in all places, most no-
ble Felix, with all thanks.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not tedious vnto
thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy
curtesie a few wordes,

5 For we haue found this man a pestilent fellow
and a mouer of debate vnto all the Iewes in the
whole worlde, and a maintainer of the sect of the Na-
zarites.

6 Which also hath gone about to pollute the tem-
ple: whom we tooke, and would haue iudged accor-
Act. 21 ding to our law,
28

7 But the high captaine Lysias came vpon vs, &
with greate violence tooke him away out of our
hands.

8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee:
of whom thou mayest, if thou wilt enquire know the
certainty of all these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, saying, that
these thinges were so.

10 Then Paul, after the deputy himselfe had bec-
kened vnto him, that he should speake, answered, with
a more quiet mind doe I answere for my selfe, for-
asmuch as I vnderstand that thou hast beene of many
yeares a iudge vnto this nation.

11 Because that thou mayest know, that there are
yet but twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusalem
for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple dispu-
ting with any man, neither raising vp the people, nei-
ther in the Synagogues, nor in the Citie.

13 Neyther can they proue the thinges whereof
they accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the
way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of
my fathers, beleeuing all thinges which are written
in the law, and the prophets.

15 And

15 And haue hope towards God, that the reſur-
rection of the dead, which they themſelues looke for
alſo, ſhall be both of the iuſt and vniuſt.
16 And herein ſtudy I to haue alwaye a cleare con-
ſcience toward God, and toward man.
17 Now after many yeares I came, and brought
almes to my nation, and offrings. Acts 23
18 In the which they found me purified in the tem-
ple, neyther with multitude, nor yet with vnquiet-
neſſe.
19 Howbeit there were certaine Iewes out of A-
ſia.
20 Which ought to be here preſent before thee, and
accuſe me, if they had ought againſt me.
21 Or elſe let the ſame here ſay, if they haue found
any euill doing in me, while I ſtood here in the coun-
ſaile.
22 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cryed
ſtanding among them, That of the reſurrection from
the dead am I iudged of you this day.
23 And when Felix heard theſe things, he deferred Actes 23
them for he knew very well of that way, and ſayde,
When Lyſias the captaine is come down, I will know
the vttermoſt of your matter.
24 And he commaunded an vnder captaine to keep Iere. 32.
Paul, and to let him haue reſt, and that he ſhould for- Actes 28
bid none of his acquaintance to miniſter vnto him, or
to come vnto him.
25 And after certaine dayes, when Felix came with
his wife Druſilla, which was a Ieweſſe, hee called
forth Paul, & heard him of the faith which is toward
Chriſt.
26 And as he reaſoned of righteouſnes, temperance
and iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and anſwe-
red, Goe thy way for this time, when I haue a con-
uenient ſeaſon, I will ſend for thee.
27 Hee hoped alſo that money ſhould haue beene
giuen him of Paul, that he might looſe him: where-
fore he ſent for him the oftener, and communed with
him.

28 But after two yeers, Porcius Festus came in
Actes 25 to Felixroome. and Felix willing to shewthe Jewes a fauour, left Paul bound.

## The xxv. Chapter.

1 The Iewes accuse Paul before Festus. 8. Hee answereth for himselfe.

NOw when Festus was come into the prouince, after three dayes hee ascended from Cesarea to Hierusalem.

2 Then enfourmed him the high priest, and the cheife of the Iewes, against Paul, and they besought him.

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem laying waite in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart thither.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, come downe with vs, and accuse him if there be any fault in this man.

6 And when he had taried among them more then ten dayes, he went downe vnto Cesarea, and the next day sate downe in the iudgement seate, and commanded Paul to be brought.

26

7 Who being come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layde many and greeuous complaintes against Paul, which they could not proue.

8 While he answered for himselfe, that neither against the law of the Iewes, neyther against the temple, nor yet against Cesar haue I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to do the Iewes a pleasure, answered Paul and sayd, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there bee iudged of these things before me?

10 Then sayd Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to bee iudged, to the Iewes haue I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For

11 For if I doe any wrong, or haue committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse mee, no man may deliuer me vnto them, I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then spake Festus with the counsaile, and answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe:

13 And after certaine dayes, king Agrippa, and Bernice, came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.

14 And when they had beene there a good season, Festus rehearsed Pauls cause vnto the king, saying, There is a certaine man left in bonds of Felix.

15 About whom, when I came to Hierusalem, the high priests and elders of the Iewes enformed mee and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the maner of the Romanes, for fauour to deliuer any man that hee should perish, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers face to face, and haue licence to answere for himselfe, concerning the crime layd against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay, on the morrowe I sate on the iudgement seate, and commaunded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed Actes 23

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, & of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because I doubted of such maner of questions, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be kept vnto the knowledge of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come

and

and Bernice, with great pomp, and were entred into the counsaile house, with the cheife captaines and cheife men of the citie, at Festus commandement was Paul brought forth.

24 And Festus sayde, King Agrippa and all men, which are here present with vs, ye see this man about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue intreated mee, both at Hierusalem, and also heere, crying that hee ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet found I nothing worthy of death that hee committed: Neuertheles, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him:

26 Of whome I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: Wherefore I haue brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable for to sende a prisoner, and not to shew the causes which are layd against him.

## The xxvi. Chapter.

1 King Agrippa heareth Paul. 25. Paules modest answere against the slander of Festus.

THen Agrippa sayd vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happy king Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee, of al the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes.

3 Namely, because thou art expert in all customes and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee to heare mee patiently.

4 My life that I haue led of a child, which was at the first among mine own nation at Hierusalē, know all the Iewes.

5 Which knew mee from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I liued a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am iudged for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers.

7 Vnto

7 Vnto which promise our twelue tribes instantly
seruing God, day and night, hope to come? For
which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of
the Iewes.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible vn-
to you, that God raiseth the dead?

9 I also verily thought in my selfe, that I ought
to doe many contrarie thinges, cleane against the
name of Iesus of Nazareth.

10 Which thing I also did in Hierusalem, & many
of the saints did I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued
authority of the high Priests, and when they were
put to death, I gaue the sentence.

11 And I punished them oft in euery Synagogue
and compelled them to blaspheme, and was yet more
mad vpon them, & persecuted them euen vnto strange
cities.

Acts 22
1. Cor 15
Galat 1 c

12 About which thinges as I went to Damas-
cus, with authority and commission of the high
Priests.

13 Euen at midday, O king, I saw in the way
a light from heauen, about the brightnes of the
Sunne, shine round about mee, and them which iour-
neyed with me.

14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I
heard a voice speaking vnto me in the Hebrew tongue
and saying, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou mee?
It is hard for thee to kicke against the pricks.

Acts 22
and 22. c

15 And I said, who art thou Lord? And he said,
I am Iesus whome thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stand vpon thy feet, for I haue
appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a
minister and a witnes, both of those things which
thou hast seene, and of those things in the which I
will appeare vnto thee.

17 Deliuering thee from the people, and from
the Gentiles, vnto whome nowe I sende thee,

18 To open their eyes, that they may be turned
from darkenesse to light, & from the power of Satan
vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes

& inheritance among thē which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereforе, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision.

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and Hierusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iurie and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turne to God, and doe such workes as be come them that repent.

21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Seeing therefore that I haue obteined help of God I continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other thing then those which the prophets & Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto the people, & to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himselfe, Festus said with a loude voyce, Paul thou art beside thy selfe much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But hee sayde, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speake foorth the wordes of truth and soberneſſe

26 For the king knoweth of these thinges before whome also I speake freely, neyther beleeue I, that any of these thinges are hidden from him, for this thing was done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa beleeuest thou the prophets? I wote well that thou beleeuest.

28 Then agrippa sayd vnto Paul Somewhat thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God that not only thou, but all they that heare mee to day, were both some what, and also in a great deale such as I am except these bonds.

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the king rose vp, and the deputie, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone aparte, they talked

betweene

betweene themselues, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then sayde Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue beene let loose, if hee had not appealed vnto Cesar.

## The xvii. Chapter.

1 Paul shippeth toward Rome. 3. Iulius the captaine intreateth him courteously.

AND when it was concluded that we should saile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul and certaine other prisoners vnto one named Julius an vnder Captaine of Augustus band.

2 And we entred into a ship of Adramitium, and loosed from land, appointed to saile by the coasts of Asia. one Aristarchus out of Macedonia. of the countrey of Thessalonica, tarrying still with vs.

3 And the next day we came to Sidon: And Julius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him liberty to goe vnto his friends, and to refresh himselfe.

4 And when wee had launched from thence, wee sailed hard by Cyprus, because the windes were contrary.

5 And when he had sayled ouer the sea of Cilicia and Pamphilia, we came to Myra, a citie which is in Lisia.

6 And there the vnder captaine found a ship of Alexandria, saying into Italie and he put vs therein.

7 And when he had sayled slowly many daies and scarce were come ouer against Gnidum, because the wind with stood vs, wee sailed hardby Candie, ouer against Salmone.

8 And with much worke sayled beyond it: and came vnto a place which is called the Fayre hauens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasea.

When much time was spent, & when sayling was now icopardous, because also that the feast was now already past, Paul put them in remembrance.

10 And sayd vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this voyage will be with hurt & much dammage, not of the lading of the ship onely, but also of our liues

11 Neuertheleſſe, the vnder captaine beleeued the gouernour and the maiſter of the ſhip, more then thoſe things which were ſpoken of Paul.

12 And becauſe the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counſell to depart thence, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, and there to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lyeth towarde the Southweſt and Northweſt wind.

13 And when the South wind blew ſoftly, they ſuppoſing that they had obteined their purpoſe, looſed vnto Aſſon and ſayled paſt Candie.

14 But not long after, there aroſe againſt their purpoſe a ſtraw of wind out of the Northeaſt, which is called Euroclidon.

15 And when the ſhip was caught, and could not reſiſt the wind wee let her goe, and were driuen with the weather.

16 But wee were carryed into an Ile, which is called Clauda, and had much worke to come by a boate.

17 Which they tooke vp and vſed helpe, and made faſt the ſhip, fearing leaſt they ſhould fall into the Syrtes, and ſo let downe a veſſell, and were carryed.

18 The next day when they were toſſed with an exceeding tempeſt, they lightned the ſhip.

19 And the third day wee caſt out with our owne hands the tackling of the ſhip.

20 And when neither the ſunne nor ſtarres in many dayes appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay vpon vs all hope that wee ſhould bee ſaued was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence Paul ſtoode forth in the middeſt of them and ſayd, Syrs, ye ſhould haue harkened to me, and not to haue looſed from Candie & to haue gained vnto vs this harme and loſſe.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheare, for there ſhalbe no loſſe of any mans life among you, but of the ſhip.

23 For there ſtoode by me, this night the angell

of

of God, whose I am, and whome I serue.
24 Saying, Feare not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen thee all them that saile with thee. Acts 25.
25 Wherefore sirs be of good cheare: for I beleeue God that it shall be euen as he hath told me.
26 Howbeit, wee must bee cast into a certaine Iland.
27 But when the fourteenth night was come as we were sailing in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drewe neare to some countrey.
28 And sounded, and founde it twenty fadomes: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe and founde it fifteene fadomes.
29 Then fearing least wee should haue fallen on some rocke, they cast foure ankers out of the sterne, and wished for the day.
30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let downe the boat into the Sea vnder a colour as though they would haue cast ankers out of the foreship:
31 Paul said vnto the vnder captaine and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship ye cannot be saued.
32 Then the souldiers cut of the rope of the boate and let it fall away.
33 And when the day began to appear, Paul besought them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue tarryed and continued fasting, receiuing nothing at all.
34 Wherefore I pray you to take meate, for this no doubt is for your health, for there shall not an haire fall from the heade of any of you
35 And when he had thus spoken, hee tooke bread and gaue thankes to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eate.
36 Then were they all of good cheare, and they also tooke meate. 1. Tim. 4.
37 And we were all together in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lighted the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they espied a certaine hauen with a banke, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had taken vp the ankers, they committed themselues vnto the sea and loosed the rudder bands, and hoysed vp the maine saple to the wind and drew to land.

41 And when they fell into a place which had the sea on both sides, they thrust in the ship, and the forepart stucke fast and moued not, but the hinder part brake with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, least any of them when he had swom out should runaway.

43 But the vnder Captaine willing to saue Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea and scape to land.

44 And the other some on the boords, and some on broken peeces of the ship, and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

The xxviii. Chapter.

5 The viper hurteth not Paules hand 23. Paul preached Christ at Rome.

AND when they were escaped, then they knew Actes 27 that the Ile was called Melita:

2 And the Barbarous people shewed vs no little kindnesse, for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of the present raine, and because of the present cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of stickes and layd them on the fire there came a viper out of the heate, and caught him by the hand.

4 And when the strangers sawe the beast hang on his hand they saidamong themselues, No doubt this man is a murtherer, whom though he haue escaped the sea, yet vengance suffereth not to liue.

5 And

3 And he shooke off the viper into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit, they waited when he should haue swolne, or fallen downe suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and sawe no harme come to him they changed their minds, and sayd that hee was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chiefe man of the Ile, whose name was Publius which receiued vs, & lodged vs three daies courteously.

8 And it came to passe, that the father of Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a bloudy flix to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him and healed him.

9 So when this was done, other also which had diseases in the Ile came and were healed.

10 Which also did vs great honour, and when we departed they laded vs with such thinges as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintred in the Ile, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.

12 And when we came to Syracusa, we taried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fetch a compasse, & came to Regium, and after one day the South wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteolus.

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seuen dayes: and so we came toward Rome.

15 And from thence when the brethren heard of vs they came to meete vs at Appii forum, and at the three Tauerns: When Paule saw them, hee thanked God and waxed bold.

16 And when we came to Rome, the vndercaptaine deliuered the prisoners to the chiefe captaine of the host: but Paule was suffered to dwell by himselfe, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three daies Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together, And when

Acts 28.

they were come together, hee sayde vnto them, Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing a-
Actes 23 gainst the people or lawes of the fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the handes of the Romanes.

18 Which when they had examined mee, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me

Actes 8 19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation off.

20 For this cause then haue I called for you euen to see you, and to speake with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chaine.

21 And they sayde vnto him, We neither receiued
Luke 2. c letteres out of Iurie concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee,

22 But we will heare thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day there came many to him into his lodging, to whome he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Iesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, euen from the morning to night.

24 And some were perswaded in the thinges which were spoken, and some beleeued not.

Actes. 17 25 And when they agreed not among themselues they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, that is to say, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our fathers,

26 Saying, Goe vnto this people, and say, With
Esay 6. c eares shall yee heare, and shall not vnderstand,
Matt 13. and with eyes shall yee see and not perceiue
Mark 4 b 27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse,
Luke 8 b and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes
Iohn 12. haue they closed: least they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, & vnderstand with their

hearts

heartes, and should bee conuerted, and I should heale them.

28 Bee it knowne therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it. ℭ

29 And when he had said these words: the Iewes departed. and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul dwelt full two yeares in his owne hired house, and receiued all that came in vnto him.

31 Preaching the kingdome of God and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

The end of the Actes of the Apostles.

# The Epistle of the Apostle Saint Paul to the Romanes.

## The first Chapter.

1 Paul sheweth to whom and to what purpose he is called 16. What the Gospell is. 17. The vengeance of God vpon the wicked 25 the vse of the creatures. 24. The ingratitude and punishment of the wicked.

PAul the seruant of Iesus Christ called to bee an Apostle, seuered vnto the Gospel of God. ℣

2 Which hee had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy scriptures.

3 Of his sonne, which was made of the seede of Dauid after the flesh. Matt 1.a

4 And hath beene declared to be the sonne of God, with power after the spirit that sanctifieth, by the resurrection from the dead, of Iesus Christ our Lord,

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apostleship, that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith in his name among all heathen.

6 Among whome, pee are also the called of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloued of God, saints by calling: Grace to you and peace from God our father, and the Lord Iesus Christ:

8 First, verily I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is published throughout all the world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whome I serue with my spirit in the Gospell of his sonne, that without ceasing I make mention of you.

10 Praying alwaies in my prayers, that by some meane at last one time or other, I might take a prosperous iourney by the will of God to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I might bestow among you some spirituall gift, that yee might be stablished.

12 That is that I might haue consolation together with you, each with others faith, yours & mine.

13 I would that ye should know, brethren, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you, & haue bin let hitherto, that I might haue some fruit also among you, as among other of the Gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Grecians, & the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the vnwise.

15 So that as much as in mee is, I am readie to preach the Gospell to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospell of Christ because it is the power of God vnto saluation to all that beleeue, to the Iew first and also the Greeke.

17 For by it is the righteousnesse of God opened from faith to faith. As it is written, The iust shall liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen, against all vngodlines, and vnrighteousnes of men

1. Cor. 12
Galat 1.

John 4. c
1. Cor 3.
Phil. 1. a
Colos 1. a

Actes 2. c

men, which withhold the truth in vnrighteousnesse
19 For that that may bee knowne of God, is manifest among them because God hath shewed it vn to them.
20 For his inuisible thinges, being vnderstoode by his workes through the creation of the world, are seene, that is, both his eternall power and Godhead: so that they are without excuse.
21 Because that when they knew God notwithstanding they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but waxed full of vanities in their imaginations, & their foolish heart was blinded Psal 106
22 When they counted themselues wise, they became fooles.
23 And turned the glory of the incorruptible God vnto an image made not onely after the similitude of a corruptible man, but also of birds and foure footed beasts, and of creeping beasts. Ier 2.11 Ezech 14
24 Wherefore God gaue them vp to vncleanesse, through the lustes of their owne hearts, that their owne bodies should be defiled among themselues.
25 Which changed the truth for a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature more then the creator, which is to be praised for euer, Amen.
26 Wherefore God gaue them vp vnto shamfull lustes: for euen the women did change the naturall vse, into that which is against nature.
27 And likewise, also the men left the naturall vse of the women, and burnt in their lustes one with another, & men with men wrought filthinesse, & receiued in themselues the rewarde of their errour (as it was conuenient.)
28 And as they regarded not to know God: euen so God deliuered them vp vnto a lewde minde that they should doe those things which were not conuenient. Acts 7.42
29 Being full of vnrighteousnes, fornication craftinesse, couetousnes, maliciousnesse full of enuie, murder, debate, deceite, euill conditioned, whisperers.
30 Backbiters, haters of God, dispitfull, proud

boasters

boasters, bringers vp of euill thinges, disobedient to father and mother:

31 Without vnderstanding, couenant breakers,
Osee 7. a without naturall affection, truce breakers, vnmercifull.

32 The which knowing the righteousnesse of God (how that they which commit such things are worthy of death,) not onely doe the same, but also haue pleasure in them that doe them

The ii. Chapter.

1 Gods iudgement vpon the hypocrites. 13. All men are sinners.

Therefore art thou inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer
Matt 7. a thou be that iudgest: for in that same wherein thou iudgest another, thou condemnest thy selfe. for thou that iudgest, doest euen the selfe same things.

2 But wee are sure that the iudgement of God is according to the truth, against them which commit such things.

3 Thinkest thou this, O thou man that iudgest
Esay 30. them that doe these things: and doest the same thy
Acts 17 selfe, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Either dispisest thou the riches of his goodnes, and patience, & longsufferance, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou after thy stubbornesse and heart that cannot repent, heapest vnto thy selfe wrath against
Matt 16. the day of wrath. and declaration of the righteous iudgement of God,

6 Which will reward euery man according to his deedes:

7 To them which by continuing in well doing seeke for glory, and honour, and immortalitie eternall life,

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey vnrighteousnesse, shall come indignation and wrath.

9 Tribulation, and anguish, vpon euery soule of man that doth euill, of the Iew first, and also of the Greeke,

10 But

10 But glory, and honour, and peace, to euery man that doth good, to the Iewe first, and also to the Greeke.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God. 2. Par. 19. Acts 10. Ephe. 6. b Colo. 3. b Iam. 1. d

12 For whosoeuer hath sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as haue sinned in the law, shall be iudged by the law.

13 (For in the sight of God, the hearers of the law are not righteous, but the doers of the law shall be iustified.

14 For when the Gentiles, which haue not the law, doe of nature the things contained in the law: they hauing not the law, are a law vnto themselues: ℂ

15 Which shew the workes of the law written in their hearts, their conscience bearing witnesse, and their thoughts accusing one another, or excusing) Iohn 1. e

16 At the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospell.

17 Behold, thou art called a Iewe, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God.

18 And knowest his will, and allowest the things that be excellent, enformed by the law.

19 And beleeuest that thou thy selfe art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkenesse.

20 An informer of them which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearned: which hast the forme of knowledge and in the truth in law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest not thy selfe? Thou preachest a man should not steale, yet stealest thou?

22 Thou that sayest, a man should not commit adultery, breakest thou wedlocke? Thou abhorrest idols, and yet committest sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

24 For the name of God is euill spoke of among the Gentiles, through you, as it is written. Esay 52. Exe. 36

25 For circumcision verily auaileth, if thou keepe the law: but if thou be a breaker of the lawe, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore

26 Therefore, if the vncircumcision keepe the ordinances of the lawe, shall not his vncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shal not vncircumcision which is by nature, if it keepe the law, iudge thee, which being vnder the letter and circumcision doest transgresse the law?

28 For he is not a Iew which is a Iew outward: Neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh.

John 8.c Rom. 9.b Colos. 2. 29 But he is a Iew which is one inwardly and the circumcision of the heart, which consisteth in the spirite, and not in the letter, is circumcision, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 The Iewes haue a prerogatiue. 24. All are iustified by grace through faith, and not through workes.

A WHat preferment then hath the Iewe? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much euery way, First, for because that vnto Rom. 9.a them were committed the wordes of God.

3 What then though some of them did not beleeue? shall their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea let God bee true, and euery man a liar, as it is written. That thou mightest be iustified in thy sayings, and ouercome when thou art iudged.

5 But if our vnrighteousnesse set forth the righteousnesse of God, what shall wee say? Is God vnrighteous which taketh vengeance? (I speake after the manner of men.)

6 God forbid: for how then shall God iudge the world?

26 7 For if the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glory, why am I as yet iudged as a sinner?

8 And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirme that we say) let vs do euill that good may come thereof: whose damnation is iust.

9 What

9 What then: are we better then they? No in no wise: for we haue before accused both Iewes and Gentiles, that they are all vnder sinne:

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one: Psal 14 a. and 52. a.

11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are all become vnprofitable: there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throate is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they haue deceiued, the poyson of Aspes is vnder their lippes: Psal. 5. b

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing & bitternes. C

15 Their feet are swift to shed bloud. Psal. 5. b

16 Hearts griefe and misery are in their wayes. Prou. 1. b

17 And the way of peace haue they not knowne.

18 There is no feare of God before their eies. Psa. 36. a

19 Now we know that what things soeuer the law saith it saith to them which are vnder the lawe: that euery mouth may be stopped, and that all the world may be indaungered to God.

20 Because that by the deedes of the law, there shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: For by the law commeth the knowledge of sinne. Gala. 2. a

21 But now is the righteousnes of God declared without the law, being witnessed by the law and the prophets, B

22 The righteousnesse of God commeth by the faith of Iesus Christ vnto all, and vpon al them that beleeue, There is no difference:

23 For all haue sinned, and haue need of the glory of God.

24 But are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus:

25 Whom God hath set forth to bee a propitiation, through faith in his bloud, to declare his righteousnes, by the forgiuing of the sins that are past. Esay 53.

26 Which God did suffer, to shew at this time his righteousnesse, that he might be iust, and the iustifier. Ioha 2. b

ſtifier of him which beleeueth on Jeſus.

Gal 5.a 27 Where is then thy boaſting? It is excluded. By what law? Of workes: Nay but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we hold that a man is iuſtified by faith, without the deedes of the law.

29 Is he the God of the Iewes onely? Is hee not alſo of the Gentiles? Yes, euen of the Gentiles alſo.

30 For it is one God which ſhall iuſtifie the circumciſion by faith, and vncircumciſion through faith.

31 Doe we then deſtroy the lawe through faith? God forbid: but we rather maintaine the law.

## The iiii Chapter.

9 Iuſtification is the free gift of God, as it appeareth by Dauid and Abraham. 13. And alſo by the office of the law and faith.

A

Eſay 9.a What ſhall we ſay then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the fleſh did find?

Gen.15. Gala.3.a 2 For if Abraham were iuſtified by workes, then hath he wherein to boaſt, but not before God.

Iames 2. 3 For what ſaith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted vnto him for righteouſneſſe

4 To him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace but of duty.

5 To him that worketh not, but beleeueth on him that iuſtifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteouſneſſe

6 Euen as Dauid deſcribeth the bleſſednes of the man, to whom God imputeth righteouſnes without workes.

B

Pſal.32. 7 Saying bleſſed are they whoſe vnrighteouſneſſe is forgiuen, and whoſe ſinnes are couered.

8 Bleſſed is that man to whom the Lord will not impute ſinne.

9 Came this bleſſednes then vpon the circumciſion onely, or vpon the vncircumciſion alſo: For we

ſay

with me: but I finde no meanes to perfourme that which is good.

19 For the good that I would, doe I not, but the euill which I would not, that doe I.

20 And if I doe that I would not, then is it not I any longer that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in mee.

21 I finde then by the lawe, that when I would do good, euill is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inner man.

23 But I see another law in my members, rebelling against the law of my mind, and subduing mee vnto the law of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am? Who shall deliuer me from the body of this death?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. So then with the minde I my selfe serue the law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sinne.

The viii Chapter.

Assurance of the faithfull. 6. The fruites of the holy Ghost.

THere is then no damnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

2 For the law of the spirit of life, through Iesus Christ, hath made me free from the law of sinne and death.

3 For what the law could not do, inasmuch as it was weake through the flesh, God hauing sent his owne sonne in the similitude of sinfull flesh, euen by sinne condemning sinne in the flesh:

4 That the righteousnesse of the law might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the flesh but after the spirit,

5 For they that are carnall are carnally minded: but they that are spirituall, are spiritually minded.

6 To be carnally minded is death: but to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:

7 Because that the fleshly minde is enmitie against God: for it is not obedient to the law of God, neither can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirite, if so be that the spirit of God dwell in you. If any man have not the spirite of Christ, the same is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sinne: but the spirit is life for righteousnesse sake.

11 But if the spirite of him that raysed vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: euen he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, because that his spirit dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren we are debters, not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh.

13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the spirit, doe mortifie the deedes of the body, ye shall liue.

¶ 14 For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God. Galat 4.a

15 For ye haue not receiued the spirit of bondage againe to feare: but ye haue receiued the spirit of adoption whereby we cry, Abba, father. 2. Tim. 1

16 The spirit it selfe beareth witnes to our spirit, that we are the sonnes of God. 1 Cor 2b Ephes 1.a

17 If wee be sonnes, then are we also heires, the heires of God, and ioynt heires with Christ. So that we suffer together, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I am certainely perswaded, that the afflictions of this time are not worthy of the glory, which shall be shewed vpon vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature abideth, looking when the sonnes of God shall appeare.

20 Because the creature is subiect to vanitie not willing, but for him which hath subdued the same in hope.

21 For

death: or of obedience vnto righteousnesse?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the seruants of sinne: but ye haue obeyed with heart the forme of doctrine vnto the which ye were brought vnto.

18 Being then made free from sinne, ye are become the seruants of righteousnes. Rom. 8.d Rom. 8.a

19 I speake after the maner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh. For as ye haue giuen your members seruants to vnclenes and iniquity, euen so now giue your members seruants to righteousnes vnto holines.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne, ye were free from righteousnesse.

21 What fruite had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. ℣

22 But now ye being made free from sinne, and made the seruants of God, haue your fruit vnto holinesse, and the end euerlasting life.

23 For the reward of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life through Iesus Christ our Lord. Gen. 2.e Rom. 5.e

## The vii. Chapter.

23 The fight betweene the law of the flesh, and the law of the spirit.

KNow ye not brethren (for I speake to them that know the law) how that the law hath power ouer a man, as long as he liueth? ℵ

2 For the woman which hath a husband, is bound by the law to her husband, as long as he liueth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

3 So then if while her husband liueth she couple her selfe with another man, she shal be counted a wedlocke breaker: but if her husband be dead, she is free frō the law, so that she is no wedlock breaker, though she couple her selfe with another man.

4 Euen so, ye also my brethren, are dead concerning the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be coupled to another, who is raised from the dead, that

we should bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the lusts of sinne which were by the law, wrought in our members to bring forth fruit vnto death.

6 But now are we deliuered from the law, & dead vnto it, wherevnto wee were in bondage, that wee should serue in newnesse of spirite, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

B 7 What shall we say then? Is the law sinne? God
Deut. 5. b forbid. Neuertheless I knew not sinne, but by the
Rom. 5. e law: For I had not knowne lust, except the law had
Gala. 3. b said, Thou shalt not lust.

8 But sinne taking occasion by the commaundement, wrought in mee all maner of concupiscence. For without the law sinne was dead.

9 I once liued without law: but when the commaundement came, sinne reuiued.

10 And I was dead: and the very same cõmandement which was ordained vnto life, was found to be vnto me an occasion of death.

11 For sinne taking occasion by the commaundement, hath deceiued me, and by the same slue me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, & the commaundement holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which was good, made death vnto me? God forbid. But sinne, that sinne might appeare, by that which was good to worke death in me: that sinne by the commaundement might be out of measure sinfull,

C 14 For we know that the law is spirituall: but I am carnall solde vnder sinne.

15 For that which I doe, I allow not: for what I would, that do I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I do now that which I would not, I consent vnto the law that it is good.

17 Now then it is not I that doe it: but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is to say, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to will is present

with

say that faith was reckoned vnto Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckoned? when hee was in the circumcision, or when hee was in the vncircumcision? Not in the circumcision, but in vncircumcision. Gen. 15. Gen. 19.

11 And he receiued the signe of circumcision as the seale of the righteousnesse of faith, which he had yet being vncircumcised: that hee should be the father of all them that beleeue, though they be not circumcised, that righteousnes might be imputed vnto them also.

12 And that he might be father of circumcision, not vnto them onely which came of the circumcised, but vnto them also that walke in the steppes of the faith, that was in our father Abraham, before the time of circumcision.

13 For the promise that he should be the heire of the world, was not to Abrahã, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousnes of faith.

14 For if they which are of the lawe bee heires, then is faith but vaine, and the promise made of none effect. 15

15 Because the lawe causeth wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore by faith is the inheritance giuen, that it might be by grace, that the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, which is the father of vs all. Esay 51.

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) before God, whom hee beleeued, which restoreth the dead vnto life, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were. Gen. 17.

18 Who contrary to hope, beleeued in hope, that he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seede be.

19 And he fainted not in the faith, nor considered his owne body now dead, when hee was almost an hundred yeares olde, neyther yet the deadnesse of

Saraes wombe.

20 He ſtackered not at the promiſe of God, thorough vnbeliefe, but was ſtrong in faith, giuing glorie to God.

21 And being full certified, that what he had promiſed, he was alſo able to performe.

22 And therefore it was reckoned to him for righteouſneſſe,

23 Neuertheleſſe, it is not written for him onely, that it was reckoned to him.

Rom. 15. 24 But alſo for vs, whom it ſhall bee reckoned, ſo that we beleeue on him that raiſed vp Jeſus our Lord from the dead.

25 Which was deliuered for our ſinnes, and was raiſed againe for our iuſtification.

## The v. Chapter.

1 The fruit of faith. 12. From whence commeth death, and from whence life.

Iohn 16. THerefore being iuſtified by faith, we are at peace with God, through our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

2 By whom alſo we haue had an entrance by faith vnto this grace wherein we ſtand, and reioyce in the hope of the glory of God.

3 Not that onely, but alſo we reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation worketh patience.

4 Patience proofe, proofe hope.

5 And hope maketh not aſhamed, becauſe the loue of God is ſpread abroad in our hearts by the holy Ghoſt, which is giuen vnto vs.

6 For when we were yet weake, according to the time, Chriſt died for the vngodly.

7 Now ſcarcely will any man die for the righteous: Yet peraduenture for the good some man durſt die.

8 But God ſetteth out his loue toward vs, ſeeIohn 3. e ing that while wee were yet ſinners, Chriſt died 1. Iohn 4. for vs.

9 Much more then now, we that are iuſtified by his bloud, ſhall be ſaued from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God by the death of his ſonne: much more, ſeeing

seeing we are reconciled, we shalbe saued by his life.

11 Not onely so, but we also ioy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we haue now receiued the attonement.

12 Wherefore as by one man sinne entered into the world, and death by sin: euen so death entred into all men, insomuch as all haue sinned. Gen. 2. & Rom. 6.

13 For vnto the law was sinne in the world: but sinne is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Neuertheles sinne raigned from Adam vnto Moses ouer them also that had not sinned with like transgression as did Adam, which is the figure of him that was to come. ¶

15 But not as the sinne, so is the free gifte. For if through the sinne of one many be dead: much more the grace of God, & the gifte by grace, which is by one man Jesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many. Iohn 1.

16 And not as by one that sinned, euen so the gifte: for the sin entred by one offence into condemnation: but the gift of many sinnes into iustification.

17 For if by the sinne of one, death raigned by the meanes of one, much more they which receiue abundance of grace, and of the gifte of righteousnes, shall raigne in life by the meanes of one, Jesus Christ.

18 Likewise then, as by the sin of one, sin came on all men to condemnation euen so, by the righteousnes of one, good came vpon all men to the righteousnes of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many became sinners: so by the obedience of one, shall many be made righteous.

20 But the law in the meane time entred in, that sin should encrease. But where sinne was plenteous, grace was more plenteous. Gal. 3.

21 That as sinne hath raigned vnto death: euen so might grace raigne through righteousnes vnto eternall life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

## The vi. Chapter.

1 Newnesse of life followeth iustification, to the which he exhorteth.

WHat shall we say then? shall we continue in sin? that

that grace may abound? God forbid,

2 How shall we that are dead to sinne, liue any longer therein.

3 Know yee not, that all wee which haue beene baptized into Iesus Christ, haue beene baptized into his death.

4 We are buried then with him by baptisme into his death, that likewise as Christ was raised vp from the dead by the glory of the father: euen so, we also should walke in newnesse of life.

5 For if we be graft together by the likenes of his death: euen so, shall we be partakers of the resurrectiō.

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him also, that the body of sinne might vtterly be destroied that henceforth we should not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is iustified from sinne.

8 And if we be dead with Christ, wee beleeue that we shall also liue with him. 2. Tim. 2

9 Knowing that Christ being raysed from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more power ouer him. Apoc. 1 b

10 For as touching that he died, hee died concerning sinne once: And as touching that he liueth, he liueth vnto God.

11 Likewise reckon your selues to be dead to sin: but aliue vnto God, through Iesus Christ our Lord

12 Let not sin raigne therefore in your mortal body, that ye should therevnto obey by the lusts of it.

13 Neither giue ye your members as instrumēts of vnrighteousnes vnto sinne? but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are aliue from the dead, and your members as instruments for righteousnes vnto God.

14 For sin shall not haue power ouer you, because ye are not vnder the law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? Shall we sinne, because wee are not vnder the law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not how that to whomsoeuer ye cōmit your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom ye obey: whether it be of sinne vnto

death

and going about to stablish their owne righteousnes, haue not beene obedient vnto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousnes to all that beleeue.

5 For Moses writeth of the righteousnes which is of the lawe. howe that the man which doth those things shall liue by them.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise: Say not thou in thine heart, who shall ascend into heauen? That is to fetch Christ downe from aboue.

7 Either who shall descend into the deepe? That is, to fetch vp Christ againe from the dead.

8 But what sayth he the word is nigh thee, euen in thy mouth, & in thy heart. This same is the word of faith which we preach.

9 For if thou shalt knowledge with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saued.

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnes, & with the mouth confession is made vnto saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be confounded. Esay 28.

12 There is no difference betweene the Iew and the Greeke: for the same Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all that call vpon him.

13 For whosoeuer shall call on the name of the Lord shalbe saued.

14 How then shall they call on him, on whom they haue not beleeued? How shall they beleeue on him of whome they haue not heard? Howe shall they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? As it is written, How beautifull are the feet of them which bring good tidinges of peace and bring good tidings of good things?

16 But they haue not obeyed the Gospell, for Esaias saith, Lord, who hath beleeued our sayings? Esay 53. Iohn 12.

17 So

17 So then faith commeth by hearing, & hearing
Psa. 19. commeth by the word of God.
18 But (I aske) haue they not heard? No doubt,
their sound went out into all lands, and their words
into the end of the world.
19 But I demaund whether Israel did knowe or
Deut 13. not? First Moses saith, I will prouoke you to enuy
by them that are no people: and by a foolish nation
I will anger you.
Esay 52. 20 And Esaias is bold, and saith, I haue beene
found of them that sought me not: I haue bin made
manifest vnto them that asked not after me.
Esay 65. 21 But against Israell hee saieth, All day long
haue I stretched forth my handes vnto a people that
beleeueth not, but speaketh against me,

The xi. Chapter.

29 God repenteth him not of his giftes 33. The depth of
Gods iudgment.

I Say then hath God cast away his people? God
forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seede of
Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.
2 God hath not cast away his people which hee
2.Reg 19 knew before. Wote ye not what the scripture saith of
Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against
Israell.
3 Saying, Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets,
and digged downe thine altars: and I am left alone,
and they seeke my life.
4 But what saith the answere of God vnto him?
I haue reserued vnto my selfe seuen thousande men,
which haue not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.
5 Euen so at this time there is a remnant accord-
ing to the election of grace.
6 If it be of grace, then it is not now of workes: for
then grace is no more grace. But if it be of workes
then is it now no grace, for then worke is no more
worke.
7 What then? Israel hath not obteined that which
he seeketh for, but the election hath obteined it, the
remnant hath beene blinded.

(According

8 (Accordyng as it is written, God hath geuen them the spirit of remorse: eyes that they shoulde not see, and eares that they shoulde not heare) euen vnto this day. Esay 6.c Matt. 13

9 And Dauid sayd, Let their table be made a snare and a trappe, & a stumbling blocke, and a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes be blinded, that they see not, and bow thou downe their backe alway.

11 I say then, Haue they therefore stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but through their fall, saluation is come vnto the Gentiles, for to prouoke them withall.

12 Nowe if the fall of them bee the riches of the world, and the minishing of them, the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speake to you Gentiles: in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office, Rom 1.a 1. Tim 2 2. Tim. 1 ¶

14 If by any meanes I may prouoke them which are my flesh, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them bee the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiuing of them be but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruits be holy the whole lumpe also is holy And if the roote be holy, the branches also

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Olyue tree, wast graft in amonge them, and made partaker of the roote and fatnesse of the Olyue tree

18 Boast not thy selfe against the branches, For if thou boast thy selfe, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in.

20 Well because of vnbeleife they were broken off, and thou stoodest stedfast in faith. Bee not high minded, but feare. ¶

21 For seeing that God spared not the naturall branches: take heed least it come to passe, that he spare not

not thee.

22 Behold therefore the kindnesse and the rigorousnesse of God: on them which fell rigorousnesse: but towards thee, kindnesse, if thou continue in kindnes or else thou shalt be hewen off.

1.Cor.3d 23 And they if they abide not still in vnbeleife, shall be grafted in: for God is of power to graft them in againe.

24 For if thou were cut of a naturall wilde Olive tree and were grafted contrary to nature, in a true Olive tree: how much more shall these which be the naturall branches, be grafted in their owne Olive tree?

25 For I would not brethren, that ye shoulde bee ignorant of this mystery, (least ye should be wise in your owne conceits) that partly blindnesse is happened in Israell, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

Esay 55. Psal. 14.c 26 And so all Israell shall bee saued, as it is written, There shall come out of Sion hee that doth deliuer, and shall turne away vngodlines from Iacob.

27 And this is my couenaunt vnto them when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are loued for the fathers sakes.

29 For the free giftes and calling of God, are without repentance,

30 For as ye in times past haue not beleeued God yet haue ye now obteined mercy through their vnbeleife.

31 Euen so now haue they not beleeued the mercy shewed vnto you, that they also may obteine mercy.

32 For God hath shut vp all nations in vnbeleife, that he might haue mercy vpon all.

33 O the depenesse of the riches both of the wisedome and knowledge of God: how vnsearchable are

Sapi. 9.b his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

Esay 60. 34 For who hath knowne the mind of the Lord?

1.Cor. 2d or who hath bene his counsellour?

35 Either who hath giuen vnto him first, and he

shalbe

8 That is to say, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God, but they which bee the children of promise, are counted the seede: Rom. 2. d Gen. 21. d Iohn 3. d

9 For this is the worde of promise: About this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

10 Not onely this, but also Rebecca was with child by one, euen by our father Isahac. Rom. 2. d Gen. 18.

11 For ere the children were borne, when they had neither done good, neither bad, (that the purpose of God by election might stand: not by the reason of workes, but by the caller)

12 It was sayd vnto her, The elder shal serue the ponger.

13 As it is written, Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated.

14 What shall we say then? Is there any vnrighteousnesse with God? God forbid. Exod 33.

15 For he sayth to Moses, I will shew mercy, to whomsoeuer I shew mercy: and will haue compassion, on whomsoeuer I haue compassion.

16 So then election is not of the willer, nor of the runner: but of God that taketh mercy.

17 For the scripture saith vnto Pharao, Euen for this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, & that my name might be declared throughout all the world. Exod 9. b

18 So hath he mercy on whom he wil, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why then blameth he vs yet? For who hath resisted his will?

20 But O man, what art thou which disputest with God? Shall the worke say to the workeman, why hast thou made me of this fashion? Esay 45. Eccl. 33. Iere. 18.

21 Hath not the potter power ouer the clay, euen of the same lumpe to make one vessell vnto honour, another vnto dishonour.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, & to make his power knowne, suffered with long patience the vessels of his wrath ordeined to destruction.

23 To declare the riches of his glory, on the vessels of mercy, which he had prepared vnto glory.

24 Whom also he called (I meane) vs, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

Osee 3.d 25 As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my
1.Pet.2.b people, which were not my people: and her beloued which was not beloued.

26 And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my people: there shall they bee called the children of the liuing God.

Esay 10. 27 And Esaias cryeth concerning Israell, Though the number of the children of Israell bee as the sand of the sea, yet but a remnant shalbe saued.

28 For he finisheth the word, and maketh it short in righteousnesse: for a short word will the Lord make on earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, Except the Lorde of Sabboth had left vs seede, we had beene made as Sodoma, and beene like vnto Gomorrha.

30 What shall wee say then? that the Gentiles which followed not righteousnes, haue obteyned righteousnesse, euen the righteousnes which commeth of faith:

31 But Israel which followed the lawe of righteousnes, hath not attained to the law of righteousnes.

32 Wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the law for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone.

33 As it is written, Behold, I put in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke of offence, and whosoeuer beleeueth on him shall not be confounded.

## The x. chapter.

1 The vnfaithfulnesse of the Iewes. 14 Two maner of righteousnes.

BRethren, my heartes desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue a zeale of God: but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnes and

21 For the creature it selfe shalbe made free, from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the sonnes of God.

22 For we know that euery creature groneth with vs also, & trauaileth in paine with vs, euen vnto this time.

23 Not onely they, but we also which haue the first fruites of the spirit, and we our selues mourne in our selues, waiting for the adoption euen the deliuerance of our body.

25 For wee are saued by hope: But hope that is seene, is no hope. For how can a man hope for that which he seeth.

25 But and if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise also the spirit helpeth our infirmities. For we know not what to desire as wee ought: but the spirit it selfe maketh great intercessiō for vs, with groanings, which cannot be expressed.

27 And hee which searcheth the heart, knoweth what is the meaning of the spirit: for hee maketh intercession for the Saints according to the pleasure of God.

28 For wee knowe that all thinges worke for the best to them that loue God, to them which also are called of purpose.

29 For those which hee knew before, hee also did predestinate, that they should be like fashioned vnto the shape of his sonne, that hee might bee the first begotten among many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he did predestinate, them also he called: and whom he called, them also he iustified, and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall wee then say to these thinges? If God be on our side, who can be against vs? Num. 24. Luk 20 b

32 Which spared not his own sonne but gaue him for vs all: how shall he not with him also giue vs all things? Iohn 3 b Esai 53 d

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? It is God that iustifieth.

34 Who

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ which dyed, yea rather which is risen againe, which is also on the right hand of God, and maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall seperate vs from the loue of Christ? Shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, either hunger either nakednes, either perill, either sword?

Psal. 44. 36 (As it is written. For thy sake are we killed all day long, and are counted as sheepe for the slaughter.)

37 Neuertheless, in all these things we ouercome through him that loued vs.

38 For I am sure, that neither death, neither life, neither Angels, nor rule, neither power neither things present, neither things to come.

39 Neither height, nor depth, neither any other creature, shalbe able to seperate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord

The ix. Chapter.

1 Paul declareth his feruent loue toward his nation.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lye not, (my conscience also bearing me witnesse, by the holy Ghost.)

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorrow in my heart.

3 For I haue wished my selfe to be cursed from Christ, for my brethren, my kinsmen as pertaineth to the flesh.

4 Which are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the couenants, and the law that was giuen, and the seruice of God, and the promises:

5 Of whom are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh, Christ came, which is God, in all things to be praysed for euer, Amen.

6 And it cannot be, that the word of God hath taken none effect: For they are not all Israelits which are of Israel:

25 7 Neither are they all children, that are of the seed of Abraham: but in Isaac shall thy seede be called

8 That

shalbe recompenced againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and for him, are all things: to whom be glory for euer, Amen.

## The xii. Chapter.

1 How euery man should walke in his seuerall calling.

I Beseech you therefore brethren by the mercifulnes of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a quicke sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruice. 28

2 And be ye not fashioned like vnto this world, but be ye changed in your shape, by the renuing of your mind, that ye may proue what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace giuen vnto me to euery man that is among you, that no man esteem of himselfe more then he ought to esteeme: but so esteeme himselfe that he behaue himselfe discreetly, according as God hath dealt to euery man the measure of faith.

4 For as we haue many members in one bodie, & all members haue not one office:

5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and euery one members one of another. Eccle 3.c I.Co.12

6 Seeing that we haue diuers gifts according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs: either prophecie after the measure of faith:

7 Either office in administration: or he that teacheth in teaching: 26

8 Or he that exhorteth, in exhorting: or hee that giueth, in singlenesse: hee that ruleth, in diligence: he that is mercifull, in cheerefulnesse.

9 Loue without dissimulation: hating euil, cleaning to good.

10 Affectioned one to another with brotherly loue in giuing honour, going one before another. I.Pet.2.c Eccle.32

11 Not lither in businesse: fernent in spirit: seruing the Lord:

12 Reioycing in hope: patient in trouble: instant in prayer:

13 Distributing to the necessitie of saintes: giuen to

hospitalitie.

14 Blesse them which persecute you: blesse and curse not.

Hebr 13 15 Reioyce with them that doe reioyce, & weepe
Matt 5.5 with them that weepe.

16 Being of like affection one towards another: being not high minded: but making your selues equall to them of the lower sort. Be not wise in your owne opinions.

17 Recompencing to no man euill for euill. Prouiding afore hand things honest, not onely before God but also in the sight of men.

Deut. 32 18 If it be possible, as much as lyeth in you liue peaceably with all men.

19 Dearely beloued auenge not your selues, but rather giue place vnto wrath: For it is written, vengeance is mine. I will repay, saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire vpon his head.

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

## The xiii Chapter

1 Of obedience to rulers, who beare not the sword in vaine
8 Charitie must measure all our doings.

Sapi 6. 2 John 3d LEt euerie soule be subiect vnto the higher powers for there is no power but of God. The powers that be, are ordeined of God.

2 Whosoeuer therefore, resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shal receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For rulers are not feare full to good workes, but to the euill. Wilt thou not feare the power? Do wel and thou shalt haue prayse of the same.

4 For hee is the minister of God for thy wealth. But if thou doe euill, feare, for hee beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the minister of God, reuenger of wrath on him that doth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must needes be subiect, not onely for

for feare of punishment: but also because of conscience
6 For this cause pay ye tribute. for they are Gods
ministers serving for the same purpose.
7 Giue to every man therefore his duty, tribute c 23
to whom tribute is due, custome to whome custome, matt 17.
feare to whom feare honour to whom honour belongeth.
8 Owe nothing to no man. but to loue one another: (For he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the
law)
9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, thou Exod 20
shalt not kill. thou shalt not steale, thou shalt not Deut 5.a
beare false witnes, thou shalt not lust: and if there Matt 5.d
be any other commandement, it is in seuere woordes Luk 10.d
comprehended in this saying: namely, Thou shalt Leui. 19.
loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. Matt 22
10 Charitie worketh no euill to his neighboure, Mark 12.
therefore the fulfilling of the law is charitie. Gal. 5.b
11 And chiefly considering the season, how that it Iames 5.
is time that we should now awake out of sleepe: for
now is our saluation neerer then when we beleeued
12 The night is past, the day is come nigh. Let
us therefore cast away the deedes of darknesse, and
let us put on the armour of light.
13 Let us walke honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennes, neither in chambering and wantonnesse, neyther strife and enuying.
14 But put ye on the Lord Iesus Christ, and make Luk. 21 f
not prouision for the flesh, to fulfill the lustes thereof Eccl. 23
and 38.d

The xiiii Chapter.

15 One ought to beare with anothers conscience in charitie.

HIm that is weake in the faith, receiue not, to doubtfulnesse of disputations. A
2 One beleeueth that he may eat euery thing: another which is weake eateth herbes.
3 Let not him that eateth: despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, iudge him that eateth: For God hath receiued him.
4 What art thou that iudgest another mans ser-

mant? To his own maister he standeth or falleth: yea hee shall be holden vp, for God is able to make him stand.

5 This man putteth difference betweene day and day. Another man counteth all dayes alike. Let euery man be fully perswaded in his owne mind.

6 He that esteemeth the day, esteemeth it vnto the Lord: and he that esteemeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not esteem it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giueth God thanks: and hee that eateth not, eateth not to the Lord, and giueth God thanks.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, and no man dieth to himselfe.

8 For if wee liue, wee liue vnto the Lord: and if we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

Acts 12

9 For to this end Christ both died and rose, and reuiued, that he might bee Lorde both of quicke and dead.

Phil.2.b

10 But why doest thou then iudge thy brother? eyther why doest thou set at naught thy brother? we shall all stand before the iudgement seate of Christ.

Esay 65. Phil.2.d

11 For it is written, As I liue saith the Lord, and all knees shall bow to mee, and all tongues shall giue praise to God.

12 So shall euery one of vs giue account of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but iudge this rather, that no man put a stumbling blocke, or an occasion to fall, in his brothers way.

¶ 14 For I know, and am perswaded by the Lorde Iesus, that there is nothing common of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth it to be common, to him it is common.

Matt 15 Acts 10 1.Tim 4

Matt.7.d

15 But if thy brother be grieued with thy meate: nowe walkest not thou charitably: destroy not him with thy meate, for whom Christ died.

16 Let not your good be euill spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meate & drinke

but

but righteousnes and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serueth Christ, pleaseth God, and is commended of men.

19 Let vs therefore follow those thinges which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 Destroy not the worke of God for meate sake: Titus 1. d
all things are pure, but it is euil for that man which eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eate flesh, neither to drink wine, neither any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth eather is offended, or made weake.

22 Hast thou faith? Haue it with thy selfe before God. Happie is he that condemneth not himselfe in that thing which he alloweth

23 For he that maketh conscience is damned if he eate, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

## The xv. Chapter.

24 Paul sheweth his zeale toward them 36. And requireth the like of them.

WE which are strong, ought to beare the frailnes of the weake, and not to stand in our owne con- Gala 6. a
ceits

2 Let euery man please his neighbour in that that is good to edifying.

3 For Christ pleased not himselfe, but as it is written, The rebukes of them which rebuked thee, fell on me.

4 For whatsoeuer thinges haue been written afore time, were written for our learning: that we, through patience & comfort of the scriptures might haue hope.

5 The God of patience and consolation, graunt you to be like minded one towards another, after the example of Christ Iesus:

6 That ye all agreeing together, may with one mouth praise God, and the father of our Lorde Ie- Leuit. 19
sus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ receiued vs to the glory of God.

8 And I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, For this cause will I confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy name.

Deut 20. 2 Reg 22 Psal. 18

Deut. 32 Psal. 117

10 And againe he saith, Reioyce ye Gentiles with his people.

11 And againe, Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, & laud him all ye people together.

Esay 11.

12 And againe, Esaias saith. There shall be the root of Iesse and he shall rise to raigne ouer the gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 The God of hope fill you with all ioy & peace in beleeuing, that ye may bee rich in hope, through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 I my selfe am perswaded of you my brethren ¶ that ye also are full of goodnes, and filled with all knowledge, able also to exhort one another.

15 Neuertheless, brethren, I haue somwhat more boldly written vnto you, as putting you in remembrance through the grace that is giuen to me of God

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ to the Gentiles, and should minister the Gospell of God, that the offering of the Gentiles might bee acceptable, and sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce through Christ Iesus, in those things which pertaine to God

18 For I will not be bold to speake of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by mee, to make the Gentiles obedient with word and deede.

19 In mightie signes and wonders, by the power of the spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem, & the coasts round about vnto Illiricum, I haue fully preached the Gospell of Christ.

20 So haue I endeuored my selfe to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, least I should haue built

built vpon another mans foundation.

21 But as it is written, To whome hee was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that heard not, shal vnderstand.

22 For this cause I haue been let, that I coulde not come vnto you.

23 But now hauing no more to doe in these countries, and also hauing a great desire many yeares to come vnto you.

24 Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you. for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to bee brought on my way thitherward by you, after that I be somewhat filled with you.

25 But nowe goe I vnto Hierusalem, to minister vnto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine common gathering for the poore saintes which are at Hierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debters are they. For if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spirituall thinges, their duetie is to minister vnto them in carnall thinges. Acts 11

28 When I haue performed this, and haue sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine. C

29 And I am sure that when I come vnto you, I shall come with abundance of the blessing of the Gospell of Christ.

30 I beseech you brethren for the Lorde Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the spirit, that yee helpe me in my businesse with your prayers to God for me:

31 That I may be deliuered from them which beleeue not in Iurie, and that this my seruice which I haue at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God and may with you be refreshed. 1. Cor. 4

33 The God of peace be with you all, Amen.

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 A number of salutations. 16. Paul willeth them to be ware of false brethren. 20. He prayeth and giueth thanks

for them.

A

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister which is a minister of the Church of Cenchrea:

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she hath neede of you: for shee hath succoured many, and my selfe also.

3 Greete Priscilla & Aquila, my helpers in Christ Iesus.

4 (Which haue for my life laid downe their owne neckes: vnto whom not onely I giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles,)

5 Likewise greete the Church that is in their house Salute my welbeloued Epenetus, which is the first fruit of Achaia in Christ.

6 Greete Mary, which bestowed much labour on

B vs.

7 Salute Andronicus, and Iunia, my cosins and prisoners with me also, which are well taken among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrban, our helpe in Christ, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Appelles, approued in Christ, Salute them which are of Aristobulus houshold.

11 Salute Herodian my kinsman. Greete them that be of the houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

12 Salut Tryphena, and Tryphosa, which labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Herman, Patrobas, Hermetus and the brethren which are with them.

C 15 Salute Philologus, and Iulia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse, The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Nowe I beseech you brethren marke them which cause diuision, and giue occasions of euill, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoyd them.

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne belly, and with sweet and flattering wordes deceiue the hearts of the innocents.

19 For your obedience is come abroad vnto all men I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, & simple concerning euill.

20 The God of peace shall treade Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my worke fellow, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you.

22 I Tertius which wrote this Epistle salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus his brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.

25 To him that is of power to stablish you, according to my Gospell and preaching of Iesus Christ, by reuealing of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began,

26 But nowe is opened, and by the scriptures of the prophets, at the commaundement of the euerlasting God to the obedience of faith, among all nations published:

27 To the same God wise onely, be glory through Iesus Christ, for euer, Amen.

¶ This Epistle was written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe the minister of the Church of Cenchrea.

The

# The first Epistle of Saint *Paul the Apostle to the* Corinthians.

## The first Chapter.

a Hee praiseth the great graces of God shewed towards them. 10. Exhorting them to concord and humility.

1 PAul called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God and brother Sosthenes.

2 Unto the Church of GOD which is at Corinthus, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus: saints by calling, with all that call on the name of our Lorde Jesus Christ in euery place, both theirs and ours.

3 Grace be unto you and peace from God our father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for the grace of God which is given you in Jesus Christ

5 That in all things ye are inriched in him in all vtterance, and in all knowledge.

6 As the testimony of Jesus Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye are destitute of no gift, waiting for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ

8 Which shall also stablish you to the end, that ye may bee blamelesse in the day of our Lorde Jesus Christ.

9 God is faithfull, by whome ye have beene called vnto the fellowship of his sonne Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 Nowe I beseech you brethren by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speake one thing, and that there be no dissentions among you, but that ye

pee be perfectly ioyned together in the same mind and in the same meaning. Num. 23
1 Cor 10

11 For it hath been declared vnto me, my brethren of you, by them which are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 This I say, that euery one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I am of Apollo, and I am of Cephas, and I am of Christ. Actes 18
1. Cor. 3. and. 16 c

13 Is Christ deuided? Was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized in the name of Paul.

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius.

15 Least any shoulde say, that I had baptized in mine owne name.

16 I baptized also the household of Stephana: Besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sente me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospell: not with wisedome of wordes, least the crosse of Christ shoulde bee made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the crosse, is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saued, it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and will cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent. Rom. 3. b
Esay 29.

20 Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made the wisedome of this world foolish? Esay 33.

21 For after that in the wisedome of God, the world through their wisedome knewe not God, it pleased God through foolishnes of preaching, to saue them that beleeue. D

22 For the Iewes require a signe, & the Greekes seeke after wisedome. Matt. 12. d
Luk 11 d

23 But we preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbling block, and vnto the Greekes foolishnes

24 But vnto them which are called, both Iewes and Greekes, Christ, the power of God, and the wisedome of God

25 For the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and

and the weakenesse of God is stronger then men.

26 Brethren, see your calling, howe that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things that are mightie:

28 And vnsible things of the world, and things which are despised hath God chosen, yea and things which are not, to bring to naught things that are.

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 And of him are ye in Christ Iesus, which of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnesse and sanctification, and redemption.

31 That according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

## The II. Chapter.

1 He putteth for example his maner of preaching which was according to the tenor of the Gospell.

AND I brethren, when I came to you, came not in glorious wordes, or of wisedome shewing vnto you the testimonie of God.

2 For I esteemed not to know any thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was amonge you in weakenesse, and in feare, and in much trembling.

4 And my wordes and my preaching was not with enticing wordes of mans wisedome, but in the shewing of the spirit and of power.

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 And we speake wisedome among them that are perfect: not the wisedom of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to naught,

7 But we speake the wisedome of God in a mistery, euen the hid wisedome which God ordeined before the world vnto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew:

For

For had they knowne it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glory. Actes 13

9 But as it is written, The eye hath not seene, & the eare hath not heard, neither haue entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that loue him. Esay 63.

10 But God hath reuealed them vnto vs by his spirite: For the spirite searcheth all things, yea the deepe things of God. Rom 8.a

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of man which is in him? Euen so the things of God, knoweth no man but the spirite of God.

12 And wee haue not receiued the spirite of the world, but the spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are giuen to vs of God.

13 Which things also we speake, not in the words which mans wisedome teacheth: comparing spirituall things with spirituall things.

14 But the naturall man perceiueth not the things of the spirit of God, for they are foolishnes vnto him: Neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. C

15 But he that is spirituall, discerneth all things yet he himselfe is iudged of no man. Rom. 8. a

16 For who hath knowne the minde of the Lord, that he might instruct him? But we haue the minde of Christ. Esay 40.

## The iii. Chapter.

3. Paul rebuketh the sectes and authors thereof. 23. Christ is the foundation of the Church.

AND I could not speake vnto you brethren as vnto spirituall, but vnto carnall, euen as vnto babes in Christ. A

2 I haue nourished you with milke, and not with meate: for ye then were not strong, neither are ye as yet.

3 For ye are yet carnall: Seeing then there is among you enuying, and strife, and sects, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

4 For while one sayth, I am of Paul and another I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 For what is Paul? what is Apollo? but ministers by whom ye beleeued, euen as the Lord gaue to euery man.

6 I haue planted: Apollo watered: but God gaue the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither hee that watereth: but God that giueth the increase.

8 He that planteth, and he that watereth are one and euery man shall receiue his reward according to his labour.

Ephes. 2d

9 For wee together are Gods labourers, ye are Gods husbandry: ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God, which is giuen vnto me, as a wise master builder haue I layde the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let euery man take heede how he buildeth vpon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay then that is laid, which is Iesus Christ.

12 If any man build on this foundation, gold, siluer, precious stones, timber, hay, or stubble:

13 Euery mans worke shalbe made manifest. The day shall declare it, because it shalbe reuealed by the fire, and the fire shall trie euery mans worke what it is.

14 If any mans worke that he hath built vpon abide, he shall receiue a reward.

15 If any mans worke burne, he shall suffer losse, but hee shall be saue himselfe: yet as it were through fire.

1. Cor. 6d

16 Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man defile the temple of God him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you seeme to himselfe to be wise in this world, let him become a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For

19 For the wisedome of this worlde is foolishnes with God: for it is written, He compasseth the wise in their owne craftines. Iobs 5. b

20 And againe, The Lord knoweth the thoughtes of the wise, that they be vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glorye in men: for all thinges are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, either the worlde, either life, or death, whether thinges present, or thinges to come, all are yours:

23 But ye are Christes, and Christ is Gods.

The iii. Chapter

1 After that he had described the office of a true Apostle.
3. Seeing they did not acknowledge him such a one.
4. He appealeth to Gods iudgement.

LEt a man so esteem of vs as the ministers of Christ and disposers of the secrets of God. 1 Cor. 4. Deu. 29.

2 Furthermore it is required in the dispossers, that a man be found faithfull.

3 With mee it is but a very small thing that I should be iudged of you, either of mans iudgement: yea, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me is the Lord.

5 Therefore iudge nothing before the time, until the Lorde come, who will light the hidden thinges of darkenes, and open the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these thinges brethren, I have figuratively applyed vnto my selfe and to Apollos for your sakes that ye might learne by vs, not to be wise above that which is written, that you swell not one against another for any mans cause.

7 For who seperateth thee? And what hast thou that thou hast not received? If thou have received it, why doest thou glorye as though thou haddest not received it? 25

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have raigned as kings without vs, and I would to God ye did

did raigne, that we might also raigne with you.

Psal. 64. Rom. 8.f 9 For me thinketh that God hath set forth us which are the last Apostles, as it were men appointed to death. For we are made a gasing stocke vnto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We are fooles for Christes sake, but ye are wise in Christ. We are weake, but ye are strong. Ye are honorable, but we are despised.

11 Euen vnto this time, we both hunger & thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place.

12 And labour, working with our owne handes: being reuiled, we bleste: being persecuted, we suffer it.

Acts 20. 1 Thess 2. 2 Thess 3.

13 Being defamed, we pray: we are made as the filthynesse of the world, and are the offscouring of all things vnto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though ye haue ten thousand instructours in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers. For in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospell.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, who shal put you in remembrance of my wayes which be in Christ, as I teach euery where in all churches.

18 Some are puffed, as though I would come no more at you.

Acts 18. Hebr. 6.a

19 But I will come to you shortly if the Lord will, and will know, not the wordes of them which are puffed, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? Shall I come vnto you with a rodde? or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

## The v. Chapter.

1 He reproueth sharply their negligences in punishing him which

which had committed incest. 3 Willing them to excommunicate him. 6 to imbrace puritie. 9 and flee wickednesse.

IT is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not named among the Gentiles; that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp, and have not rather sorrowed, that he that hath done this deede, might bee taken from among you.

3 For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirite, have determined already, as though I were present, that he that hath so done this deede,

4 In the name of our Lord Iesus Christ, you being gathered together, and my spirite with you, with the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 To deliuer such a one vnto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirite may bee saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therefore the old leauen, that ye may be a new lumpe, as ye are vnleauened. For euen Christ our Passeouer is offred vp for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe holy day, not with old leauen, neither with the leauen of maliciousnesse and wickednesse, but with the vnleauened bread of pureness and trueth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not companie with fornicators.

10 Yet not meaning altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters, for then must ye needes haue gone out of the world.

11 But now I write vnto you not to companie together, if any that is called a brother bee a fornicator, or couetous, or a worshipper of idols, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with him that is such a one eate not.

12 For what haue I to doe to iudge them that are

without? do ye not iudge them that are within?
13 Them that are without, God shall iudge, And
Deut. 13 ye shall put away from among you that wicked person.

The vi. Chapter.

7 Christians ought rather to suffer. 12. He reproueth the abusing of Christian libertie. 15 and sheweth that we ought to serue God purely, both in body and soule.

1 DAre any of you hauing businesse with another, be iudged vnder the vniust, and not rather vnder the saints?
2 Do ye not know that the saints shall iudge the world? If the world shall be iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?
3 Know ye not how that we shall iudge the An-
Mat 7.d gels? How much more things that pertaine to this life?
4 If then ye haue iudgement of things pertaining to this life, set them vp to iudge which are least esteemed in the Church.
5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that shall be able to iudge betweene his brethren?
6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that vnder the vnbelieuers?
2B 7 Now therefore there is vtterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another, Why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather suffer yee not harme?
8 Nay, ye your selues do wrong, and doe harme and that to your brethren.
Galt. 5. d 9 Know ye not that the vnrighteous shall not in-
Ephes. 5. t herit the kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselues with mankind
10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor reuilers, nor pillers shall inherite the kingdome
Eccles. 37 of God.
1. Cor 10 11 And some such like you were, but ye are washed

but ye are ſanctified, but yee are iuſtified in the Name of the Lord Ieſus, and by the ſpirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto me, but all things are not profitable: all things are lawfull vnto mee, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any.

13 Meates for the belly, and the belly for meates: but God ſhall deſtroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God both hath raiſed vp the Lord, and ſhal raiſe vs vp by his power. 1. Cor. 6

15 Knowe yee not that your bodies are the members of Chriſt? Shall I then take the members of Chriſt, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is coupled with an harlot, is one body? For two (ſaith he) ſhall be one fleſh.

17 But he that is coupled vnto the Lord, is one ſpirit. Gen. 2. Matt. 19 Mark 10 Ephel. 5

18 Flee fornication. Euery ſinne that a man doth is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, ſinneth againſt his owne bodie.

19 What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghoſt which is in you, whom ye haue of God, and ye are not your owne.

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your ſpirite, which are Gods.

## The vii. Chapter.

The Apoſtle anſwereth to to certaine queſtions which the Corinthians deſire to know.

NOw as concerning the things whereof ye wrote vnto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman,

2 Neuertheleſſe to auoid fornication, let euery man haue his owne wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband,

3 Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence: likewiſe alſo the wife vnto her husband.

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husband: And likewise also the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not the one the other, except it be
Tob 6..d with both your consents for a time, that ye may giue
Ioel. 2. d your selues to fasting and prayer: and afterwarde come together againe, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 This I say of fauour, and not of commaundement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my
25 selfe: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, another after that.

1.Tim.5 8 I say therefore to the vnmarried and widdowes it were good for them if they abide euen as I:

9 But if they cannot abstaine, let them marrie, for for it is better to marry then to burne.

10 Vnto the married commaund, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if shee depart, let her remaine vnmar-
Matt.5.c ried, or be reconciled to her husband againe: And let
and 19.a not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the remnant speake I, not the Lord If any brother haue a wife that be[illegible]neth not, and shee consent to dwell with him, let [illegible] not put her away.

13 And the woman which [illegible]th to her husband an infidell, and he consent to dw[illegible] with her, let her not put him away.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified by the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children vncleane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not made subiect in such things: but God hath called vs in peace.

16 For howe knowest thou, O woman, whether thou shalt saue thy husband? Or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke, so

so ordaine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not adde uncircumcision: Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commaundements of God.

20 Let euery man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called a seruant? Care not for it: neuertheless, if thou mayest be made free, vse it rather. 2. Tim.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a seruant is the Lords free man: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christs seruant.

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the seruants of men.

24 Brethren let euery man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgines, I haue no commandement of the Lord, yet giue I counsell as one that hath obteined mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore that it is good for the present necessity, that I say it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned: & if a virgine marry she hath not sinned: neuertheless, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: But I beare with you.

29 But this I say brethren, because the time is short: it remaineth that they also which haue wiues, be as though they had none: Psa. 90. 2. Pet. 3.

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not, and they that buy, as though they possessed not.

31 And they that vse this world, as not abusing it For the fashion of this world goeth away. Esay 60. 1. Iohn 2

32 I would haue you without care. He that is vnmaried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord Matt. 6 d Luke 6. c

how he may please the Lord:

33 But hee that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference betweene a Virgin and a wife: The vnmaried woman careth for the things that are of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: But shee that is maried careth for the things that pertaine to the world, how shee may please her husband.

35 This I speake for your profite: not that I may cast a snare vpon you, but for comlines sake, and sitting fast vnto the Lord without separation.

36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgin if she passe the time of marriage, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them be married.

37 Nevertheless, hee that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no need, but hath power ouer his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that hee will keepe his virgin he doth well.

38 So then, he that giueth in marriage, doth well: but he that giueth not in marriage, doth better.

Rom. 7. c 39 The wife is bound vnto the lawe as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband bee dead, shee is at libertie to be married to whom shee will, onely in the Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my iudgement: And I thinke verily that I haue the spirit of God.

## The viii. Chapter.

1 He rebuketh those that vse their libertie to the slaunder of others in going to the Idolatrous sacrifices

NOw touching things offered vnto idoles, we know
Acts 5. d that we all haue knowledge, knowledge maketh a man swell: but charitie edifieth.

2 If any man thinketh that he knoweth any thing he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowne of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice vnto Idoles wee know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 And though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen or in earth, (as there be gods many, and Lords many.) I Cor 10.

6 Yet vnto vs is there but one God, which is the father, of whom are all things, and we in him and our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, and wee by him.

7 But there is not in euery man that knowledge: For some hauing conscience of the idoll vnto this houre, eate as a thing offred vnto Idols, and their conscience being weake, is defiled. 2B 1. Cor. 8

8 But meate doth not commend vs to God: for neither if we eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not haue we the lesse.

9 But take heede least by any meanes this liberty of yours become a stumbling to them that are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meate in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weake be boldned to eate those things that are offered vnto Idols.

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weake brother perish for whom Christ died:

12 But when ye sinne against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore, if meate offend my brother I will eate no flesh while the world standeth least I should offend my brother. Rom. 14

## The ix. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them by his examples to vse libertie to others edification.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my worke in the Lord? 2I Actes 18

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto others, yet doubtlesse I am vnto you: for the seale of mine Apostleship

are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answere to them that aske me, is this.

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Haue we not power to lead about a sister a woman, as well as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?

6 Is the liberty of not labouring taken from me and Barnabas onely?

B 7 Who goeth a warfare any time of his own cost? Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit there of? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things after the manner of men? or saith not the law the same also?

Deut 25 9 For it is written in the lawe of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzell the mouth of the Oxe that treadeth out the corne. Doth God take care for oxen?

10 Either saith he not it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt this is written: that he which eareth, should eare in hope: & that he which thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 If wee haue sowne vnto you spirituall things, is it a greate thing if wee shall reape your carnall things?

12 If others be partakers of their power ouer you, wherefore are not we rather? Neuertheles, wee haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things, least wee should hinder the Gospell of Christ.

13 Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, eat of the things of the temple? & they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 Euen so hath the Lorde ordayned, that they C which preach the Gospell should liue of the Gospell.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things, Neuertheless, I wrote not these things, that it should bee matt 10. so done vnto me. For it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my reioycing in vaine.

Acts 20 16 For if I preach the Gospell, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is layd vpon me. But woe is

is vnto me if I preach not the Gospell.

16 For if I do this thing with a good will, I haue a reward: but if against my will, the dispensation is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? Verily that when I preach the Gospell, I may make the Gospell of Christ free, that I misuse not mine authoritie in the Gospell.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnto all men, that I might winne the more.

20 Vnto the Iewes I become as a Iewe, that I might winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the law, as vnder the lawe, that I might winne them that are vnder the law. Actes 16 Galat 2a

21 To them that are without law, as without law (when I was not without law, as pertaining to the lawe of God, but was in the lawe of Christ) that I might winne them that are without law.

22 To the weake became I as weake, that I might winne the weake: I am made all things to all men that I might by all meanes saue some. 1. Cor 10

23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race, runne all, but one receiueth the reward? (So runne, that ye may obtaine.)

25 Euery man that proueth masterie, abstaineth from all things: and they doe it to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we to obtaine an incorruptible crowne. 2. Tim. 4 1. Pet 5d

26 I therefore so runne, not as at an vncertaine thing, so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.

27 But I tame my body, and bring it into subiection: least by any meanes that when I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be a castaway.

## The x. Chapter.

1 He feareth them with the examples of the Iewes, that they put not their trust carnally in the graces of God.

14 Exhorting them to flee all idolatry, and offence of

their

their neighbours.

10 BRethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant how that al our fathers were vnder the cloud, and all passed through the sea

2 And were all baptized vnto Moses in the cloud and in the sea,

3 And did all eate of the same spirituall meate.

4 And did all drinke of the same spirituall drinke: (for they dranke of that spirituall rocke that followed them: and that rocke was Christ.)

5 But in many of them had God no delight: for they were ouerthrowne in the wildernesse.

6 These things were our ensamples, that we should not be lusters after euill things, as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them: as it is written, The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed fornication, and fell in one day three and twentie thousand.

Exod 32

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them tempted, and were destroyed of Serpents.

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 All these things happened vnto them for ensamples: but they are written for our admonition, vpon whom the endes of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh hee standeth take heede least he fall.

Num. 14
1 Cor. 8
2. Thesse.
3. Pet. 2

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as followeth the nature of man: but God is faithful, which shall not suffer you to be tempted aboue that ye are able, but will with the temptation make a way to escape, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore, my deerely beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue discretion: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not

the

the partaking of the bloud of Christ? the bread which we breake, is it not the partaking of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, inasmuch as wee are all partakers of one bread.

18 Behold Israell which is after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the Idoll is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice to Idoles is any thing?

20 But this I say that the things which the Gentiles offer in sacrifice: they offer to deuils and not to God: and I would not that yee should haue fellowship with the deuils.

21 Ye can not drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of deuils: ye cannot bee partakers of the Lordes table, and of the table of deuils.

22 Either doe wee prouoke the Lorde to anger? What are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for mee, but all thinges are not expedient: All things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne: but euery man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is sold in the market, that eate asking no question for conscience sake.

26 For the earth is the Lords, and the plenty thereof.

27 If any of them which beleeue not, bid you to a feast, and when yee be disposed to goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you. This is offered in sacrifice vnto Idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake, The earth is the Lords and the plenty thereof.

29 Conscience I say, not of thine owne selfe, but of the other: for why is my libertie iudged of another mans conscience?

30 For, if I by Gods benefite may bee partaker of

the

1 Cor 8c

Ecclu. 37

1 Cor. 13

Psal. 24.

the giftes of God, why am I euill spoken off, for that wherefore I giue thankes?

1. Tim. 4. Colos 3. 31 Whether therefore yee eate or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye do, do all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes nor yet to the Grecians, neither to the church of God.

1 Cor. 9. 33 Euen as I please all men in all things not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saued.

## The xi Chapter.

1 Hee rebuketh the abuses which were crept into their Church. 4. as touching prayer, or prophecying. 18 And ministring the Lords supper. 23. Bringing them againe to the first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ.

2 I commend you brethren that ye remember all my things, and keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them vnto you.

Gen 1. d. Ephes. 5. c. 3 But I will that yee know, that Christ is the head of euery man, and the man is the womans head and God is Christs head.

4 Euery man praying or prophecying, hauing ought on his head, shameth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophecieth bare headed, dishonesteth her head: for that is euen all one as if she were shauen.

Deut 22. 6 If the woman bee not couered, let her also bee shorne: if it be a shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

25

7 A man ought not to couer his head: for as much as he is the image and glory of God. but the woman is the glory of the man.

Gen 1. 9. d. 8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to haue power on her head, for the angels sake.

11 Neuertheless, neither is the man without the woman,

woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, euen so is the man also by the woman, but all things of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, whether it be comly that a woman pray vnto God bare headed?

14 Doth not nature it selfe teach you, that it is a ¶ shame for a man, if he haue long haire?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise for her: for her haire is giuen her for a couering.

16 If any man list to striue, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 This I warne you of, and commend not that ye come together for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there bee diuisions among you, and I partly beleeue it.

19 For there must also be heresies among you, that they which are approued among you might be knowen Matt. 18

20 When yee come together therefore into one place, ye cannot eate the Lords Supper:

21 For euery one preuenteth other, in eating of ¶ his owne supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What haue ye not houses to eate and drinke in? Or despise yee the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? What shall I say vnto you, shall I praise you? in this I praise you not.

23 That which I deliuered vnto you, I receiued of the Lord, that the Lord Iesus the same night in the which he was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, and Matt. 26 said, Take ye, eate ye, this is my body which is bro- Mark. 14 ken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me. Luk 22 b

25 After the same manner also he tooke the cuppe when he had supped, saying, This cup is the newe Testament in my bloud: this do ye as oft as ye drink it in remembrance of me. 1. Pet. 2 b

26 For as oft as ye eate this bread, and drink this Actes 1 b

cup

cup, yee doe shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore whosoeuer shall eate this bread, & drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shall be guilty of the body and bloud of the Lord.

2 Cor 12 Eccle. 18. 28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup:

29 For hee that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation vnto himselfe, making no difference of the Lords body.

30 For this cause many are weake & sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if wee would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be damned with the world.

Iohn 3. e 33 Wherefore my brethren, when yee come together to eate, tarry one for another.

34 If any man hunger, let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. The rest will I set in order when I come.

The xii. Chapter.

1 The diuersitie of the gifts of the holy Ghost, ought to be vsed to the edifying of Christes Church. 12. As the members of mans body serue to the vse one of another.

NOw concerning spirituall gifts brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, caried away vnto dumbe idoles, euen as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I declare vnto you, that no man speaking by the spirit of God, defieth Iesus: also no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

Mark 9 f Rom. 18. 4 There are diuersities of gifts, but it is the selfe same spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but it is the selfe same God.

6 And there are diuers maners of operations: but it is the selfe same God which worketh all in all.

25 Ephe. 4 b 7 The manifestation of the spirit is giuen to euery man to profite withall:

8 For

8 For to one is giuen by the ſpirite the worde of wiſdome, to another the worde of knowledge by the ſame ſpirite:

9 To another is giuen faith by the ſame ſpirit: to another the gift of healing by the ſame ſpirit:

10 To another power to do miracles, to another prophecie, to another diſcerning of ſpirites, to another diuers kinds of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But theſe all worketh euen that one and the ſelfe ſame ſpirit, deuiding to euery man ſeuerally euen as he will. 1. Ioh. 4.

12 For as the body is one and hath many members, and all the members of that one body being many, are one body: euen ſo is Chriſt alſo. Rom. 12.

13 For by one ſpirit are we all baptized into one body, whether wee be Iewes or Gentiles: whether we be bond or free: and haue all drunk of one ſpirit. Epheſ. 4. b

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote do ſay, Becauſe I am not the hand I am not of the body: is it not therefore of the body Eſay 55 C

16 And if the eare do ſay, becauſe I am not the eie I am not of the body: is it not therefore of the body?

17 If all the body were an eye, where were then the hearing? If all were hearing, where were the ſmelling?

18 But now hath God ſet the members, euery one of them ſeuerall in the body, as it hath pleaſed him.

19 If they were all one member, where were the body?

20 Now are there many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot ſay vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor againe the head to the feete, I haue no neede of you. D

22 Yea rather a great deale thoſe members of the body which ſeeme to be more feeble are neceſſary:

23 And vpon thoſe members of the body which wee thinke to be leſſe honourable: we owe more honour

and

and our vncomely parts haue more comelinesse.

24 For our comely members haue it not: but God hath tempered the body together, hauing giuen the more honour to that part which lacked.

25 That there should be no rifte in the body: but that the members should haue the same care one of another.

26 And if one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: if one member be honoured, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Ye are the body of Christ, and members in part.

28 And God hath ordeined some in the church first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that haue power, after that the gift of healings, helpers, gouernours, kindes of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

Matt 10.
Luk 11.c
Ephes 4.c

30 Haue all the gift of healing? do all speake with tongues? do all interprete?

31 Couet earnestly the best gifts. And yet shew I vnto you a more excellent way.

## The XIII. Chapter.

1 Because loue is the foundaine and rule of edifying the Church, hee setteth forth the nature, office, and praise thereof.

THough I speake with the tongues of men, and of angels, and haue not charitie, I am as sounding braſſe, or as a tinckling Cimbale.

2 And though I haue prophecie, and vnderstand all secrets, and all knowledge: yea, if I haue all faith so that I can remoue mountaines, and haue no charitie, I am nothing.

Luk 17.c

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poore, and though I giue my body that I should be burned, and haue not charitie, it profiteth nothing.

4 Charitie suffereth long, and is courteous: charitie enuieth not, charitie doth not frowardly, swelleth not.

5 Dealeth not dishonestly, seeketh not her owne,

is

6 Reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the truth.

Phil. 3. 3

7 Suffereth all things, beleeueth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

Ioh. 16

8 Though there be prophesyings, they shall faile; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is imperfect shall be done away.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I vnderstood as a child, I imagined as a child: but assoone as I was a man, I put away childish things.

12 Now we see through a glasse, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know, euen as I am known.

13 Now abideth faith, hope, and charitie, these three, but the chiefe of these is charitie.

## The xiiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth to charitie, commendeth the gift of tongues and other spirituall gifts, but chiefely prophesying.

FOllow after charitie, and couet spirituall gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in a vnknowne tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth him, howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and exhortation, and consolation.

4 He that speaketh in an vnknowne tongue, edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

1. Cor. 12. Rom. 12. Num. 11

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret it, that the Church may receiue

6 Moreouer brethren, if I come vnto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profite you, except I shal speake to you either by reuelation, or by knowledge or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And euen things without life giuing sound whether it be a pipe or a harpe, except they haue a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 For if the Trumpe giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare to the battell?

9 So likewise ye except ye vtter easie words by the tongue, how shall it be vnderstanded what is spoken? for ye shall speake into the aire.

10 There are peraduenture so many kindes of voices in the world, and none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be vnto him that speaketh an aliant, & he that speaketh shall be an aliant vnto me.

12 Euen so ye, forasmuch as ye are couet spirituall gifts, seeke that ye may excell, vnto the edifying of the congregation.

13 Wherefore, let him that speaketh with tongues pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in a strange tongue, my spirite prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, & will pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and will sing with vnderstanding also.

16 For when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the roume of the vnlearned, say Amen, at the giuing thanks, seeing he vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

17 Thou verily giuest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake with tongues more then ye all.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue words with mine vnderstanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, then ten thousand words in

in vnknowne tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in vnderstanding: howbeit as concerning malignitie bee ye children, but in vnderstanding be ye perfect.

21 In the lawe it is written, With men of strange tongues, and strange lips will I speake vnto this people, and yet for all that will they not heare me, saith the Lord. Esay 28.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serueth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.

23 If therefore all the Church be come together into one place, and all speake with tongues, and there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which believe not, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that believeth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, he is iudged of all men.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling fallet downe on his face, hee will worship God, saying that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then brethren? when ye come together, euery one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a reuelation, hath an interpretation: let all things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake with tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, & let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge. 1. Iohn 4

30 If any reuelation bee made to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne and be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets are subiect to the prophets.

33 For God is not the author of confusion but of peace, as in all Churches of the Saintes.

34 Let your women keepe silence in the churches: Rom. 15 1. Tim 2 Gen 3 c 1 Cor 11 for it is not permitted vnto them to speake, but they are commanded to be vnder obedience, as also saith the law.

35 If they will learne any thinge, let them aske their husbandes at home: for it is a shame for a woman to speake in the Church.

36 Dyd ong the worde of God from you? either came it vnto you alone?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a prophet, either spirituall, let him knowe, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandementes of the Lord.

38 But if any man bee ignorant, let him bee ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesy, and forbid not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all thinges bee done honestly, and in order.

## The xv. Chapter.

He proueth the resurrection of the dead, 3. and first that Christ is risen.

MOreouer brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospell which I preached vnto you, which also ye haue receiued, and wherein ye haue continued,

2 By the which also ye are saued, if ye keepe the doctrine which I preached vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all, that which also I receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he arose the third day according to the scriptures:

Math. 28 John 20 Luke 24. 5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue,

6 After that he was seene of moe then fiue hundred brethren at once: of which, the more parte remaine vnto this day, and some are fallen a sleepe.

7 And

7 And after that he was seene of James, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all he was seene of me, as of one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not worthy to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all, yet not I, but the grace of God, which is with me. Acts 3 a Gala. 2 a

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so have ye believed.

12 If Christ be preached, how that he rose from the dead: how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 If there be no rising of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 If Christ bee not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine. C

15 Yea, and wee are found false witnesses of God, because wee have testified of God, howe that hee raised up Christ: whome hee raised not up, if so bee that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ risen.

17 If it be so that Christ is not risen, then is your faith vaine, ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 Then also they which are fallen a sleepe in Christ are perished.

19 If in this life onely wee have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and becomme the first fruites of them that slept.

21 For since by man came death, even so by man came the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as by Adam all die, even so by Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But [illegible] first fruits, afterward they that are Christs at his

Lcumbing.

24 Then commeth the end, when he shall haue deliuered vp the kingdome to God the father: when he shall haue put downe all rule, and all authority and power.

Psal 110 25 For he must reigne, till he hath put all his
Matt. 22 enemies vnder his feete.
Heb. 1 c 26 The last enemie that shalbe destroyed is death.

27 For, he hath put all things vnder his feete: But when he saith, all things are put vnder him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things vnder him.

Psal. 8. b 28 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then
Heb. 2. d shall the sonne also himselfe be subiect vnto him that put all things vnder him, that God may be all in all

29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for dead, if the dead rise not at all? Why are they then baptized for dead?

30 And why stande we in ieopardie euery houre?

31 I protest by your reioycing, which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If I haue fought with beastes at Ephesus after the maner of men, what aduantageth it me, if the dead rise not? Let vs eate and drinke for to morowe we die.

33 Be not deceiued: Euill wordes corrupt good maners.

34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sinne not: for some haue not the knowledge of God. I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised vp? and with what bodie do they come?

a Iohn 12 36 Thou foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that bodie that shalbe, but bare corne, it may chaunce of wheate, or of some other corne.

38 But God giueth it a bodie, as it hath pleased him, and to euery seede his owne bodie.

39 All

nature of fishes, of mans, another flesh of birds, & another of fishes, and another of beasts.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one and the glory of the terrestriall another.

41 There is one glory of the Sunne, and another glory of the Moone, and another glory of the starres. For one starre differeth from another starre in glory.

42 So also the resurrection of the dead, it is sowne in corruption, it riseth in incorruption.

43 It is sowne in dishonour, it riseth in honour. It is sowne in weakenesse, it riseth in power.

44 It is sowne a naturall body, it riseth a spirituall body: there is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body. Gen. 2. b

45 And so it is also written: The first man Adam was made a living soule, & the last Adam was made a quickning spirit.

46 Howbeit, that is not first which is spirituall, but that which is naturall, and then that which is spirituall.

47 The first man is of the earth, earthie: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthie, such are they that are earthie: And as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have borne the image of the earthie, we shall also beare the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say brethren, that flesh and bloud cannot inherit the kingdome of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery, We shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed. 1. Thes. 4. Phil. 3.

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the last trumpe. (For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall rise incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, Esay 25. Death is

tion, Death is swallowed vp into victorie.

55 O Death, where is thy sting? O hell where is thy victorie?

56 The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanked be vnto God, which giueth vs the victorie through the Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren be ye stedfast, vnmoueable, alwayes abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 He putteth them it remembrance of the gathering for the poore brethren at Hierusalem.

A Concerning the collection for the saints, as I haue
Acts 11. Rom. 15 ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, euen so doe ye.

2 Vpon some Sabboth day let euery one of you put aside by himselfe, laying vp as God hath prospered him, that then there bee no gathering when I come.

3 When I am come, whomsoeuer ye shall allow by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

Actes 11 4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall goe
1. Cor 16 with me:

5 I will come vnto you after I shall haue gone ouer Macedonia, (for I do now passe through Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way, whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I will not see you now in my passage but
26 I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord suffer me.

8 I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Whitsuntide.

1 Cor 15 9 For a great dore and effectuall is opened vnto
me,
Actes 19 and there are many aduersaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with
you without feare: for he worketh the worke of the
Lord

lord as I doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come, when he shall haue conuenient time. Acts 18 1 Cor 1b

13 Watch ye, stand ye fast in the faith, quite you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you brethren, (ye know the house of Stephana, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, & that they haue addicted themselues to the ministery of the saints.) I. Cor 1

16 That ye be also obedient to such, and to all that helpe with be, and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephana, Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking vnto me on your part, they haue supplied.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours, therefore know ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you. Greete ye one another with an holy kisse. Rom. 16

21 The salutation of me Paul, with mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus. Amen.

The first Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippos by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

The

# The second Epistle of S. Paul the Apostle to the Corinthians.

## The first Chapter.

4 He declareth the great profit that commeth to the faithfull by their afflictions.

1 PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and brother Timotheus, unto the Church of God, which is at Corinthus, with all the Saints which are in all Achaia.

Rom. 1. a 2. Co. 1 a Galat. 1 a Ephes 1 a 2. Pet. 1 a

2 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort.

4 Which comforteth us in all our tribulation: that we may be able to comfort them which are in all manner of trouble, with the comfort wherewith wee our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the afflictions of Christ are plentious in us: even so is our consolation plentious by Christ.

Colos. 1.

6 And whether we be troubled, it is for your consolation and salvation, which salvation is wrought by the suffering of the same afflictions which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation, 7 and our hope of you is stedfast: knowing that as ye are partakers of the afflictions, so ye shall be partakers also of the consolation.

8 For we would not brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble, which came unto us in Asia: that we were [illegible] above strength, insomuch

Acts 19.

2. Reg. 20. Deut. 32.

[illegible] the sentence of death in our selves, that we should not put our trust in our selves

but

but in God, which raiſeth the dead:

10 Who delivered vs from ſo great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we truſt that yet hereafter alſo he will deliver vs:

11 So that ye labour together in prayer for vs, that for the benefite beſtowed vpon vs by the meanes of many perſons, thankes may be geuen of many on our behalfe.

12 For our reioycing is this, the teſtimonie of our conſcience, that in ſimplicitie and godly pureneſſe, not with fleſhly wiſedome, but by the grace of God we haue had our conuerſation in the world, and moſt of all to you wardes. 2.Cor.4.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye read, or alſo that ye acknowledge: and I truſt ye ſhall acknowledge vnto the ende.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours in the day of the Lord Jeſus. C

15 And in this confidence was I minded firſt to haue come vnto you, that ye might haue had one pleaſure more. 1.Theſ.2 1.Co.16

16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led forth by you into Jewrie.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vſe lightneſſe? or minde I carnally thoſe things which I minde, that with me ſhould be yea yea, and nay nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our preaching vnto you, was not yea and nay.

19 For Gods ſonne Jeſus Chriſt, which was preached among you by vs, euen by me, and Siluanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him it was yea.

20 (For all the promiſes of God in him are yea, and are in him Amen) vnto the laude of God through vs.

21 And it is God which ſtabliſheth vs with you in Chriſt, and hath annoynted vs, is God: D

[illegible]

22 Which hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you, I came not as yet unto Corinth.

2 Pet. 3a 24 Not that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

## The II. Chapter.

14 Paul rejoyceth in God for the efficacie of his doctrine.

1 BUT I determined this in myself, that I would not come again to you in heaviness.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote the same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow of them, of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of great affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you, with many tears: not that ye should be made sorry, but that ye might perceive the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any man hath caused sorrow, he hath not grieved me, but partly, lest I should overcharge you all.

1. Cor. 5. 2 6 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch heaviness.

8 Wherefore I beseech you that you would confirm your love toward him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive anything, I forgive also: for if I forgave anything, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the sight of Christ.

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore

13 Furthermore, when I came to Troade, to preach Christes Gospell, and a dooze was opened vnto me of the Lord.

14 I had no rest in my spirite, because I found not Titus my brother, but when I had taken my leaue of them, I went out into Macedonia.

15 Now vnto God, which alwayes causeth vs to triumph in Christ, and vttereth the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

16 For we are vnto God the sweet sauour of Christ in them that are saued, and in them which perish.

16 To the one we are the sauour of death, vnto death: and vnto the other, the sauour of life vnto life. And who is meete vnto these things?

17 For we are not as many are, which chop and change with the word of God: but as of pureness, but as of God, in the sight of God, speake we in Christ.

## The iii. Chapter.

Paul excuseth his apostleship, and disalloweth the braggers of the false apostles.

DO wee begin to commend our selues againe? Or need we, as some, epistles of commendation vnto you, or letters of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, vnderstood and read of all men.

3 For as much as ye are manifestly declared that ye are the epistle of Christ ministred by vs, written not with inke, but with the spirite of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 Such confidence haue we through Christ to God-ward,

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues, to thinke any thing as of our selues: but our sufficiencie is of God,

6 Which hath made vs able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirite: For the letter killeth, but the spirite giueth life.

7 But if the ministration of death in letters grauen in stones, was with glory, so that the children of

Exod 42
Deut 5d
Iere 31.a

Philp.3.b
1.Cor.4.b

Israel

Israell, could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which glory is done away.

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be much more in glory?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministerie of righteousnes exceede in glory.

10 For euen that which was glorified, was not glorified in this behalfe, because of the exceeding glory.

11 For if that which is put away, was glorious: much more that which remaineth, is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such hope, we vse great boldnesse of speach:

13 And not as Moses which put a vaile ouer his face, that the children of Israell should not stedfastly looke into the end of that which is abolished.

14 But their mindes were blinded: for vntill this day remaineth the same vaile vntaken away in the reading of the old testament, which vaile is put away in Christ.

15 But euen vnto this day when Moses is read the vaile is laid vpon their heart.

16 Neuertheles, when it shall turne to the Lord, the vaile shalbe taken away. Iohn 1. c

17 The Lord is the spirit: and where the spirit of the Lord is, there is libertie.

18 But we all beholding as in a mirrour the glory of the Lord, with open face, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, euen as of the spirit of the Lord.

## The IIII. Chapter.

1 He declareth his diligence, and soundnes in his office, 15 Shewing what profite commeth thereby.

THerefore, seeing that we haue such a ministerie, as we haue receiued mercy, we faint not:

2 But haue cast from vs the couerings of vnhonestie, walking not in craftinesse, neither handling the word

of

of God deceitfully, but in opening of the truth, commending our selues to euery mans conscience, in the sight of God.

3 If our Gospel be hid, it is hid in them that are lost:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which beleeue not, least the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ should shine vnto them, (who is the image of God.) Iohn 12.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake. Luke 2.f Iohn 12.

6 For it is God that commanded the light to shine out of darkenesse, who hath shined in our hearts for to giue the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ. Gen. 1.a Act. 26.b

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of vs. 2.Co. 5.a 16

8 We are troubled on euery side, yet are we not without shift: we are in pouertie, but not in extreame pouertie.

9 We are persecuted, but are not forsaken therein: we are cast downe, but we perish not.

10 We alwaies beare about in the body, the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also be made manifest in our body. Gal. 6.d

11 For we which liue, are alwaies deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh. Rom. 1.c

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life for you.

13 Seeing then that we haue the same spirit of faith, (according as it is written, I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken:) we also beleeue, and therefore speake. Psa. 116.

14 Knowing that he which raised vp the Lord Iesus, shall raise vs also by the meanes of Iesus, and shall set vs with you.

15 For all things do I for your sakes, that the plenteous grace by the thanksgiuing of many, may re- 1.Cor. 8.

dound

redound to the praiſe of God.

16 Wherefore we are not wearied: but though
our outward man periſh, yet the inward man is re-
newed day by day.

17 For the momentany lightneſſe of our tribula-
Pſal. 30. tion, prepareth an exceeding and an eternall weight
Rom. 8.d of glory vnto vs.

18 While we looke not on things which are ſeene
but on the things which are not ſeene. For the things
which are ſeene, are temporall: but the things which
are not ſeene, are eternall.

## The v. Chapter.

1 Paul proceedeth to declare the felicitie that commeth
by the croſſe.

A FOr we knowe that if our earthly houſe of this ta-
bernacle were deſtroyed, wee haue a building of
God, euen an habitation not made with handes, but
eternall in heauen.

2 And therefore ſigh we, deſiring vpon our clothing
to bee further clothed with our houſe which is from
heauen.

Rom. 8.d 3 If ſo be that we being clothed, ſhal not be found
naked.

1. Pet. 1c 4 For we that are in this tabernacle ſigh being bur-
Apoc 3 d dened, becauſe wee would not put of our clothing,
but vpon the ſame put on more, that mortality might
be ſwallowed vp of life.

Rom. 8.c 5 He that hath ordeined vs for the ſelfe ſame thing
2. Cor 1 d is God, which hath alſo giuen vnto vs the earneſt of the
ſpirit.

6 Therefore we are alway of good cheere, and
know that as long as we are at home in the body we
are abſent from the Lord.

B 7 (For we walke by faith, not after outward ap-
pearance.)

8 Neuertheleſſe, we are of good comfort, and had
rather to be abſent from the body, and to be preſent
with the Lord.

9 Wherefore whether we be at home, or from home
we endeuour our ſelues to be accepted vnto him.

10 For

10 For we must all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ, that euery man may receiue the workes of his body accordyng to that he hath done whether it be good or bad. Matt. 25. Rom. 14.

11 Knowyng therefore the feare of the Lord, we perswade men, but we are knowne well enough vnto God: I trust also that we are knowne in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you occasion to reioyce on our behalfe that ye may haue wherewithall against them which glorie in the face, and not in heart.

13 For if we be beside our selues, to God are we too feruent: if we keepe measure, for your cause keepe we measure.

14 For the loue of Christ constrayneth vs, because we thus iudge, that if one died for all, then were all dead.

15 And he died for all, that they which liue, should not hencefoorth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Where of henceforth knowe we no man after the flesh: And though we haue knowen Christ after the flesh: now knowe we him so no more. I. Thess.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away, behold all things are become new.

18 And all things are of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto himself by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie of reconciliation. Esai. 45. Apoc. 21. Rom. 3. 6.

19 For God was in Christ, reconcyling the world to himself, not imputing their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed vnto vs the word of the reconciliation. Colo. 1. c.

20 Now then are we messengers for Christ, euen as though God did beseech you through vs: we pray you in Christes stead, that ye be reconciled vnto God. Colos. 2. c.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, which



knew

knew no sinne, that we should be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

Esay. 53.
Rom. 8. a

## The vi. Chapter.

### An exhortation to christian life.

WE also as helpers vnto him exhort you, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine:

2 (For he saith, I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee. Behold, now is that acceptable time, behold, now is that day of saluation.)

Esay. 49.

3 Giuing no offence in any thing, that the ministrie be not blamed:

4 But in all things behauing our selues as the ministers of God in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in anguishes,

5 In stripes, in prisonments, in seditions, in labours in watchings, in fastings.

2. Cor. 4. f

6 By pureneſſe, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnes, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of verity, by the power of God, by the armour of righteouſneſſe on the right hand and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers and yet true:

9 As vnknowne, and yet knowen, as dying, and behold we liue: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowing, and yet alway merry, as poore, and yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitned in vs, but are straitned in your owne bowels.

13 Now for the same recompence, (I speak) as vnto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Bee not vnequally yoked together with vnbeleeuers. For what fellowship hath righteouſneſſe with vnrighteouſneſſe? or what communion hath light with darkeneſſe?

15 Or

15 Or what concord hath Christ with Belial? or
rather what part hath he that believeth, with an in- Matt. 7. 8
fidell?

16 Or what agreement hath the temple of God
with Idoles? for ye are the temple of the living god. 1. Cor 3b
as saith God, I will dwell in them, and walke in them Exod 29
and will be their God, and they shall be my people. Levit. 26

17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be Esay 52
ye seperated from them, saith the Lord, and touche
not the unclene thing, and I will receive you.

18 And will be a father unto you, and ye shall be
my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord almightie.

## The vii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them by the promise of God to keepe themselues pure.

HAuing therefore these promises (dearely beloued) 2
let us cleanse our selues from all filthines of the
flesh and spirit, perfecting holines in the feare of God.

2 Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have
corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condemne you, for I have
shewed you before, that ye are in our hearts to die &
live with you.

4 Mine great boldnesse of speech toward you, I
glory greatly to you: I am filled with comfort, and
am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our Actes 18
flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side:
without were fightings, within were feares.

6 Nevertheles, God that comforteth the humble
comforted us by the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming only, but also by the 2. Cor 12
consolation wherewith he comforted you, when he told
us your vehement desire, your mourning, your feruent
mind toward me: so that I reioyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I
repent not, though I did repent, for I perceive that
the same epistle made you sorry, though it were but
for a season.

9 I now reioyce, not that ye were made sorry, but

that ye were made sorry to repentance: ye were made sorry to Godward, that in nothing ye might be hurt by vs.

Eccles. 30

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance vnto saluation, not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this selfe same thing that ye were made sorry to Godward, how much care it hath wrought in you: yea what clearing of your selues, yea what indignation, yea what feare, yea what vehement desire, yea what zeale, yea what punishment: for in all things ye haue shewed your selues that ye were cleare in that matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the hurt, neither for his cause that was hurt: but that your good minde to vs ward might appeare among you in the sight of God.

13 Therefore we are comforted in your comfort: yea and exceedingly the more ioyed we for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 But if I haue boasted any thing vnto him of you, I haue not been ashamed therein: for as we speake all things vnto you in truth, euen so our boasting which I made vnto Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, while he remembreth the obedience of you all how with feare and trembling ye receiued him.

16 I reioyce that I haue confidence in you in all things.

## The viii. Chapter.

1 By the example of the Macedonians, 9. And Christ he exhorteth them to continue in receiuing the poore saints commending their good beginning.

MOreouer we doe you to wit, brethren, of the grace of God which was giuen in the Churches of Macedonia.

2 How that in much triall of affliction their ioy abounded, and their deepe pouertie abounded into the riches of their liberalitie.

3 For to their power (I beare them record) yea & beyond

beyond their powers, they were willing of themselues
4 Praying vs with great instance, that we would receiue this grace and fellowship of the ministrie which is toward the Saints.
5 And this they did not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues first to the Lord, and vnto vs, by the will of God.
6 That we should desire Titus to accomplish the same grace among you, euen as he had begun.
7 Now therefore as ye are plenteous in all things in faith, and in word, and in knowledge, and in all feruentnesse, and in all loue which ye haue to vs: euen so, see that ye be plenteous in this grace also.
8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the feruentnesse of other, and proouing the vnfainednesse of your loue.
9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ that though hee was rich, yet for your sakes hee became poore, that ye through his pouertie might be made rich.
10 And I giue counsell herein: For this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to doe only, but also to will a yeare agone. Rom. 15
11 Now therefore perfourme to doe it also: that as there appeareth in you a readinesse to will, euen so there may appeare a readinesse to perfourme, of that which ye haue. 1. Pet. 4. c
12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not. Prou. 3. b Mark. 12. a Luk. 21. a
13 Truely, not that other be eased, and ye burdened: C
14 But of like condition now at this time your abundance supplieth their want, that their abundance also may supplie your want, that there may be equalitie:
15 As it is written, He that had gathered much had nothing ouer: & he that had gathered little had no lack. Exo. 16. c
16 Thankes be vnto God which put the same earnest care for you in the heart of Titus

17 Because he accepted the exhortation: but being the more carefull, came of his owne accord vnto you.
18 We haue sent with him that brother whose praise is in the Gospell throughout all the Churches.
19 (And not that only, but hee was also chosen of the Churches to be a fellow with vs, in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready mind.)
Rom. 12.
20 Eschewing this, that any man should rebuke vs in this plenteous distribution that is ministred by vs:
21 Making prouision for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord but also in the sight of men.
22 We haue sent with them a brother of ours, whom we haue oftentimes proued diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence which I haue in you.
23 Whether any doe enquire of Titus, he is my fellow and helper concerning you: or of other which are our brethren, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.
1. Thess. 1.
24 Wherefore shew ye vnto them the proofe of your loue, and of our boasting on your behalfe in the sight of the churches.

## The ix. Chapter.

3 The cause of Titus and his companions comming to them.

FOr of the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you:
Acts. 11. 1 Cor. 16. 2 Cor. 8.
2 For I know the readines of your mind, wherof I boast on your behalfe vnto them of Macedonia, that Achaia was prepared a yeare agoe: & your zeale hath prouoked many.
3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, least our boasting of you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that (as I said) ye may be prepared.
4 Least happily if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you vnprepared, we (I will not say you) should be ashamed in this behalfe of boasting.
5 Therefore

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would come before unto you, & prepare your liberality (whereof ye had warning before) that it might be ready as a bountifulness, and not as an exaction.

6 This yet I say, he which soweth sparingly, shall reape sparingly: and he that soweth bountifully, shall reape bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give: not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerefull giver.

8 God is able to make you plentifull in all grace, Prou 11.
that ye in all things having alwayes sufficient unto Gala.6.b
the determinate, may be plentifull in every good worke Exod.25
9 As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad, he Eccle 35
hath given to the poore, his righteousnesse remay- Psal 112
neth for ever.

10 Moreover I beseech him that ministreth seede unto the sower, to minister bread also for foode, and to multiply your seede, and to increase the fruites of your righteousnes,

11 That in all things yee may bee made rich unto all bountifulnesse, which causeth through us thanksgiving unto God.

12 For the administration of this service, not only supplieth the want of the Saintes: but also is abundant by the thanksgiving of many unto God,

13 (Whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorifie God for the obedience of your confessing to the Gospell of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them and to all men.

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thankes bee unto God for his unspeakeable gift.

## The x. Chapter.

1 He toucheth the false apostles, and defendeth his authority, exhorting them to obedience.

I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenesse and

2 I beseech you that I may not nede to bee bold when I am present, with that same boldnesse, wherewith I am minded to haue been bold against some which reputeth vs as though we walked according to the flesh.

3 For walking in the flesh, yet do we not warre according to the flesh. Ephes. 5

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty through God, to the ouerthrowing of strong holdes.)

5 Wherewith we ouerthrow counsels and euerie high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bring into captiuitie all imaginations to the obedience of Christ.

28 6 And hauing in a readines wherewith to take vengeance on al disobedience, when our obedience is fulfilled.

7 Looke ye on things after the outer appearance? If any man trust in himself that he is Christs, let him consider this again of himselfe, that as he is of Christ, 2. Co. 13 even so are we of Christ.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, which the Lord hath giuen to vs for edification, & not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed.

9 Least I should seeme as it were to make you afraid by letters.

10 For the letters (saith he) are heauy and strong: but his bodily presence is weake, and his speach nothing worth.

11 Let him that is such a one, thinke on this wise, that as wee are in word by letters when wee are absent, such also are we in deede when we are present.

12 For we dare not number or compare our selues with certaine which praise themselues: neuertheles, while they measure themselues with themselues, & compare themselues with themselues, they vnderstand not

13 But we will not boast aboue measure: but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed vnto vs, a measure to reach euen vnto you

14 For we stretch not our selues beyond our

line,

ſure, as though we reached not vnto you: For euen vnto you alſo haue we come with the goſpel of Chriſt,

15 Not boaſting our ſelues out of meaſure in other mens labours: and we hope when your faith is increaſed, to be magnified among you, according to your meaſure abundantly,

16 That I may preach the Goſpel in thoſe regions which are beyond you: & not to glory of thoſe things which by another mans meaſure are prepared already.

17 But let him that glorieth, glorie in the Lord.

18 For he that commendeth himſelfe is not allowed, but whom the Lord commendeth.

The 11. Chapter.

2 He declareth his affection toward them. 5 The excellency of his miniſtery, 7 and his diligence in the ſame.

Would to God ye could ſuffer a litle my fooliſhneſſe, and in deed ye ſuffer me. A

2 For I am ielous ouer you with godly ielouſie: for I haue coupled you to one man to preſent you a chaſt virgin vnto the Lord.

3 But I feare leaſt by any meanes, that as the ſerpent beguiled Eue through his ſubtiltie, euen ſo your mindes ſhould be corrupted from the ſingleneſſe that is toward Chriſt.

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth an other Ieſus whom we haue not preached: or if ye receiue another ſpirit whom ye haue not receiued, either another Goſpell which ye haue not receiued, you would well haue ſuffered him. Gen. 3.4

5 Verily, I ſuppoſe that I was not behinde the cheife Apoſtles.

6 But though I be rude in ſpeaking, yet not in knowledge: but in all things among you wee haue beene well knowne to the vttermoſt.

7 Haue I committed an offence, because I ſubmitted my ſelfe, that ye might be exalted, becauſe I preached to you the Goſpel of God freely? B

8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them to doe you ſeruice.

9 And when I was preſent with you, and had neede

Acts 20. 33. 2. Cor. 12.

nerde, I was chargeable to no man by my seruice: for that which was lacking vnto me the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied: and in all things I haue kept me from beeing chargeable vnto you, and so will I keepe my selfe.

10 The truth of Christ is in me, that this boasting shall not be shut vp against me in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I loue not you? GOD knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that will I doe, that I may cut away occasion from them which desire occasion: that they might be found like vnto vs, in that where in they glory.

13 For such false Apostles are deceitfull workers, transformed into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no meruaile: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angell of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if that his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousnes: whose end shall be according to their workes.

16 I say againe, Let no man thinke that I am foolish: or else euen take me as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a little.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after the Lord: but as it were foolishly in this boldnesse of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, seeing ye your selues are wise.

20 For ye suffer, if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure, if a man take, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake (as concerning reproch) as though we had beene weake: howbeit, wherein soeuer any man is bold, (I speake foolishly) I am bold also.

Phil. 3. a

22 Are they

23 The

23 They are the ministers of Christ, (I speake as a foole) I am more, in labours more aboundantly, in stripes above measure, in prison more plentifully, in deathes oft.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie stripes saue one.

25 Thrise was I beaten with rods, once stoned, thrise suffered shipwracke, a night and a day haue I beene in the depth: Deut. 25. Actes 16 Actes 13

26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren. Actes 27 Acts 10

27 In labour and trauaile, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fasting often, in cold and nakednesse. Ch. 2. Cor. 9.

28 Besides the things which outwardly come vnto me: the trouble which presseth me daily, is the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weake, & I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things that concerne mine infirmities.

31 The GOD and father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore knoweth that I lie not.

32 In the citie of Damascus, the gouernour of the people appointed by king Aretas, layd waite in the citie of the Damascenes, desirous to haue caught me,

33 And at a window was I let downe in a basket thorough the wall, and escaped his hands. Acts 9. d

## The xii. Chapter.

1 He reioyceth in reuelations, & but chiefly in his humblenesse.

IT is not expedient vndoubtedly for me to glory, I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord

2 I knew a man in Christ aboue fourteene yeares a goe (whether in the body I cannot tell

or

or whether out of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth,) taken vp into the third heauen.

3 And I knew the same man (whether in the body or out of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth,)

4 How that he was taken vp into Paradise, and heard vnspeakable wordes, which is not lawfull for man to vtter.

5 Of such a man will I glorie, yet of my selfe will I not glorie, but in my infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glorie of them I shal not be a foole, for I will say the truth: but I now refraine, least any man should think of me, aboue that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

B 7 And least I should be exalted aboue measure
Iohn a.b through the abundance of the reuelations, there was giuen vnto me a pricke to the flesh, the messengers of Sathan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing besought I the Lord thrise, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakenesse. Most gladly therefore will I rather glorie in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ might dwell in me.

10 Therefore haue I delectation in infirmities, in rebukes, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguishes for Christes sake: For when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I am become a foole in glorying, ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue beene commended of
2.Cor.9.a you. For nothing was I inferiour vnto the chiefest Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truely the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you, in all patience, in signes, and wonders, and mightie deedes.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour vnto other Churches, except it be that I was not chargeable vnto you my selfe? forgiue me this wrong.

14 Behold,

14 Beholde, nowe the third time I am readie to come vnto you, and yet will I not be chargeable vnto you by my idlenesse: for I seeke not yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay vp for the parentes, but the parentes for the children. Acts 20. 2. Co. 11. Eccl. 4. 1. Reg. 3.

15 I will very gladly spend, and will be spent for your soules, though the more abundantly I loue you, the lesse am I beloued againe.

16 But be it that I was not chargeable vnto you: Neuertheles, being craftie I caught you with guile.

17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I sent vnto you?

18 I desired Titus, & with him I sent a brother. Did Titus defraud you of any thing? Haue we not walked in the same spirit? not in the same steps?

19 Againe, thinke you that we excuse our selues vnto you? We speake in Christ in the sight of God: but we doe all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shal not finde you such as I would, and that I shall be found vnto vnto you such as ye would not: least there be debates, enuyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings and seditions, Gal. 5. d

21 And that when I come againe, my God bring me low among you, & I shall bewaile many of them which haue sinned alreadie, and haue not repented of the vncleanes, & fornication, and wantonnes which they haue committed. 1 Cor. 5

## The xiii. Chapter.

1 He threatneth the obstinate. 5. And declareth what his power is by their owne testimonie.

NOw come I the third time vnto you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall euery word be established. Deut. 19. Matt. 18. John 8. c Hebr. 10 d

2 I told you before, & tell you before, as though I had been present with you the second time, so write I now being absent, to them which in time past haue sinned, and to all other: that if I come againe, I wil not spare,

3 Seeing that ye seeke experience of Christ, which
Matt. 10 speaketh in me, which to you ward is not weake,
but is mightie in you.

4 For though hee was crucified of weakenes, yet
liueth hee of the power of God: And we also are
in him: but wee shall liue with him by the might of
God to ward you.

1. Cor 11 5 Examine your selues whether ye are in the faith:
Eccles 18 proue your owne selues. Know ye not your
selues how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be
reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shal know that we are not re-
probates.

7 Truly I pray to God that ye do none euill, not
that we should seeme approued, but that ye should do
that which is honest, though wee bee as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for
the truth.

9 For wee are glad when wee are weake, and ye
are strong. Truely this also we wish, euen your per-
fection.

1. Co 16 10 Therefore write I these things being absent
least being present I should vse sharpenes, according
to the power which the Lord hath giuen mee to edifi-
cation and not to destruction.

1 Co. 16 11 Finally brethren farewell, be perfect, be of good
comfort, bee of one mind, liue in peace, and the God
of loue and peace shall bee with you.

12 Greete one another in an holy kisse.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the
loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost
be with you all. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippos, a cittie of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

The

# The Epistle of the Apostle

## Saint Paul to the Galathians.

### The first Chapter.

¶ Paul rebuketh their inconstancy which suffered themselves to be seduced by the false Apostles.

Grace be with you, and peace from God our father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 Which gave himself for our sinnes, to deliver us from this present euill world, according to the will of God, and our father. Rom. 8. a 1. Co. 15 a 2 Cor 11

5 To whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

6 I marueil that ye are so soone turned from him that had called you in the grace of Christ, vnto another Gospell:

8 Neuertheles, though we, or an Angel from heauen preach any other Gospell vnto you, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him bee accursed. Actes 23

9 As we said before, so say I now againe. If any man preach any other Gospell vnto you then that ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.

10 Doe I now perswade men or God? either doe I seeke to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the seruant of Christ? Iohn 12 d

11 I certifie you brethren, that the Gospell which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither receiued it of them, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For

13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time
past, in the Iewes religion, how that beyonde mea-
sure I persecuted the church of God and wasted it.
14 And profited in the Iewes religion aboue ma-
ny of my companions in mine owne nation, being a
1 Cor 15 very feruent maintainer of the traditions of my fa-
Phil. 3. a thers.
15 But when it pleased God, which seperated me
Acts 9. c from my mothers woombe, & called me by his grace.
16 To reueale [illegible] by
the [illegible]
17 Neither came I vp [illegible] them
which were Apostles before me: but I went into Arabia
and came againe vnto Damascus.
18 Then after three yeeres, I went vp to Hieru-
Matt. 16 salem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes.
19 But other of the Apostles saw I none, saue
Iames the Lords brother.
20 Now the things which I write vnto you, be-
hold before God I lie not.
21 After I came into the coastes of Syria and Cili-
cia, and was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of
Iurie which were in Christ.
22 But they had heard onely, that he which perse-
cuted vs in times past, now preacheth the faith which
before he destroyed.
23 And they glorified God in me.

## The II. Chapter.

1 Confirming his Apostleship to be of God. 3. he sheweth
why Titus was not circumcised.

Then fourteene yeares after I went vp againe to
A Hierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus
Acts 15. with me.
2 I went vp by reuelation, and I declared vnto
them the Gospell which I preach among the Gen-
tiles: but priuately vnto them which were esteemed
the cheefe: least by any meanes I should runne, or
had runne in vaine.
3 But neither Titus which was with mee, being
a

a Greeke, was compelled to be circumcised.

4 And that because of false brethren, brought in vnawares, which came in priuily to spie out our libertie which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom no not for an houre, we gaue place by subiection, that the truth of the Gospell might continue with you.

6 Of them which seemed to be somewhat, (what they were in times past it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person:) for they which seemed chiefe, added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospell of the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the Gospel of the circumcision was committed vnto Peter:

8 For hee that was mighty in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towardes the Gentiles.

9 And when they perceiued the grace that was giuen vnto me, then Iames, Cephas, and Iohn which seemed to be pillers gaue to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship: that we should be Apostles vnto the heathen, and they vnto the circumcision.

10 Onely that we should remember the poore wherein I also was diligent to doe the same.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. Acts 11. 2. Cor. 9.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames hee did eate with the gentiles: but when they were come hee withdrew and separated himselfe fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was brought into their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not the right way to the truth of the Gospell, I said vnto Peter before them all, If thou being a Iew, liuest after the manner of the Gentiles, and not as doe the Iewes: why compellest thou the Gentiles to liue as doe the

Iewes.

15 We which are Iewes by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the deedes of the lawe, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, and we Rom. 3.c. haue beleeued on Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the deedes of the lawe, because by the deedes of the law, no flesh shall be iustified.

17 If then, whyle we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we our selues also are found sinners: Is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the thinges which I destroyed, then make I my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through the lawe, am dead to the lawe that I might liue vnto God: I am crucified with Christ.

20 Neuertheles, I liue yet now not I, but Christ liueth in me: and the life which I now liue in the flesh I liue by the faith of the sonne of God, which loued Ephes. 5.c me, and gaue himselfe for me. Rom. 4.c

21 I reiect not the grace of God: for if righteousnes come of the lawe, then Christ is dead in vaine.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 Hee rebuketh them sharpely. 2. and proueth by diuers reasons that iustification is by faith.

O foolish Galathians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth: to whom Iesus Christ was before described before the eyes, & among you crucified?

2 This only would I learne of you: whether ye receiued the Spirit by the deedes of the lawe, or by the hearing of the faith?

3 Are ye such fooles, that whereas ye haue begun in the Spirit, ye would now end in the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffered so great things in vaine? If it be yet in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirite, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it through the

the deedes of the law, or by hearing of the faith?
6 Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was Gen. 15. Rom. 4, 2 Iam. 2. d 23
accounted vnto him for righteousnesse.
7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.
8 For the scripture seeing afore hand that God would iustifie the heathen through faith, shewed before hand glad tidinges vnto Abraham, saying, in thee shall all nations be blessed.
9 So then, they that bee of faith are blessed with the faithfull Abraham. Gen. 12. and 22. b
10 For as many as are of the deedes of the law, are vnder the curse: for it is written, Cursed is euery one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the law, to doe them.
11 But that no man is iustified by the lawe in the sight of God, it is euident: for the iust shall liue by faith. Deut. 27.
12 And the law is not of faith: but the man that doth them, shall liue in them. Abac. 2. a Rom. 10.
13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the law, being made a curse for vs: for it is written, Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree. Heb. 10. Leui. 18. Eze. 20
14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Iesus Christ, that wee might receiue the promise of the spirit through faith. Rom. 10 Deut. 21
15 Brethren, I speake after the manner of men: Though it be but a mans testament, yet if it be allowed, no man reiecteth it, or addeth thereto.
16 To Abraham and his seede was the promise made. He saith not, To the seedes, as of many: but, To thy seede, as of one, which is Christ. Gen. 13. d
17 This I say, that the lawe which began afterward, beyond foure hundred and thirtie yeares, doth not disanull the testament, that was confirmed afore of God vnto Christward, to make the promise of none effect. Exod 12 Iud 5. b Act. 7. c Rom. 4. c
18 For if the inheritance bee of the lawe, then not now of promise, But God gaue the inheritance vnto Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serueth the law? It was added
because of transgressions, till the seede should come,
Rom 5.c to whom the promise was made, and it was ordey-
Actes 7.g ned by Angels in the hand of a mediatour.

20 A mediatour is not a mediator of one, but God
is one.

Rom.7.c 21 Is the law then against the promise of God?
2.Tim.3 God forbid. For if there had bin a law giuen which
D could haue giuen life, then no doubt righteousnesse
should haue beene by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all vnder sin,
that the promise by the faith of Jesus Christ, should
be giuen vnto them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came we were kept vnder the
law, and were shut vp vnto the faith, which should af-
terward be reuealed

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolemaster vnto
Christ, that we should be iustified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer
vnder a schoolemaister.

26 For ye are all the children of God, by faith in
Christ Jesus.

27 For all ye that are baptized, haue put on Christ.

28 There is no Iew, neither Greeke, there is nei-
ther bond, nor free, there is neither male, nor female
for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 If ye be Christes, then are ye Abrahams seede
and heires according to the promise.

The iiii. Chapter.

3 Hee sheweth wherefore the ceremonies were ordeyned which being shadowes, must ende when Christ the truth commeth.

NOw I say that the heire as long as he is a childe,
Iohn.3.b differeth nothing from a seruant though he be lord
Iohn.3.b of all:

Rom.8.a 2 But is vndertutors and gouernours, vntill the
time appointed of the father.

3 Euen so we, when we were children, were in
bondage vnder the rudimentes of the world.

4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God
sent

sent his sonne made of a woman, and made vnder the law.

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the law that we might receiue the adoption of children.

6 Because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the spirit of his son into your hearts, crying, Abba father. Rom. 8. c

7 Wherefore, thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: if thou bee a sonne, thou art also an heyre of God through Christ. B

8 Notwithstanding when ye knew not God, yee did seruice vnto them, which by nature are no Gods

9 But now after that ye haue knowne God, yea rather are knowen of God: how turne ye againe vnto the weake and beggerly rudiments whereunto again ye desire a fresh to be in bondage.

10 Ye obserue dayes, and monethes, and times, & yeares.

11 I am in feare of you, least I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you be as I am. for I am as ye are: ye haue not iniured me at all.

13 Ye know how through the infirmitie of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye disprised not, neither abhorred: but receiued mee as an angell of God, euen as Christ Iesus. C

15 What is then your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible yee would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue geuen them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie because I tell you the truth?

17 They are zealous ouer you amisse: yea they intend to exclude you, that ye should be feruent to them ward.

18 It is good alwayes to bee zealous in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you. K

19 My litle children, of whom I trauell in birth againe, vntill Christ be fashioned in you.

20 But I desire to be present with you now and

to change my voice: for I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not heare the law?

Gen. 16 a
Gen 21 a
Heb. 11 a

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonns the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman.

23 But he which was of the bond woman, was borne after the flesh: but hee which was of the free woman, was borne by promise.

24 Which things are spoken by an allegorie, for these are two testaments: the one from the mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage which is Agar:

25 For Agar is the mount Syna in Arabia, and bordereth vpon the citie which is now called Hierusalem and is in bondage with her children.

Apoc. 21

26 But Hierusalem which is aboue, is free, which is the mother of vs all.

Esai 54 a

27 For it is written, Reioyce thou barren, that bearest no children, breake forth and crie, thou that trauailest not: for the desolate hath many moe children, then she which hath an husband.

28 But brethren, we are after Isahac the children of promise.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the spirit: euen so it is now.

Gen. 21 b

30 Neuertheless, what saith the scripture? Put away the bondwoman and her sonne: for the sonne of the bondwoman shall in no wise be heire with the sonne of the free woman.

31 So then brethren, wee are not children of the bondwoman but of the free.

## The v. Chapter.

1 He laboureth to draw them away from circumcision. 17 And sheweth them the battel betwixt the spirit and the flesh, and the fruites of them both.

Rom 6. a
Acts 26

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and be not intangled again with the yoake of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man which is circumcised, that he is a debter to doe the whole law.

4 Christ is become but vaine to you, as many of you as are iustified by the law, are fallen from grace. Gal.6.c

5 For we through the spirit, wait for the hope of righteousnesse by faith. 1.Co.13

6 For in Iesus Christ, neither is circumcision any thing worth, neither yet vncircumcision: but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did run well, who was a let vnto you, that ye should not obey the truth? 25

8 This perswasion commeth not of him that called you. 1.Cor.5.

9 A little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe of dough.

10 I haue trust to you ward in the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall beare iudgment, whatsoeuer he be

11 And brethren if I yet preach circumcision why doe I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slaunder of the crosse ceased.

12 I would to God, they were cut off which trouble you.

13 For brethren, ye haue bin called vnto libertie; only let not liberty be an occasion to the flesh, but by loue serue one another. Rom. 13 1.Cor 8.b c

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one worde, which is this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. Mat.22.d Mark.12 Luc.10.d

15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heede least ye be consumed one of another. Iames.2.b

16 Then I say, walke in the spirite, and yee shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh,

17 For the flesh lusteth contrary to the spirit & the spirit contrarie to the flesh: these are contrary one to the other, so that ye cannot doe what ye would. Matt.26 1 Cor.9.b

18 But and if ye be led of the spirit, then are yee not vnder the law. Rom.7.a

19 The deedes of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adulterye, fornication, vncleannesse, wantonnes,
20 Worshipping of images, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulation, wrath, strife, seditions, sects,
21 Enuyings, murders, drunkennesse, gluttonnes, and such like, of the which I tell you before, as I haue told you in times past, that they which doe such things, shall not inherite the kingdome of God.
22 But the fruite of the spirite is loue, ioy, peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith,
23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.
24 They truly that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.
25 If we liue in the spirit, let vs also walke in the spirit.
26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

1. Tim. 1

## The vi Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to vse gentlenes toward the weake.
2 And to shew their brotherly loue and modestie. 6, also to prouide for their ministers.

BRethren, if a man be preuented in any fault, ye which are spirituall, restore such a one in the spirit of meekenes, considering thy selfe least thou also be tempted.
2 Beare ye one anothers burden, and so fulfil the law of Christ.
3 For if a man seeme to himselfe that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, the same deceiueth himselfe in his owne fantasie.
4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, and then shall he haue reioycing onely in his owne selfe, & not in another.
5 For euery man shall beare his owne burden.
6 Let him that is taught in the word, minister vnto him that teacheth him, in all good things.
7 Be not deceiued, God is not mocked: for what soeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.
8 For he that soweth in the flesh, shall of the flesh reape

Rom. 14
Rom. 15
1. Cor. 9
Iohn 1.

reape corruption: but he that soweth in the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life everlasting.

9 Let vs not be weary in well doing: for in due season shall we reape, if we faint not. 2 Thes. 3

10 While we haue therefore time, let vs do good vnto all men, specially vnto them which are of the houshould of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire with outward appearance to please carnally, they same constraine you to be circumcised, only least they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For they themselues which were circumcised keepe not the law: but desire to haue you circumcised that they might glory in your flesh.

14 God forbid that I should glory, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto mee, and I vnto the world. ℭ

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auayleth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel, that is of God.

17 From henceforth let no man put me to busines for I beare in my bodie the markes of the Lord Iesus. Galat 5a

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen. 1. Cor 4 c

¶ The Epistle vnto the Galathians was written from Rome.

# The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle vnto the Ephesians.

## The first Chapter.

After his salutation, 4. He sheweth that the theale and

of the saluation standeth in the free election of God thorow Christ, 11. He declareth his good will toward them, giuing thanks and praying for their faith. 18. The maiestie of Christ.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the wil of God to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Iesus.

Rom. 1. a
1. Co. 1. a

2 Grace be with you and peace from God our father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

1. Pet. 1. a
Gala. 1. a

3 Blessed be God the father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs in all spirituall blessings in heauenly things by Christ.

4 According as he had chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should bee holy and without blame before him thorough loue.

5 Who hath predestinated vs vnto adoption of children by Iesus Christ vnto himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will.

Colo. 1. b

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made vs accepted in the beloued.

7 In whome wee haue redemption thorough his bloud, the forgiuenesse of sinnes according to the riches of his grace

8 Wherein hee hath abounded toward vs in all wisedome and prudence,

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure which he had purposed in himselfe:

Gala. 4. a
Rom. 11. a

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth in him.

1. Cor. 1. d

11 In whom also we are chosen, being predestinate according to the purpose of him, who worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will.

12 That we should be vnto the praise of his glory which before beleeued in Christ.

13 In

13 In whom also ye hoped, after that ye heard the word of truth, the Gospell of your saluation: where in also after that ye beleeued, ye were sealed with the holy spirit of promise.

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, vnto the redemption of the purchased possession, vnto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after that I heard of the faith which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the saints:

16 Cease not to giue thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ, the father of glory may giue vnto you the spirite of wisdome and reuelation, in the knowledge of him.

18 The eyes of your mind being lightened: that ye may know what the hope is of his calling, and Rom. 15
what the riches of the glory of his inheritance is in the saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnes of his power to vsward which beleeue, according to the working of his mighty power.

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raysed him from the dead, and set him on his right hand in Psa. 109
heauenly places.

21 Farre aboue all rule, and power, and might, & Ps
dominion, and euery name that is named, not onely Dan 7.d
in this world, but also in the world to come. Psal. 8.d

22 And hath put all things vnder his feete, and Hebr 2.d
gaue him to be the head ouer all things to the church 1 Cor 15

23 Which is his body, the fulnes of him that filleth Ephe. 5.c
all in all. Colo. 1.c

## The II Chapter.

5 To magnifie the grace of Christ, which is the only cause of saluation.

AND he quickned you that were dead in trespasses & sinnes:

2 In the which in times paste, ye walked accor- A
ding to the course of this world, after the gouernour Rom. 5.8
that ruleth in the ayre, the spirit that now worketh Colo. 1.c

in

in the children of disobedience.

3 Among whom we all had our conuersation al-
Colo.1.c so in time past in the lusts of our flesh; fulfilling the will of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, euen as other.

4 But God which is rich in mercy, for his greate loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quic-
Esay 25. kened vs together with Christ, by whose grace ye are saued,

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sitt together in heauenly thinges in Christ Iesus.

26 7 That in all ages to come he might shew the ex-
ceeding riches of his grace in his kindnes towards vs through Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are ye made safe through faith, &
that not of your selues: it is the gift of God,

9 Not of workes, least any man should boast him-
selfe.

10 For we are his workemanship, created in Christ
Titus 1 d Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath before ordayned that we should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time pas-
Phil. 3a sed Gentiles in the flesh called vncircumcision of that
Colo.2.b which is called circumcision in the flesh, made by handes:

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliantes from the common wealth of Israell, and strangers from the Testamentes of promise, hauing no hope, and without God in this world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye which sometime were farre off, are made nigh by the bloud of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made both one:
and hath broken downe the middle wall that was a stop betweene vs.

15 Taking away in his flesh the hatred, euen the
lawe of commaundements conteined in ordinances, for to make of twain one new man in himselfe, so making peace.

16 And that ye might reconcile both vnto God

in one body through his crosse, and slew hatred ther-
by.

17 And came and preached the glad tidinges of peace to you which were a farre off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For, through him we have both an entrance in one spirit vnto the father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but fellow citizens with the Saintes and of the houshold of God,

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the head corner stone. 1. Cor. 3. b Esay 28. Rom. 9. f Psal. 118. d

21 In whome all the building coupled together, groweth vnto an holy temple in the Lord.

22 In whom also ye are builded together, for an habitation of God through the spirit.

## The ii Chapter

1 He sheweth the cause of his imprisonment. 13 desireth them not to faint because of his trouble.

FOr this cause I Paul am a prisoner of Iesus Christ for you heathen. a

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you ward: Actes 18

3 For by revelation shewed God the mysterie vn- Gala. 1. b
to me (as I wrote afore in few words.

4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may vnderstand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ)

5 Which mysterie in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is now revealed vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the spirit.

6 That the Gentiles should be inheritours also, and of the same body, & partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospell.

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God, which is given vnto me after the working of his power.

8 Vnto me which am lesse then the least of all saints is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ. Colo. 1. d

9 And

9 And bring to light to all men what the fellowship of this mysterie is, which from the beginning of the worlde hath beene hid in God, which made all things through Iesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now vnto the rulers, & powers in heauenly things might be knowen by the church the very manifold wisedome of God.

11 According to the eternall purpose which he wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 By whom we haue boldnes and entrance with confidence by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not for my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Of whom all the familie in heauen and earth is named:

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his spirit in the inner man.

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith that ye being rooted and grounded in loue,

18 Might be able to comprehend with all Saints what is the bredth, and length, and depth, & height.

1 Cor. 13 19 And to know the loue of Christ, which excelleth all knowledge, that ye might bee filled with all fulnesse of God.

20 Vnto him that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to that power that worketh in vs,

21 Be glory in the church by Christ Iesus throughout all ages, world without end, Amen.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them vnto meekenes, long suffering, and vnto loue and peace.

A 1 Cor. 7 I Therefore a prisoner in the Lord, exhort you that ye walke worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called.

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long suffering

sufferyng, forbearing one another in loue.

3 Endeuouryng to kepe the vnitie of the spirit in the bond of peace.

4 One body, and one spirit, euen aspe are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptisme.

6 One God, and father of al, which is aboue and thorough all, and in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is geuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, When he went vpon high, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (But that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is euen the same also that ascended vp farre aboue all heauens, to fulfill all thinges)

11 And he gaue some Apostles, and some prophets and some Euangelistes, and some shepheards, & some teachers.

12 To the gathering together of Saintes into the worke of ministration, into the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all meete together into the vnitie of faith and knowledge of the sonne of God vnto a perfect man, vnto the measure of the age of the fulnesse of Christ.

14 That we henceforth be no more children, wauering and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, and in the wilinesse of men, in craftinesse to the laying awaite of deceite.

15 But following truth in loue, let vs grow vp in to him in all thinges which is the head, euen Christ:

16 In whom all the body being commensurate and knit together by euery ioynt, prouiding nourishment according to the effectuall power in the measure of euery part maketh encrease of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore, and testifie in the Lorde, that ye henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke

in

Rom. 12
2 Cor 12
Psal. 67 d
Iohn 3. b
1. Co. 12
Matt. 10
Luke 9. a

Colo. 2 b

Ephes. 1 d
Colo. 1 c

in vanitie of their mynd:

18 Darkened in cogitation being alienated from the life of God, by the ignorance that is in them, by the blindnesse of their hearte.

19 Which being paſt feeling, haue giuen themselues ouer vnto wantonnesse, to worke all vncleanes with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Chriſt.

21 If so be that ye haue heard him, and haue been taught in him, as the truth is in Jesus.

22 To lay downe, according to the former conuersation, the olde man, which is corrupt according to the lustes of errour.

23 To be renued in the spirit of your mynd.

Rom. 6.2. Colos. 3.2

24 And to put on the newe man, which after God is shapen, in righteousnesse and holinesse of truth.

25 Wherefore, putting away lying, speake euery man truth vnto his neighbour for as much as we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry, and sinne not: let not the sunne go downe vpon your wrath.

Iouit. 19 Psa. 3.2 & 2. Thess. 3

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, working with his handes the thinge which is good, that he may giue vnto him that needeth.

29 Let no filthy communication proceede out of your mouth, but that which is good to edifie withall, as oft as need is, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy spirit of God, by whō ye are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and fiercenes, and wrath, & crying, and euill speaking, be put away frō you, with all naughtinesse.

32 Be ye courteous one to another, mercifull, forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christes sake hath forgiuen you.

## The v. Chapter.

1 He intreateth of corporall marriage, and of the spirituall

tuall betwixt Christ and his church.

BE yee therefore followers of God, as deare children: A

2 And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs an offering and sacrifice of a sweete smelling sauour vnto God. 1. Pet. 2. Iohn 13. Gala. 2. b

3 But fornication, & all vncleanes, or couetousnes, let it not be once named among you as it becommeth saints: Exod. 23

4 Neither filthines, neither foolish talking, nether iesting which are not comely: but rather giuing of thanks. Galat. 5. 1. Cor 6.

5 For this yee know, that no whoremonger, neither vncleane person, nor couetous person, which is a worshipper of Images, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: For Mark. 14 because of such things commeth the wrath of God Col. 2. b vpon the children of disobedience. Mark. 13

7 Be not ye therefore companions of them. Luke 21.

8 For ye were sometimes darkenes, but now are ye light in the Lord: Walke as children of light. B Iohn 1 3.

9 (For the fruit of the spirite is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, and truth.

10 Approuing what is acceptable vnto the Lord.) 1. Thes 5

11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darknes, but rather euen rebuke them.

12 For it is shame euē to name those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things when they are rebuked, are made manifest of the light: For all that which doth make manifest, is light.

14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, C and stand vp from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.

15 Take heede therefore that yee walke circumspectly: not as vnwise but as wise

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are euill.

17 Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but vnderstan-

 ding

bing what the will of the Lord is,

18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excesse: but be filled with the spirite.

Psal. 33. 19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and
Colos. 3. hymnes, and spirituall songes, singing and making melody to the Lord in your hearts:

20 Giuing thanks alwayes for all thinges vnto God and the father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ:

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the
D feare of God.

22 Wiues submit your selues vnto your owne husbands, as vnto the Lord:

Gen. 2. d 23 For the husband is the head of the wife, euen
1 Cor. 12 as Christ is the head of the Church, and he is the sauiour of the body.

24 But as the church is subiect vnto Christ, likewise the wiues to their owne husbands in al things.

25 Ye husbands loue your wiues euen as Christ also loued the church, and gaue himselfe for it.

26 To sanctifie it, when hee had cleansed it in the fountaine of water in the word:

27 That hee might present it vnto himselfe a glorious church, not hauing spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy, and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues as their own bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord the church.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones:

31 For this cause shall a man leaue father & mo-
Gen. 2. d ther, and shall be ioyned vnto his wife, and two shall
Matt. 19 be made one flesh.
Mark 10. 32 This is a great secret: but I speake of Christ,
1 Cor. 6, and of the church.
Ephes 5. g 33 Therefore euery one of you do so: Let euery one of you loue his wife euen as himselfe, & let the wife

reuerence

reuerence her husband.

The vi. Chapter.

1 How children should behaue themselues towards their fathers and mothers. 4 Likewise parents toward their children, 5 seruants toward their maisters, 9 maisters towards their seruants.

Children obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. A Colos. 3. Exod. 20.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandement in promise,)

3 That thou mayest prosper, and liue long on earth.

4 Fathers prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord. Deut. 3 b

5 Seruants obey them that are your bodily maisters, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as vnto Christ.

6 Not with seruice vnto the eye, as men pleasers: but as the seruants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart.

7 With good will seruing the Lord, & not men: 25

8 Knowing that whatsoeuer good thing a man doeth, that he shall receiue againe of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye maisters doe the same thinges vnto them, putting away threatninge: knowing that your maister also is in heauen, neither is respect of person with him. 1. Par. 19 Acts 10. Rom. 2. b

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on all the armour of God, that ye may stand against the assaults of the deuill.

12 For we wrastle not against flesh and bloud, but against rules, against powers, against worldly gouernours of the darkenesse of this world, against spirituall wickednes in heauenly places.

13 Where-for take vnto you the whole armour of God that ye may be able to resist in the euil day, and hauing finished all things, to stand fast.

14 Stand therefore, having your loines girt about with the truth, and having on the brest plate of righteousnesse.

15 And your feete shod in the preparation of the Gospell of peace.

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye may quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, & the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God:

Luke 18. 1 Thess. 5. 18 Praying always in all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching for the same purpose with all instance and supplication for all saints:

Colos. 4. 19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth freely, to utter the secrets of the Gospel.

20 Whereof I am a messenger in bonds, that therein I may speake freely, as I ought to speake.

21 But that ye may also know my affaires, and what I do, Tychicus a deare brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall shew you all things:

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know of our affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be unto you brethren, and love with faith from God the father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them which love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

Sent from Rome unto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

# The Epistle of the Apostle *Saint Paul to the Philippians.*

## The first Chapter.

1 Saint Paul discovereth his heart towards them: by his

His thankesgiuing, 4 prayers, 8 and wisheth for their faith and saluation.

PAul and Timotheus, the seruants of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus which are at Philippos, with the Bishops & Deacons:

2 Grace bee vnto you, & peace from God our father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God with all remembrance of you. Rom. 1. b

4 (Alwaies in all my prayers for all you, making Coloss. 1. a. prayer with gladnesse:)

5 For your fellowship in the Gospel, from the first day vntill now:

6 Being perswaded of the same thing, that hee which hath begunne a good worke in you, will performe it vntill the day of Iesus Christ.

7 As it becommeth me to iudge this of you all, because I haue you in my hart, and in my bands, in the defence and confirmation of the Gospell, you all being partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record how greatly I long after you all in the bowels of Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray that your loue may abound yet more & more in knowledge, and in all vnderstanding.

10 That ye may discerne things that differ, that ye may be pure, and without offence till the day of Christ.

11 Being filled with the fruites of righteousnes, which are by Iesus Christ, vnto the glory & praise of God.

12 But I would ye should vnderstand, brethren, that the things which came vnto me, hath come rather vnto the furtherance of the Gospell.

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, being

incouraged through my bonds, dare more plentifully speake the word without feare.

15 Some preach Christ of enuie and strife, & some of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of strife, not sincerely, supposing to adde more affliction to my bonds:

17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set to the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? so that Christ be preached any manner of way whether it be by pretence, or by truth I ioy therein and will ioy

1. Cor. 1 19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and ministring of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed: but that with all boldnes, as alwayes, so now also Christ shal be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

21 For Christ is to me life, and death is to me aduantage.

22 But whether to liue in the flesh, this be the fruite of my labour, and what shall I chuse I wote not.

2 Cor 5. 23 For I am in a straight betwixt two, hauing a desire to depart & to be with Christ, which is much farre better.

24 Neuertheless, to abide in the flesh is more needfull for you.

25 And this am I sure of, that I shall abide, and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioy of faith:

26 That your reioycing may bee the more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe:

Ephes. 4. 27 Only let your conuersation bee as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you or else be absent, I may heare of your matters, that ye continue in one spirit, in one soule, striuing together in vnitie of the faith of the

Gospel,

Gospel.

28 And in nothing fearing your aduersaries which is to them a token of perdition: but to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ, not only this, to beleeue on him: but also this, to suffer for his sake.

30 Hauing the same fight which ye saw in me, and now heare in me.

## The II. Chapter

He exhorteth them aboue all things to humilitie, whereby pure doctrine is chiefly maintained.

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any compassion and mercy: A

2 Fulfill ye my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accorde, of one minde.

3 Let nothing be done through strife or vaine glory, but in meekenes euery man esteeme one the other better then himself.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man also on the things of others. 1 Cor. 10

5 Let the same mind be in you, which was in Christ Iesus.

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it not robbery to be equall with God.

7 But made himself of no reputation, taking on him the forme of a seruant, and made in the likenesse of men and found in fashion as a man,

8 He humbled himself, made obedient vnto death, euen the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore GOD also hath highly exalted him, and giuen him a name which is aboue euery name.

10 That in the name of Iesus, euery knee should bow, of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth. Mark. 1. Rom. 14.

11 And that euery tongue should confesse that the Lord is Iesus Christ, to the glory of God the

father.

Acts 2.5 Rom. 15. 12 Wherefore my deerely beloued, as yee haue alwaies obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence, worke out your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to doe of good will.

14 Doe all things without murmuring and disputing:

15 That ye may be blamelesse and pure, the sons of God, without rebuke in the midst of a crooked & peruerse nation, among whom shine ye as lightes in the world.

1. Cor. 2. 2. Thes. 2 16 Holding fast the word of life to my reioycing in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither laboured in vaine.

17 Yea and though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice and seruice of your faith, I reioyce, & reioyce with you all.

Acts 16. 1. Thes. 3 18 For the same cause also doe ye reioyce, and reioyce with me.

19 But I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send Timotheus shortly vnto you, that also I may be of good comfort, when I know your state,

20 For I haue no man like minded, who will naturally care for your state.

21 For all seeke their owne not the things which are Iesus Christes.

22 Ye know the proofe of him, that as a son with the father he hath serued with mee in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send, assoone as I know my state.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 But I suppose it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus my brother and my companion in labour, & fellow souldier but your Apostle, and the minister of my needs.

26 For he longed after you all, & was full of heauines, because that ye had heard that he had beene sick.

27 And

27 And no doubt hee was sicke nigh vnto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on me also: least I should haue sorrow vpon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when ye see him againe, ye may reioyce, and that I may be lesse sorrowfull. G

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and make much of such. Rom. 16. 1. Thes. 5.

30 Because of the worke of Christ hee was nigh vnto death, not regarding his life, to fulfil your lacke of seruice toward me.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 He warneth them to beware of false teachers, 3 against whom he setteth Christ.

MOreouer my brethren, reioyce ye in the Lord. It A grieueth me not to write the same things often to you, for to you it is a sure thing.

2 Beware of dogges, beware of euil workers beware of concision.

3 For we are the circumcision which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus and haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, an Hebrue of the Hebrues, after the law a Pharisee.

6 Concerning feruentnesse, persecuting the church: touching the righteousnesse, which is in the law, I was blameles.

7 But the things that were vantage vnto me, B those I counted losse for Christes sake. 1. Cor. 12

8 I thinke all things but losse for the excellencie Acts 25. of the knowledge of Christ Iesus my Lord: for Matt. 14. whose sake I haue lost all things and do iudge them but dunge, that I might win Christ.

9 And be found in him, not hauing mine owne righteousnes, which is of the law, but that which is

through

through the faith of Christ, the righteousnes which commeth of God through faith.

10 That I might know him, & the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his passions, being made conformable vnto his death.

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow, if that I may comprehend, wherein also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe as yet that I haue attained: but this one thing I say, I forget those things which are behinde and endeuour my selfe vnto those things which are before.

14 And I presse toward the marke: for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shall reueale the same vnto you.

16 Neuertheless, vnto that which wee haue attained vnto, let vs proceed by one rule, that we may be
1. Cor. 4 of one accord:

17 Brethren, be followers together of mee, and looke on them which walke so as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 For many walke of whom I haue told you often, and now tell you weeping, that they are the ene-
Rom. 16. mies of the crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end is damnation, whose God is their belly, and glory to their shame, which minde earthly things.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the Sauiour, the Lord Iesus Christ.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be
1. Cor. 15 fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

The

The iiii. Chapter.

8 He exhorteth them to be of honest conuersation. 15. & thanketh them because of the prouision that they made for him being in prison.

THerefore my brethren, dearely beloued and longed for, my ioy and crowne, so continue in the Lord, my dearely beloued. A

2 I praye Euodias, and beseech Syntiches, that they be of one accord in the Lord.

3 Yea, and I beseech thee also faithfull yoke fellow, helpe those women which laboured with me in the Gospel, and with Clement also, and with other my labour fellowes, whose names are in the booke of life. Luk 10.

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway: and againe I will say reioyce.

5 Let your patient mind be knowne vnto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in all things let your petition be manifested vnto God, in prayer and supplication, with giuing of thankes. Apo. 19

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding shall keepe your hearts and mindes through Christ Iesus. B

8 Furthermore brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer things are honest, whatsoeuer things are iust, whatsoeuer things are pure, whatsoeuer things are of good report, if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, thinke of these things.

9 Which ye haue both learned, and receiued and heard and seene in me, those things doe: & the God of peace shalbe with you.

10 But I reioyce in the Lord greatly, that now at the last ye were reuiued againe to care for me, in that wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

11 I speake not because of necessitie, for I haue learned, in whatsoeuer estate I am, therewith to be content.

1. Tim. 6. 12 I know how to be low, and I know how to exceed: euery where, and in all things, I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to haue plentie, and suffer need.

13 I can doe all things through Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye haue well done, that ye did communicate to my affliction.

15 Ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated to me as concerning giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and againe vnto my necessity.

17 Not that I desire a gifte: but I desire fruit abounding to your account.

Rom. 12. Hebr. 13. 18 But I haue receiued all, and haue plentie: I was euen filled after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of sweete smell, a sacrifice acceptable, pleasant to God.

19 My God shall supply all your neede, through his riches in glory, in Christ Jesus.

20 Vnto God and our father be glory, for euermore, Amen.

21 Salute all the Saintes in Christ Jesus: the brethren which are with me, greete you.

22 All the Saintes salute you, most of all they that are of Cesars household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all, Amen.

This Epistle was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus.

# The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle vnto the Colossians.

The first Chapter.

5 He giueth thanks vnto God for their faith. 7 confirming the doctrine of Epaphras. 9. and prayeth for the increase of their faith.

Paul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothe- 1 Cor. 1. 1
us the brother.

2 To the Saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Gala. 1. 2
Colossa, Grace be vnto you, and Ephes. 1. 2
peace from God our father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We giue thanks to God, and the father of our Phil. 1. 3
Lorde Jesus Christ alwaies for you praying.

4 Since wee haue heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the loue which ye haue to all Saints.

5 For the hope's sake which is laid vp for you in heauen, of which hope ye heard before in the word of the trueth of the Gospel.

6 Which is come vnto you euen as it is in all Colos. 4.
the world, and is fruitfull, as it is also in you from the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow Ephes. 2.
seruant, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:

8 Who also declared vnto vs your loue in the spirite.

9 For this cause wee also since the day wee heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that yee might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisedome and spirituall vnderstanding.

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord in al Iohn 15.
pleasing, being fruitfull in all good workes, and encreasing in the knowledge of God.

11 Strengthened with all might, through his glorious power, vnto all patience and long suffering with ioyfulnesse.

12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the

the saints in light.

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of his deare sonne:

14 In whom wee haue redemption through his bloud, euen the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

Ephes. 1. a. Cor. 4.

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of all creatures.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heauen, and that are in earth, visible, and inuisible, whether they be maiesties or lordships, either rulers or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

Hebr. 1. a

17 And he is before all things, & in him all things consist.

18 And hee is the head of the body of the Church: who is the beginning, the first borne from the dead, that in all things he might haue the preeminence:

Ephes. 1. 1. Cor. 15. b

19 For it pleased the father that in him should all fulnesse dwell.

20 And by him to reconcile all things vnto himselfe, since he hath set at peace through the bloud of his crosse by him, both the things in earth, and things in heauen.

21 And you which were sometime strangers and enemies by cogitation in euill workes, hath he now per reconciled.

Rom. 3. a Ephes. 2.

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy, and vnblameable, and without fault in his sight.

23 If yee continue grounded and established in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, which yee haue heard how it is preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Now reioice I in my sufferings for you, & fulfill that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church:

2. Cor. 1 Ephes. 3.

25 Whereof I am made a Minister, according to

to the dispensation of God, which is given to mee to
you ward, to fulfill the word of God:
26 Even the mysterie which hath been hid since the
world began, and since the beginning of generations:
but now is opened to his Saints. Ephe. 3 b
27 To whom God would make knowne what is matt 13
the riches of the glorie of this mysterie amongst the
Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glo-
rie:
28 Whom we preach, warning every man, & tea-
ching every man in all wisedome, that wee may pre-
sent every man perfect in Christ Jesus:
29 Wherevnto I also labour, striving, according
to his working which worketh in me mightily.

## The ii. Chapter.

1 Having protested his good will toward them. 4. He admonisheth them not to turne backe from Christ.

FOr I would that ye knew what great fight I have
for you, and for them that are at Laodicea, and for
as many as have not seene my face in the flesh.
2 That their hearts might bee comforted, being
knit together in loue, and in all riches of certainty of
vnderstanding, to know the mysterie of God, and of
the father, and of Christ.
3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome
and knowledge.
4 This I say least any man should beguile you Ephe. 5. a
with perswasion of words.
5 For though I bee absent in the flesh, yet am I
with you in the spirit, ioying and beholding your or-
der and your stedfast faith in Christ.
6 As ye haue therefore received Christ Jesus the
Lord, so walke ye in him:
7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the
faith as yee haue beene taught, abounding therein
with thanksgiuing.
8 Beware least any man spoile you through Phi-
losophie, and vaine deceite, after the tradition of
men

men, and after the rudiments of the world and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him which is the head of all principalitie and power.

Rom. 6 d
Ephes. 2. c
Colos. 1 b
Rom. 6 d
Gal. 3. d

11 In whome also ye are circumcised, with circumcision made without handes, by putting of the bodie of the flesh subiect to sinne, by the circumcision of Christ.

12 Buried with him in baptisme, in whom ye are also risen again through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And ye being dead in your sinnes, and the uncircumcision of your flesh hath he quickened with him, having forgiuen all your trespasses.

14 And when he had blotted out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, and that was contrary to us, euen that he hath taken out of the way, hauing fastened it to his crosse:

Gen. 3 c.
Luk. 11 c
Iohn 12

15 And hauing spoiled all principalities and powers, hath made a shew of them openly, triumphing ouer them in himselfe.

16 Let no man therefore iudge you in meate, or in drinke, or in part of an holy day, or of the new moone or of the Sabboth dayes.

Hebr. 7. a

17 Which are shadowes of thinges to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man beguile you of your reward, in humblenesse and worshipping of Angels, intruding himselfe into those things which he hath not seene, causelesse puffed vp with the fleshly minde:

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the body by ioynts and bands, having nourishment ministred and knit together, encreaseth with the increase of God.

Gal. 4. b

20 Wherefore if ye bee dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world: why as though liuing in the world, are ye led with traditions?

21 Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which

22 Which all be in corruption, in abusing after the commandements and doctrine of men

23 Which things haue a shew of wisedome, in wilfull religion and humblenes of mind, & in not sparing the bodie, not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 He sheweth where we should seeke Christ. 5 He exhorteth to mortification. 10. To put of the old man, and to put on Christ.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God: M

2 Set your affection on things aboue, and not on things on the earth. Ephes. 2. d

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. Heb. 2. b

4 Whensoeuer Christ which is our life shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vpon the earth, fornication, vncleanes, inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnes, which is worshipping of images.

6 For which things sake the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience. 28 Ephe. 2. g

7 In the which ye also walked sometime when ye liued in them.

8 But now put ye away all wrath, fiercenes, maliciousnes, blasphemie, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue put of the old man with his workes.

10 And haue put on the new man, which is renewed into knowledge, after the image of him that made him. Rom. 8. a Ephes. 4. a Galat. 6. d

11 There is neither Greeke, nor Iew, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: but Christ is all and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and beloued) bowels of mercy: kindenesse humblenesse of

mind, meekenes, long suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, & forgiuing one another, if any man haue quarrell against any: euen
¶ as Christ forgaue you, so also do ye.
Matt. 22 14 And aboue all these things, put on charitie which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God haue the victory in your hearts, to the which ye are also called in one body: and see that ye be thankfull.

Psa. 33. 2 16 Let the worde of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdome, teaching and admonishing your owne
Ephe. 5. d selues, in psalmes, and hymnes and spirituall songes, singing with grace in your hearts vnto the Lord.
1. Cor 10 17 And whatsoeuer ye do in word or deed, doe all in the name of the Lord Iesus giuing thanks to God the father by him.

18 Wiues submit your selues vnto your own hus
Ephes. 5. bandes as it is conuenient in the Lord.
1. Pet 3. a 19 Husbands loue your wiues, and bee not bitter against them.

Ephes. 6. 20 Children, obey your parentes in all things, for
¶ that is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, least they be discouraged.

22 Seruantes obey in all things your bodily maI
Ephes 6. steres: not with eye seruice, as men pleasers but in
Titus 2 c singlenesse of heart, fearing God,
1. Pet. 2. 23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not vnto men.

2. Par. 15 24 Knowing that of the Lord yee shall receiue the
Actes 20 reward of inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.
Eccle 35 25 But hee that doth wrong, shall receiue for the
Rom. 2. b wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect
Colo. 3. c of persons.

## The iiii. Chapter.

2 He exhorteth them to be feruent in prayer. 5 to walke wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ, 10 He saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperitie.

Maisters

Maisters, doe vnto your seruantes that which is iust and equall: knowing that ye also haue a Master in heauen. Ephes. 6.9

2 Continue in prayer, and watche in the same with thankesgiuing.

3 Praying also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the dooreof vttterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ, wherefore I am also in bonds. Ephes. 6.19 1 Thess. 5.25

4 That I may vtter it as I ought to speake.

5 Walke in wisdom towards them that are without redeeming the time.

6 Let your speach be alway in grace, powdered with salt, to know how ye ought to answer euery man.

7 All my state shal Tychicus declare vnto you, who is a deare beloued brother and faithful minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord: Ephes. 6.21 Leuite 2. Matt. 5.6

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same thing, that hee might knowe your state and comfort your harres

9 With Onesimus a faithful and deare beloued brother, which is of you, they shall shewe you of all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas sisters sonne, touching whom ye receiued commandements: If he come vnto you receiue him. Actes 27 2. Tim. 4.

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision: These only are my workefellowes vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene vnto my consolation.

12 Epaphras which is of you a seruant of Christ saluteth you, alwayes labouring fruitfully for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and fulfilled in all the will of God. Colos. 4.

13 For I beare him record, that hee hath a great zeale for you, and them that are in Laodicea, & them that are in Hierapolis.

14 Deare Lucas the Physition, and Demas greete you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when the Epistle is read of you, cause that it be read also in the Church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise read the Epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, take heede to the ministerie that thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians by Tychicus and Onesimus.

# The first Epistle of Saint *Paul, the Apostle to* the Thessalonians.

## The first Chapter.

1 He thanketh God for them, that they are so stedfast in faith and good works.

PAul and Silvanus and Timotheus, unto the Church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the father, & in the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be unto you, & peace from God our father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

A Rom. 1. a
1. Co. 1. a
2 Cor. 1. a
Gala. 1. a
Ephes. 1. a
Rom. 1. a
Phil. 1. b
Colos. 1.

2 We give thankes to God alwayes for all you, making mention of you in our prayers,

1. Thes. 4
2. Tim. 2
1. Cor. 3.
2. Thes. 2

3 Without ceasing calling to remembrance the worke of your faith, and labour of love, and patient abiding in the hope of our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our father.

4 Knowing

4 Knowing, brethren beloued, your election of God.

5 For our Gospel came not vnto you in word only, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much certainty, as ye know what maner we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of vs and of the Lord having receiued the word in much affliction with ioy of the holy Ghost.

7 So that ye were an ensample to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia & Achaia: but also in euery place your faith to God ward is spred abroad, so that we need not to speake any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of you, what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from images, to serue the liuing and true God.

10 And to tarry for his sonne from heauen, whom he raised from the dead: euen Iesus, which deliuereth vs from the wrath to come. Acts 1.b Iohn 3.b

## The ii. Chapter.

1 He commendeth his diligence in preaching. 13. and theirs in obeying.

FOr ye your selues, brethren, know our entrance in vnto you, that it was not in vaine. 1

2 But euen after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully intreated, as ye know at Philippos, we were bold in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospell of God, in much striuing. 1. Thess. 2

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, neyther of vncleanesse, neither in guile. Acts 17

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the Gospel, euen so we speake not as pleasing men, but God, which tryeth our hearts. Acts 17

5 For neither at any time haue we flattered, as ye know, neither cloaked vs vnder couetousnesse, God is record. Gala. 1.b

6 Neither sought we praise of men, neither of you Phil. 1.c

nor yet of others:

7 When we might haue beene in authority as the Apostles of Christ, but were tender among you, euen as a nurse cherisheth her children.

8 So being wordely affected toward you, our good will was to haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospell of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

Acts 20. 2. Thes. 3. 2. Cor. 9.

9 For ye remember brethren, our labour and trauaile: for we labouring night and day, because we would be not chargeable vnto any of you, preached vnto you the Gospell of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holy, and iustly, and vnblameably, we behaued our selues among you that beleeue:

11 As ye know how that as a father his children, so we haue exhorted, comforted, and besought euery one of you.

12 That ye would walke worthy of God, who hath called you into his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause thanke we God also without ceasing, because when ye had receiued the word of God which ye heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men, (but as it is indeed) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeue.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Iurie are in Christ Iesus: for ye also haue suffered like things of your countrymen as they haue of the Iewes:

15 Which both killed the Lord Iesus, & their owne Prophets, and haue persecuted vs: and they God they please not, and are contrarie to all men,

Luke 21.

16 And hinder vs to speake to the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fulfil their sinnes alway: for the wrath of God is come on them to the vttermost.

17 Forasmuch, brethren, as we are kept from you for a short season, in sight, not in heart, were exceedingly the more ready ye to see your face with great desire.

Dan. 10.

18 Wherefore we would haue come vnto you, (euen I Paul) once and againe; but Satan hindred

vs.

19 For what is our hope, or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? Are not ye yet in the presence of our Lorde Iesus Christ at his comming? 2.Cor.12

20 Yea, ye are our glorie and ioy.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 Hee sheweth howe greatly he was affectioned towarde them, howbeit that he sent Timotheus to them, 10 and also prayed for them.

WHerefore since we could no longer forbeare, wee A
thought it good to remaine at Athens alone: Actes 17

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and fellow labourer in the Gospel of Christ to stablish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should bee moued in these afflictions: for ye your selues know that wee are appointed thereunto. Iohn 15 Actes 14

4 For verily when wee were with you, wee told you before that we should suffer tribulation: euen as it came to passe, and as ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbeare I sent him to know your faith, least by some meanes the tempter had tempted you, and our labour had bin vaine.

6 But nowe lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and charitie, and how that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring greatly to see vs, as we also to see you:

7 Therefore, brethren, wee were comforted ouer B
you, in all our aduersitie & necessitie, because of your faith:

8 For nowe wee liue, if yee stande fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we recompense to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith we reioyce for your sakes before God.

10 Praying night and day exceedingly to see you personally, and to perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himselfe, and our father, & our Lord Jesus Christ, guide our way vnto you.

12 And the Lord increase you, & make you abound in charity one towards another, and toward all men, euen as we also toward you.

13 To stablish your hearts vnblameable, in holynesse before God and our father, in the comming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

## The iiii. Chapter.

a Hee exhorteth them to holinesse, c, innocencie, g loue 11 Labour, 13 and moderation in lamenting the dead.

FVrthermore we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that ye increase more and
Rom. 12. more. as yee haue receiued of vs, howe yee ought to
Ephe. 5. a walke and to please God.

1 For ye know what commandements wee gaue you by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, euen your holines that ye should abstaine from fornication:

4 That euery one of you shoulde knowe howe to possesse his vessell in holinesse and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God.

6 That no man oppresse and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lorde is the auenger
1. Cor. 7 of all such, as we also haue forewarned you, and te-
Rom. 1. 2 stified.

7 For God hath not called vs vnto vncleanesse, but vnto holinesse.

8 Hee therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also giuen vnto you his holy spi-
Luk 1. c rit.
2 Cor 3 b

9 But as touching brotherly loue, yee needе not that I write vnto you: For yee are taught of God,
1. Thess 1 to loue one another.
Iohn 13,

10 Yea, & that thing verily ye doe vnto all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but wee beseech you brethren, that ye increase more and more,

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to doe your

owne businesse, and to worke with your owne handes as we commaunded you: Actes 20. 1 Cor 9c 2 Thes 3

12 That ye may walke honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lacke of nothing.

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant brethren, concerning them which sleepe, that ye sorrow not, even as other which have no hope.

14 For if we beleeve that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleepe by Jesus will God bring with him. ℭ

15 For this say we unto you in the worde of the Lord: that we which live, which remaine unto the comming of the Lorde, shall not prevent them which sleepe. 1. Cor 15

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heaven Mat. 24. with a shoute, and in the voice of the Archangel, & in the Dan. 12. trumpe of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first

17 Then we which live, which remaine, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the ayre: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort your selves one another in these wordes.

## The v. Chapter.

1 He informeth them of the day of judgment and comming of the Lord.

BUt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye have no neede that I write unto you. Act. 1

2 For ye your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so commeth, even as a theefe in the night Mark. 13. 2. Pet. 3. c Apoc. 3. 3 Jere 15.

3 For when they shall say peace and safetie, then suddain destruction commeth upon them, as sorrow upon a woman with childe and they shall not escape in any wise.

4 But ye brethren are not in darkenes, least that day John 12. should overtake you as a theefe, Ephe. 5. c

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: We are not of the night, neither of darkenes.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe, as do other: but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night: & they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs which are of the day, bee sober, putting on the brest plate of faith and charitie and a helmet, the hope of saluation.

Rom. 13 Ephe. 6.b

9 For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but to obtaine saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ

10 Which died for vs, that whether wee wake or sleepe we should liue together with him.

1.Co. 5.c

11 Wherefore comfort your selues together, and edifie euery one another, euen as ye doe.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and haue the ouersight of you in the Lord, and admonish you:

Gala. 6.b 1.Tim. 5 Phil. 2.b

13 That ye haue them in high reputation in loue for their worke: and be at peace among your selues.

14 Also exhort you brethren, warne them that are vnruly, comfort the feeble minded, lift vp the weake be patient toward all men.

15 See that none recompence euill for euill to any man: but euer follow that which is good, both among your selues, and to all men,

Mat. 5.g

16 Reioyce euer.

Phil. 4.a

17 Pray continually.

Luk. 18.a

18 In all things giue thanke: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus, toward you.

1.Cor. 14

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophesying.

21 Examine all things: holde fast that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout. And I pray God that your whole spirit, and soule and bodie, may bee preserued blamelesse in the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

Num. 23

24 Faithfull is he which called you, which will also doe it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greet

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse. 1.Cor. 1
27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle bee read vnto all the holy brethren. Rom. 16 1.Cor. 1 5
28 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ bee with you. 2 Cor. 13 2 Thess. 3

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians, written from Athens.

# The second Epistle of Saint *Paul the Apostle to the* Thessalonians.

## The first Chapter.

1 He thanketh God for their faith, loue, and patience. 11 He praieth for the increase of the same. 12 And sheweth what seruice shall come thereof.

PAul and Siluanus and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, in God our father, and the Lord Iesus Christ. 1 Rom. 1.2 1.Cor. 1.2 Ephe. 1.2

2 Grace vnto you, and peace from God our Father, & the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charitie of euery one of you toward other abounde: Rom. 1.8

4 So that we our selues reioyce in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer

5 Which is a token of the righteous iudgement of God, that yee may bee counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer.

6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs in

the reuelation of our Lord Iesus from heauen, with the Angels of his power.

Rom. 2. b 8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ,

Sapi. 5. c 9 Which shall be punished with euerlasting damnation, from the presence of our Lord, and from the glory of his power:

Matt. 25 10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints and to be made marueilous in all them that beleeue (because our testimonie toward you was beleeued) in that day.

Colo 1. a Philip. 1. b 11 Wherefore also we pray alwaies for you, that our God would make you worthy of the calling, and fulfill all good pleasure of goodnes in the worke of faith in power.

12 That the name of our Lord Iesus Christ may be glorified in you, & ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lorde Iesus Christ.

The ii. Chapter.

1 He sheweth them that the day of the Lord shall not come till the departing of the faith come first. 9 And the kingdome of Antichrist. 15 And therefore he exhorteth them not to be deceiued, but stand stedfast in the thinges that he hath taught them.

WE beseech you brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him.

2 That ye be not suddenly moued from your mind, nor be troubled, neither by a spirit, nor by word, nor yet by letter as from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand.

Dan. 9. g 2. Tim. 3 3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes, for the Lord shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that that man of sinne be reuealed, the sonne of perdition.

4 Which is an aduersarie and is exalted aboue all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God, sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember

5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that hee might be reuealed in his time.

7 For the mistery of iniquitie doth already worke: onely he which now letteth, will let vntill hee be taken out of the way. 2 Iohn 2. 18

8 And then shall that wicked be reuealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comming: Esay 11.

9 Euen him whose comming is after the working of Satan, in all power and signes, and wonders of lying. Matt 24.

10 And in all deceiuablenesse of vnrighteousnes in them that perish: because they receiued not the loue of the truth, that they might be saued.

11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue lies: Rom. 1 d

12 That all they might be damned which beleeue not the truth, but haue pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.

13 But wee are bound to giue thankes alway to God for you brethren, beloued of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, in sanctifying of the spirit, and in faith of the truth: c

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospell, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore brethren stand fast, and hold the ordinances which ye haue been taught, whether it were by our preaching, or by our Epistle.

16 Our Lord Iesus Christ, and God and our Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation, and good hope in grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in all good saying and doing.

## The iii Chapter.

1 He desireth them to pray for him, that the Gospell may prosper

Furthermore

Finally brethren, pray for vs, that the
Ephes. 6. a word of the Lord may haue free passage, & be glo-
Colo. 4. a rified euen as with you.

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable
and euill men: for all men haue not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull which shall stablish you
and keepe you from euill.

4 And we haue confidence in the Lord touching you
that you both do and will do the things which we
command you.

1. Cor. 3. 5 And the Lord guide your harts to the loue of God
and to the patient waiting for Christ.

6 We command you, brethren, in the name of our
Lord Iesus Christ, that you withdraw your selues
from euery brother that walketh inordinately, & not
2 Thes. 3 after the institution which ye receiued of vs.

7 For ye your selues know how ye ought to fol-
low vs: for we behaued not our selues inordinately
Acts 20 a among you,

1. Cor. 9 c 8 Neyther tooke we bread of any man for nought
1. Thes. 2 but wrought with labour and trauell night and day,
because we would not be chargeable to any of
you.

9 Not because we haue not authoritie, but to
make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For when we were with you, this we warned
you of, that if any would not worke, the same should
not eate.

11 For we heare that there are some which walke
among you inordinately, working not at all, but are
busie bodies.

12 Them that are such we command, and exhort
by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they working in quiet-
nes eate their owne bread.

Gal. 6. d 13 And ye brethren, be not wearie in well do-
ing.

1. Thes. 3 14 If any man obey not our doctrine, signifie him
by an Epistle, & haue no company with him, that he
may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but warne him
as

as a brother.

16 Now the very Lorde of peace, giue you peace alwaye, by all meanes. The Lord bee with you all.

17 The salutation of mee Paul, with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle, So I write 1. Thess 5
18 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ bee with you all, Amen. Phil. 4. k

¶ The second to the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

# The first Epistle of Saint Paul *the Apostle vnto* Timothie.

## The first Chapter.

1 He exhorteth Timothie to waite vpon his office, namely to see that nothing be taught but Gods word.

PAul the Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the commission of God our sauiour, & Lord Iesus Christ, which is our hope. 1 Tim. 2. 3
2 Vnto Timothie a naturall sonne in the faith, Grace mercie, and peace, from God our father, & Iesus Christ our Lord. Acts. 9e 1. Thes. 3. Acts. 16
3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, so doe that thou commaund some that they teach no other doctrine. Acts 19.
4 Neither giue heede to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which breede question, more then godly edifying, which is in faith.
5 But the end of the commandement, is charitie out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained. 2. Tim. 2 Titus 3

6 From

6 From the which things some having erred, haue
turned vnto vaine iangling:

7 Coueting to be doctors of the law, not vnder-
Leu. 21. b standing what they speake, nether whereof they affirme.
Rom. 1 d

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man
vse it lawfully:

9 Knowing this, that the lawe is not giuen vnto
a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedi-
ent, to the vngodly, & to sinners, to vnholy, and vn-
cleane, to murderers of fathers, & murderers of mo-
thers, and manslears,

10 To whoremongers, to them that defile them-
selues with mankind, to man stealers, to lyers, to
periured, and if there be any other thing that is con-
trarie to wholesome doctrine.

11 According to the Gospel of the glory of the blis-
sed God, which is committed vnto me.

12 And I thanke Christ Iesus our Lorde which
Acts 9. a hath made me strong, for he counted me faithfull put-
ting me into the ministerie,

1 Cor 15 13 Who was before a blasphemer and an oppres-
Gala 2 c sour: but yet I did obtaine mercy, because I did it
ignorantly, in vnbeliefe.

14 Neuertheless the grace of our Lord was exce-
ding abundant, with faith, & loue, which is in Christ
Iesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and by all meanes
Matt. 9 d worthy to be receiued, that Christ Iesus came into
Mark. 1 e the world, to saue sinners, of whom I am cheife.

Luk 19 d 16 Howbeit, for this cause was mercie
Iohn 3. c shewed vnto me, that in me the first, Iesus Christ
might shew all long suffering, to the example of them
which should beleeue on him to life euerlasting.

17 Vnto the king euerlasting, incorruptible
inuisible, vnto God only wise, be honour and glory
for euer and euer, Amen.

18 This commandement commit I vnto thee son Ti-
motheus, according to the prophesies which went be-
fore vpon thee, that thou in the warfare might a good

19 hauing

19 hauing euery one good conscience: which some hauing put away, as concerning faith, haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whome is Hymeneus & Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan: that they may learne not to blaspheme. 1 Tim 1 Matt 18. 1 Cor 5.

## The II. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth to pray for all men. 4 Wherefore, and how. 9 As touching the apparell and adorning of women.

I Exhort you therefore, that first of all maners, supplications, intercessions, and giuing of thankes be made for all men.

2 For Kings and all that are in authoritie, that we may leade a quiet and peaceable life, in all godlynesse and honestie. Iere 29. c Baruc. 1. c

3 For that is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour.

4 Who will haue all men to be saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the truth. Iohn 17.

5 For there is one God, and one mediator of God and men the man Christ Iesus. Hebr. 9 b Galat. 3 c

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all, a testimonie in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher and an Apostle (I tell the truth in Christ and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie. 2 Tim Iohn 4. c

8 I will therefore that the men pray euery where, lifting vp holy handes, without wrath and reasoning.

9 Likewise also the women, that they array themselues in comely apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobrietie: not in broidered haires, or golde, or pearles, or costly aray:

10 But (that becommeth women professing godlinesse) through good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection. 1. Cor 14

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, neither to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first fourmed, then Eue,
14 And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman being deceiued, was in the transgression.
15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of children she shalbe saued, if they continue in faith and charitie and holinesse, with modestie.

The iii. Chapter.

2 He declareth what is the office of ministers. 11 and as touching their families, 14 the dignitie of the Church 16 and the principall poynt of the heauenly doctrine.

1 THis is a faithfull saying: If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good worke.
2 A Bishop therefore must be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, watching, sober, comely apparelled a louer of hospitalitie, apt to teach.
3 Not giuen to excesse of wine, no striker, not greedie of filthie lucre: but gentle, abhorring fighting, abhorring couetousnesse:
4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauing children in subiection, with all grauitie.
5 (For if a man know not to rule his owne house how shall he care for the Church of God?)
6 Not a young scholler, least he being puffed vp, fal into the condemnation of the deuill.
7 He must also haue a good report of them which are without, least he fall into the rebuke and snare of the deuill.
8 Likewise must the ministers be graue, not double tongued, not giuen to much wine, nether greedie of filthy lucre:
9 Holding the mysterie of the faith in a pure conscience.
10 And let them first be proued, then let them minister, being blamelesse.
11 Euen so must their wiues be graue, not euill speakers, sober, faithfull in all things.
12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, such as can rule their children well, and their owne houshold.

13 For

13 For they that haue ministred well, get themselues a good degree and great libertie to speake in the faith which is in Christ Iesus. Matt. 25

14 These thinges write I vnto thee, hoping to come shortly vnto thee. C

15 But if I tarry long, that thou maist know how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the church of the liuing God, the piller and ground of the earth.

16 And without doubt, great is that mysterie of godlines: God was shewed manifest in the flesh, was iustified in the spirite, was seene among the Angels, was preached vnto the Gentiles, was beleeued on in the world, and receiued vp in glory. Iohn 1 b

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 He teacheth him what doctrine he ought to flee 6, 8, 11. and what to follow, 14 wherein he ought to exercise himselfe continually.

NOw the spirite speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giuing heede vnto the spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils. M Acts 8. f 1 tim 2 a 2 Pet 2 a Iude 1. c 2. Thes. 2. a

2 Which speake false in hypocrisie, hauing their consciences seared with an hote yron.

3 Forbidding to marry, and commaunding to abstaine from meates which God hath created to be receiued with giuing of thankes, of them which beleeue and know the truth. g

4 For euery creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be receiued with thanksgiuing.

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God & prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hast been nourished vp in the words of faith and good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed. Gen. 1 d Rom. 13. titus 1 d 2 tim 3 d 1. tim. E titus 3. Colol. 2 g

7 But cast away prophane and old wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe rather vnto godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little, but godlines is profitable vnto al things, hauing promises of

the life that is now, and of that which is to come.

9 This is a sure saying, and by all meanes worthy to be receiued:

10 For therefore wee both labour, and suffer rebuke, because wee haue hoped in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of all men, specially of those that beleeue.

11 These things commaund, and teach.

Titus 2 c 12 Let no man despise thy youth: but bee thou a
1. Pet. 5. patterne of the beleeuers in word, in conuersation, in charitie, in spirit, in faith, in chastitie.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading to exhortation to doctrine,

14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee through prophecie, with the laying on of hands, by the authoritie of the eldership.

15 Haue a care of these things, and giue thy selfe vnto them, that it may be seene how thou profitest in all things.

16 Take heed vnto thy selfe, & vnto doctrine, and continue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

## The v. Chapter.

1 He teacheth him how he shall behaue himselfe in rebuking all degrees. 3 an order concerning widdowes.

REbuke not an elder, but exhort him as a father, the
Luke 19. younger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters, in all chastitie.

3 Honour widdowes which are widowes in deed:

4 But if any widdow haue children or nephewes,
Eccl. 3 b let them learne first to rule their owne houses godly, and to recompence all their kinsfolkes, for that it is good and acceptable before God.

5 And she that is a widdow indeed, and left alone
Luke 2. f hopeth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But shee that liueth in pleasure, is dead being aliue.

7 And these things commaund, that they may be blamelesse.

blameleſſe.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne, and ſpecially for thē of his houſhold, he hath denied the faith, and is worſe then an infidell.

9 Let not a widdow bee choſen vnder threeſcore yeares old, hauing beene the wife of one man,

10 And well reported of in good workes, if ſhee haue brought vp children, if ſhe haue lodged ſtrangers if ſhe haue waſhed the Saints feete, if ſhe haue miniſtred vnto them that were in aduerſitie, if ſhee haue beene continually giuen to euery good worke. Gen. 9.2 Actes 10. 1.Pet.4c

11 But the yonger widowes refuſe, for when they haue begunne to waxe wanton againſt Chriſt they will marry,

12 Hauing damnation, becauſe they haue caſte away their firſt faith.

13 They learne to wander about from houſe to houſe idle, not idle onely, but alſo tatlers, and buſibodies, ſpeaking things which are not conuely.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women bee married, to beare children, to guide the houſe, to giue none occaſion to the aduerſary to ſpeak ſlanderouſly. 1 Cor. 7b

15 For certaine of them are already turned after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that beleeueth haue widdowes, let them ſuſtaine them, and let not the church be charged, that it may ſuſtaine them that are widdowes indeed. Deut 25.

17 The elders that rule well, let them be counted worthy of double honor, moſt ſpecially they which labour in the word and teaching. Mart. 10

18 For the ſcripture ſaith, Thou ſhalt not muzzel the Oxe that treadeth out of the corne: and the labourer is worthy of his reward. Deut 10.

19 Againſt an elder receiue none accuſation but vnder two or three witneſſes:

20 Them that ſinne, rebuke before all, that other alſo may feare.

21 I teſtifie before God, and the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and the elect Angels, that thou obſerue theſe

things without haſtineſſe of iudgement, and do no-
thing after partialitie.

Num. 27 Acts 6 b 22 Lay handes ſodainly on no man, neither be par-
taker of other mens ſinnes, keepe thy ſelfe chaſt.

2. tim. 1 Eccle. 31 23 Drinke no longer water: but vſe a litle wine
for thy ſtomaches ſake, and thine often diſeaſes.

24 Some mens ſinnes are open before hand, ha-
ſting before vnto iudgement, and into ſome they fol-
low after.

25 Likewiſe alſo good workes are manifeſt before
hand, and they that are otherwiſe cannot be hid.

The vi Chapter.

1 The dutie of ſeruants toward their maiſters. 3 Againſt
ſuch, as are not ſatisfied with the word of God.

A LEt as many ſeruants as are vnder the yoake, count
their maiſters worthy of all honour, that the name
2. Cor. 12 Epheſ. 6. Col. 3. b of God and his doctrine be not blaſphemed.

2 And they which haue beleeuing maiſters, let
them not deſpiſe them, becauſe they are brethren, but
rather let them do ſeruice, foraſmuch as they are be-
leeuing and beloued, and partakers of the benefite:
Theſe things teach and exhort.

Galat. 1. 3 If any man teach otherwiſe, and conſenteth
not vnto the wholeſome wordes of our Lord Ieſus
Chriſt, & to the doctrine which is according to god-
lineſſe:

1. Tim 1 Titus 3 c 4 He is puft vp knowing nothing, but doting
about queſtions, and ſtrifes of wordes, whereof com-
meth enuie, ſtrife, railinges, euill ſurmiſings,

Eccle 13 Heb. 13. Iob 11 d 5 Vaine diſputations of men of corrupt mindes,
deſtitute of the truth, thinking lucre, to bee godli-
neſſe: from ſuch be thou ſeperate.

Eccle. 5. 6 Godlineſſe is great riches if a man bee content
with that he hath.

26 7 For we brought nothing into the world, and it
is certaine that we may carry nought away.

8 But hauing foode and rayment, we muſt there-
with be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into temptatiõ &
ſnares, and into many foolish and noyſome luſtes,

which

which drowne men in perdition and destruction.

10 For loue of money is the roote of all euill which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith, and pierced themselues through with many sorrowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hand on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I giue thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, & before Iesus Christ, which vnder Pontius Pilate witnessed a good profession.

14 That thou keepe the commaundement without spot, vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ. & Acts 17.

15 Which in his times he shall shew, that is blessed and onely mighty, the king of kings, and Lord of lordes.

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light that no man can attaine vnto, whom no man hath seene, neither can see, vnto whom be honour and power euerlasting, Amen.

17 Charge them which are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God (which giueth vs abundantly all things to enioy.)

18 That they do good that they be rich in workes, that they be ready to giue, glad to distribute.

19 Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay holde on eternall life. Matt 5. c Luk 12 b

20 O Timotheus saue that which is giuen thee to keepe, auoyding prophane and vaine babblings, & oppositions of science falsly so called. Eccle. 39 Matt. 6. b

21 Which some professing haue erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

The first to Timotheus was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

# The second Epistle of saint Paul the Apostle to Timothie.

## The first Chapter.

§ Paul exhorteth Timothy to stedfastnes and patience in perfecution, and to continue in the doctrine that hee had taught him.

1 PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To Timothie my dearely beloued sonne, grace, mercy, & peace from God our father, and Christ Jesus our lord.

Actes 22. Rom. 1.2 Phil. 3.a

3 I thanke God, whom I worship from my forefathers in pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day.

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy teares, that I may be filled with ioy.

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Loys, and in thy mother Eunice, and I am assured that it dwelleth in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre vp the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given to vs the spirit of feare, but of power, and of loue, and of a sound mind.

Rom. 1.b Ephes. 3.

8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimonie of the lord, neither of me his prisoner, but suffer thou aduersitie with the Gospel, according to the power of God.

Titus 3.b Ephes. 1.

9 Who hath saued vs, & called vs with an holy calling, not according to our workes: but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen vs in Christ Jesus, before the world began:

2. Co. 15

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of

our

our saviour Jesus Christ, who hath put away death and hath brought life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospel. Hebr. 11 Rom. 1.8

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an Apostle, and the teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things, nevertheless, I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I have committed to him against that day. 1. Tim. 1.

13 Hold thou have the patterne of wholesome words, which thou hast heard of mee in faith & loue, that is in Christ Jesus. 1. Tim. 4 Titus 1, 2. Pet. 3.

14 That good thing which was committed to thy keeping, holde fast through the holy Ghost which dwelleth in vs. C

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned from mee, of whome are Phygellus & Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy vnto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed mee, and was not ashamed of my chaine. Matt. 25. Rom. 15.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought mee out very diligently and found me.

18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercy with the Lord in that day: And in how many things he ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

## The. 2. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth him to bee constant in trouble to suffer manly to abide fast in the wholesome doctrine of our Lord Jesus Christ.

THou therefore my sonne, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. 1 Titus 1,

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me by many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, which shall be apt to teach other also.

3 Thou therefore suffer afflictions as a good souldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with

the affaires of this life, that he may please him which hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also wrastle, yet yre is not crowned, excepte he wrastle lawfully.

6 The labouring husband man must first be partaker of the fruites.

7 Consider what I say: and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all thinges.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ of the seede of Dauid, was raysed from the dead, according to my Gospell:

Matt. 1. e
Rom. 1. b

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto the bondes: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I suffer all thinges for the electes sake: that they may also obtaine the saluatiō which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glory.

Acts 20.

11 This is a faithfull saying: for if we be dead with him we shall also liue with him:

12 If we be patient, we also shall raigne with him: If we deny him, he also shall deny vs.

Rom. 8.
Rom. 6. d
Luke 12 b

13 If we be vnfaithfull, he abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himselfe.

Rom 3. a

14 Of these thinges put them in remembrance, testifie before the Lord, that they striue not about wordes to no profite, but to the peruerting of the hearers.

Num 23.

15 Studie to shew thy selfe approued vnto God, a workeman not to be ashamed, rightly deuiding the word of truth.

16 But prophane voydes of vanity passe ouer: for they will encrease vnto greater vngodlinesse.

2. tim 1.

17 And their word shall eate as doth a canker, of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.

18 Which about the truth haue erred, saying that the resurrection is past already, and doe ouerthrow the faith of some.

2. tim. 1

19 But the strōg foundation of God standeth still, hauing the seale, The Lord knoweth them that are his: and, let euery one that nameth the name of Christ departe from iniquity.

20 But in a great house are not onely vessels of

Rom. 1 9

gold

gold, and of siluer, but also of wood and earth: some to honour and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessell sanctified vnto honour, and meete for the vse of the Lord, and prepared vnto euery good worke. D

22 Lustes of youth auoid: but follow righteousnes, faith, charitie, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions put from thee, knowing that they doe but gender strife. 1. Tim 1

24 And the seruant of the Lord must not striue but be gentle vnto all men, apt to teach, suffering euill 1 Tim 3.

25 In meekenes instructing them which are contrary minded, if God at any time will giue them repentance to the knowledge of the truth.

26 And that they may come to themselues againe out of the snare of the deuill, which are taken captiue of him at his will.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 He prophecyeth of the perillous times, 16 also what profite commeth of the scripture.

THis know also, that in the last dayes perilous A
times shalbe at hand: Acter 20

2 For men shalbe louers of their owne selues, co- 1. Tim 4
uetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to 1. Pet. 2.
parents, vnthankfull, vngodly. Iude 1. 2

3 Without naturall affections, trucebreakers, false accusers, riotous, fierce, despisers of them which are good.

4 Traitours, headie, high minded, louers of pleasures more than louers of God.

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: Turne away from these.

6 These are they, which enter into houses, & lead tieus 2,
captiue simple women laden with sinne, carried away
with diuers lustes:

7 Euer learning, and neuer able to come vnto the Exo. 7. 8
knowledge of the truth. 26

8 For as Iannes and Iambres withstood Mo-

ses,

ser, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt
minde, reprobate concerning the faith:

9 But they shal preuaile no longer: for their madnesse shalbe manifest vnto all men, as also theirs was.

10 But thou hast followed my doctrine, fashion of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, charitie, patience.

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came vnto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, which persecutions I suffered patiently: and from them all the Lord deliuered me.

Acts 13 12 Yea and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

Psal. 34. Prou 14. Eccle. 8c 13 But the euill men and deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

¶ 14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, which also were committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned them.

15 And that from an infant thou hast knowne the scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through faith which is in Christ Iesus.

1. Tim. 4 2. Pet. 1. 16 All Scripture is giuen by inspiration of God, and is profitable to doctrine, to reproue, to correctiō, to instruction which is in righteousnes.

17 That the man of God may be perfect, instructed vnto all good workes.

## The iiii Chapter.

2 He exhorteth Timotheus to be feruent in the word, & to suffer aduersitie.

I Testifie therefore before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome.

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season: improue, rebuke, exhort in all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come, when they shall not suffer wholsome doctrine: but after their owne lustes, shal they heape to them teachers,

4 And shall turne away their hearing from the truth

truth and shalbe turned vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things suffer afflictions, do the worke of an Euangelist, fulfill thy ministery.

6 For I am now readie to be offered, and the time of my dissolution is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, I haue fulfilled my course, I haue kept the faith. 2 Tim. 2. 1. Cor. 9. 1. Pet. 5.

8 Henceforth there is laid vp for me a crowne of righteousnes, which the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue me at that day: not to me onely but vnto them also that haue loued his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly vnto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, hauing loued this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Taking Marck, bring him with thee, for he is profitable vnto me for the ministration.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus when thou comest bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith shewed me much euill: the Lord reward him according to his deedes.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood our preaching.

16 At my first answering no man assisted mee, but all forsoke me. I pray God that it may not be laid to their charges:

17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted mee, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching should be fulfilled to the vttermost and that all the Gentils should heare, and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer me from euery euill worke, & will preserue mee vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom be praise for euer and euer, Amen. Acts 13. Rom 16. 1. Tim. 1.

19 Salute Priscilla and Aquila, and the houshold of Onesphorus. Acts 20.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthum: but Trophimus

mus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirite: Grace be with you, Amen.

The second Epistle vnto Timotheus ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was presented the second time vnto the Emperour Nero.

# The Epistle of saint Paul to Titus,

## The first Chapter.

1 He aduertiseth Titus touching the gouernment of the Church. 7 The ordinance and office of ministers. 12. The nature of the Grecians, and of them which sowe abroad Iewish fables, and inuentions of men.

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the knowledge of the truth, which is after godlinesse.

2 In the hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie promised before the world began:

3 But hath made manifest his worde at the time appointed through preaching, which is committed vnto me, according to the ordinance of God our Sauiour.

Rom. 3 a 9. Cor 8.

4 To Titus a naturall sonne, after the common faith, Grace, mercie, and peace from God the father, and the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest reforme the things that are lefte out, and ordaine elders in euery citie as I had appointed thee.

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife hauing

hauing faithfull children, not accusable of riot, or vntractable.

7 For a Bishop must be blamelesse, as the steward of God: not stubborne, not angry, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre: B 1. tim 3

8 But a louer of hospitalitie, a louer of goodnes, sober, righteous, godly, temperate: Leuit. 19. Ephes. 5.

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, which is according to doctrine, that he may be able both to exhort in wholesome doctrine, and to improue them that say against it.

10 For there are many vnruly and vaine talkers, and deceiuers of mindes, specially they that are of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not for filthy lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, euen a Prophet of their owne said, The Cretians are alwayes liers, euill beastes, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharpely, that they may be sound in the faith.

14 Not taking heede to Iewish fables, and commandements of men, turning from the truth. C Rom. 13

15 Vnto the pure, are all things pure: but vnto them that are defiled and vnbeleeuing, is nothing pure, but euen the minde and conscience of them is defiled.

16 They confesse that they knowe God: but with workes they denie him, seeing they are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

## The ii. Chapter.

1 He commendeth vnto him the wholesome doctrine, and telleth him how hee shall teach all degrees to behaue themselues: 11 through the benefite of the grace of Christ.

BVt speake thou the things which become wholesome doctrine. B

2 That the elder men bee watching graue, sober, sound

2. Tim. 2 found in faith, in charitie, in patience.

3 The elder women likewise, that they bee in such behauiour, as becommeth holinesse, not false accusers, not giuen to much wine, teachers of good things.

4 That they may make the young women sober minded, to loue their husbands, to loue their children.

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient vnto their owne husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a patterne of good workes, in the doctrine, vncorruptnesse, gravitie, integritie.

B 1. Tim. 5 1. Pet. 5 a Ephe 6. a 1. Pet. 2d Colo. 1 d 2 Tim 62

8 Wholesome word, vnreprouable, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing no euill thing to say of vs.

9 Exhort seruants to be obedient vnto their owne masters, and to please them in all things, not answering againe:

10 Neither pickers, but shewing all good faithfulnesse, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our saviour in all things.

11 For there hath appeared the grace of God which is healthy to all men.

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodlinesse, and worldly lusts, we should liue soberly, and righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of the glory of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

Rom. 8. a Gala. 1 a Ephe 5 c Ephe 1 b 1. Tim. 4

14 Which gaue himselfe for vs: that he might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authoritie: let no man despise thee.

## The iii. Chapter.

2 Of obedience to such as be in authoritie. 9 Hee warneth Titus to be ware of foolish and vnprofitable questions.

11 Con

¶ Concluding with certaine priuate matters 15 and salutations.

WArne them to bee subiect to rule and power, to o-
bey Magistrates, to bee ready to euery good
worke: Rom. 13. 1. Pet. 2. c
2 To blaspheme no man, to bee no fighters, but
gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.
3 For we our selues also were sometime foolish, dis-
obedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts, and volup-
tuousnes, liuing in malicious nes, & enuy, full of hate,
hating one another.
4 But after that the kindnesse and loue of our Sa-
uiour God to manward appeared.
5 Not of workes that be in righteousnesse which
we haue wrought, but according to his mercie he sa-
ued vs, by the fountaine of regeneration & renuing of
the holy Ghost,
6 Which he shed on vs richly through Iesus Christ
our sauiour.
7 That we iustified by his grace, should bee made
heires according to the hope of eternall life. 2 Tim 1 b
Iohn 3 a.
8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will
that thou affirme constantly: that they which haue
beleeued in God might be carefull to maintain good Actes 15.
workes: These things are good and profitable vn- Ephes. 2.
to men.
9 But foolish questions, and genealogies & con-
tentions, and strifings about the lawe, auoyd, for 1 Tim 1 a.
they are vnprofitable and vaine. 2. Tim 2 c
10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and se- Matt 18 b
cond admonition auoyd:
11 Knowing that he that is such, is subuerted, and
sinneth, being damned of himselfe.
12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Ty-
chicus, be diligent to come vnto me vnto Nicopolis
for I haue determined there to winter.
13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, & Apollos on their
iourney diligently that nothing be lacking vnto them
14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good
workes to necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

2. Tim. 2 found in faith, in charitie, in patience.

3 The elder women likewise, that they bee in such behauiour as becommeth holinesse, not false accusers, not giuen to much wine, teachers of good things,

4 That they may make the young women sober, that they loue their husbands, to loue their children,

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient vnto their owne husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

B 7 In all things shewing thyselfe a patterne of good workes, in the doctrine, vncorruptnesse, gravitie, and

1. Tim. 5 1. Pet. 5 Ephe. 6. 2 1. Pet. 2d Cole. 1 d 1 Tim 6 2 sinceritie.

8 Wholesome word, vnreprouable, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing no euill thing to say of vou.

9 Exhort seruants to be obedient vnto their owne maisters, and to please them in all things, not answering againe:

10 Neither pickers, but shewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things.

11 For there hath appeared the grace of God, which is health to all men,

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodlinesse, and worldly lusts, we should liue soberly, and righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of the glory of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

Rom. 8. 2 Gala. 1 2 Ephe 5 c Ephe 1 b 1. Tim. 4 14 Which gaue himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs from all vnrighteousnesse, and purge vs a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authoritie: Let no man despise thee.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 Of obedience to such as be in authoritie. 9 Hee warneth Titus to be ware of foolish and vnprofitable questions.

11 Con

1 Concluding with certaine priuate matters 14 and exhortations.

WArne them to bee subiect to rule and power, to obey Magistrates, to bee ready to euery good worke: Rom. 13. 1. Pet. 2. c.

2 To blaspheme no man, to bee no fighters, but gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.

3 For we our selues also were sometime foolish, disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts, and voluptuousnesse, liuing in malicciousnes, & enuy, full of hate, hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and loue of our Sauiour God to mankind appeared.

5 Not of workes that be in righteousnesse which we haue wrought, but according to his mercy he saued vs, by the fountaine of regeneration & renuing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which he shed on vs richly through Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

7 That we iustified by his grace, should bee made heires according to the hope of eternall life. 2 Tim. 1. Iohn 3. 4.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly: that they which haue beleeued in God might be carefull to maintain good workes: These things are good and profitable vnto men. 2 B. Acts 15. Ephes. 2.

9 But foolish questions, and genealogies, & contentions, and strifings about the lawe, auoyd, for they are vnprofitable and vaine. 1 Tim. 1. 2. Tit. 3. Matth. 15.

10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and second admonition auoyd:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subuerted, and sinneth, being damned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come vnto me vnto Nicopolis, for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, & Apollos on their iourney diligently, that nothing be lacking vnto them.

14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good workes to necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

2. Tim. a found in faith, in charitie, in patience.

3 The elder women likewise, that they bee in such behauiour as becommeth holinesse, not false accusers, not giuen to much wine, teachers of good things.

4 That they may make the young women sober minded, to loue their husbands, to loue their children.

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient vnto their owne husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a patterne of good workes, in the doctrine, vncorruptnesse, gravitie, integritie.

B

1. Tim. f
1. Pet. 5 a
Ephe 6. a
1. Pet. 2 d
Colo. 1 d
1 Tim 6 a

8 Wholesome word, vnreprouable, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing no euill thing to say of vs.

9 Exhort seruants to be obedient vnto their owne masters, and to please them in all things, not answering againe:

10 Neither pickers, but shewing all good faithfulnesse, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our saviour in all things.

11 For there hath appeared the grace of God which is health to all men.

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodlinesse, and worldly lusts, we should liue soberly, and righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of the glory of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

Rom. 8. a
Gala. 1 a
Ephe 5 c
Ephe 1 b
1. Tim. 4

14 Which gaue himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authoritie: Let no man despise thee.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 Of obedience to such as be in authoritie. 9 Hee warneth Titus to be ware of foolish and vnprofitable questions.

11 Con

1 Concluding with certaine priuate matters 15 and salutations.

WArne them to bee subiect to rule and power, to o-
bey Magistrates, to bee ready to euery good
worke: Rom. 13. 1. Pet. 2. c
2 To blaspheme no man, to bee no fighters, but
gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.
3 For we our selues also were sometime foolish, dis-
obedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts, and volup-
tuousnes, liuing in maliciousnes, & enuy, full of hate,
hating one another.
4 But after that the kindnesse and loue of our Sa-
uiour God to manward appeared.
5 Not of workes that be in righteousnesse which
we haue wrought, but according to his mercie he sa-
ued vs, by the fountaine of regeneration & renuing of
the holy Ghost,
6 Which he shed on vs richly through Iesus Christ
our sauiour.
7 That we iustified by his grace, should bee made
heires according to the hope of eternall life. 2 Tim 1 b
Iohn 3 a.
8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will
that thou affirme constantly: that they which haue
beleeued in God might be carefull to maintain good
workes: These things are good and profitable vn-
to men. Actes 15. Ephes. 2.
9 But foolish questions, and genealogies & con-
tentions, and strifings about the lawe, auoyd, for
they are vnprofitable and vaine. 1 Tim 1 a. 2. Tim 2 c
10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and se-
cond admonition auoyd: Matt 18 e
11 Knowing that he that is such, is subuerted, and
sinneth, being damned of himselfe.
12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Ty-
chicus, be diligent to come vnto me vnto Nicopolis
for I haue determined there to winter.
13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, & Apollos on their
iourney diligently that nothing be lacking vnto them
14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good
workes to necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull

15 All that are with me salute thee, Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written from Nicopolis, a citie of Macedonia.

# The Epistle of Saint Paul the Apostle vnto Philemon.

## The first Chapter.

1 He reioyceth to heare the faith and loue of Philemon. 2 whom he desireth to forgiue his seruant Onesimus, and louingly to receiue him againe.

PAul a prysoner of Jesus Christ, & brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon my dearely beloued, and our fellow labourer.

2 And to our dearely beloued Appia, and to Archippus our fellow souldiers, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

1. Cor. 1 4 I thanke my God making mention alwaies of
2 Cor 12 thee in my prayers.
Gala. 1. a 5 Hearing of thy loue and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all Saints:

6 That the fellowship of thy faith may be effectual in the knowledge of euery good work which is in you toward Christ Jesus.

7 For wee haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because the bowels of the saintes are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore though I might bee much bolde in Christ, to inioyne thee that which is conuenient:

9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and nowe also prysoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds: Colo. 4

11 Which in time passed was to thee vnprofitable but now profitable to thee and me.

12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with me that in thy stead hee might haue ministred vnto mee in the bonds of the Gospell.

14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefite should not be as it were of necessity but willingly.

15 For happily he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer.

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, a brother beloued, specially to mee: but howe much more vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord:

17 If thou count mee therefore a fellow, receiue him as my selfe.

18 If he haue iniured thee, or oweth thee ought, that lay to my charge.

19 I Paul haue written it with mine owne hand, I will recompence it: albeit I do not say vnto thee howe thou owest vnto mee euen thine owne selfe besides.

20 Yea brother let mee inioy this pleasure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord.

21 Trusting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 Moreouer prepare me a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shalbe giuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ bee with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a seruant.

# The Epiſtle of S. Paul
## the Apoſtle to the Hebrewes.

### The firſt Chapter.

1 Hee ſheweth the excellencie of Chriſt, 4. aboue the Angels. 7, and of their office.

GOd which in time paſt, at ſundry times, and in diuers maners ſpake vnto the Fathers in the prophets
2 Hath in theſe laſt dayes ſpoken vnto vs in the ſonne, whom hee hath appointed heire of all things by whom alſo he made the worlds.
3 Who being the brightneſſe of his glory, and the very image of his ſubſtance, vpholding all things with the word of his power, hauing by himſelfe purged our ſinnes, hath ſit on the right hand of the maieſtie on high:
Colo. 1. c
Iapi. 8 d
4 Being ſo much more excellent then the Angels as hee hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.
5 For vnto which of the Angels ſayde hee at any time, Thou art my ſonne, this day haue I begotten thee?
Pſal. 2. a
6 And againe, I will be to him a father, and he ſhall be to me a ſonne? And againe when he bringeth in the firſt begotten ſonne into the world, he ſaith, and let all the Angels of God worſhip him.
Pſa. 97 a
7 And vnto the Angels he ſaith, Hee maketh his Angels ſpirits, and his miniſters a flame of fire:
Pſa. 104
8 But vnto the ſonne he ſaith, Thy ſeate O God, ſhall be for euer and euer: the ſcepter of thy kingdome is a ſcepter of righteouſneſſe.
9 Thou haſt loued righteouſneſſe, and hated iniquitie, therefore God euen thy God hath annointed thee with the oyle of gladneſſe aboue thy fellowes.

10 And

10 And, Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: & the heauens are the worke of thy handes: Pſal 102

11 They ſhall perish, but thou endurest: and they ſhall waxe old as doth a garment:

12 And as a veſture ſhalt thou fold them vp, and they ſhalbe changed: but thou art the ſame, and thy yeares ſhall not faile.

13 But vnto which of the Angels ſayd hee at any time, Sit on my right hand till I make thy enemies thy footſtoole? Pſal 110

14 Are they not all miniſtring ſpirites, ſent forth to miniſter for their ſakes which ſhall be heires of ſalnation? Mat 22 d 1 Cor. 15

## The ii. Chapter.

Hee exhorteth vs to be obedient vnto the new law which Chriſt hath giuen vs.

WHerefore we ought to giue the more earneſt heed to the things which we haue heard, leaſt at any time we ſhoulde let them ſlippe. A

2 For if the worde ſpoken by Angels, was ſtedfaſt: and euery tranſgreſſion and diſobedience receiued a iuſt recompence of reward.

3 How ſhall we eſcape if we neglect ſo great ſalnation? which at the firſt began to bee preached of the Lorde, and was confirmed vnto vs ward by them that heard it,

4 God bearing witneſſe there to both with ſignes and wonders alſo and with diuers powers and giftes of the holy Ghoſt, according to his owne will. mark 16

5 For vnto the Angels hath hee not put in ſubiecti on the world to come, whereof wee ſpeake.

6 But one in a certaine place witneſſed, ſaying, What is man that thou art mindfull of him? or the ſonne of man that thou viſited him? Pſal. 8. a

7 Thou madeſt him for a little while lower then the Angeles, thou haſt crowned him with glory and honour, And haſt ſet him aboue the workes of thy handes. 28 Pſal. 8b

8 Thou haſt put all things in ſubiection vnder 1. Co. 15.

his feete. In that he put al things vnder him, he left nothing that is not put vnder him. But now we see not yet all things put vnder him.

9 But him that for a while was made lesse then the Angels, we see that it was Iesus, who through the suffering of death, was crowned with glory and honour, that hee by the grace of God, should taste of death for all.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, & by whom are all things, after hee had brought many sonnes vnto glory, that he should make the Captaine of their saluation perfect through afflictions.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they which are sanctified, are all of one: For which cause hee is not ashamed to call them brethren.

12 Saying, I will declare thy name vnto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I praise thee.

Psal. 22 c
Iohn 20. c

13 And againe, I will put my trust in him, And againe, Behold, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part with them, that through death hee might expell him that had Lordship ouer death, that is the deuill:

15 And that he might deliuer them which through feare of death, were all their life time in danger and bondage.

16 For hee in no place taketh on him the Angels, but the seede of Abraham taketh he on him.

17 Wherefore in all thinges it became him to bee made like vnto his brethren, that hee might bee mercifull, and a faithfull high priest in things concerning God, for to purge the peoples sinnes.

18 For in that he himselfe suffered and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 Hee requireth them to bee obedient vnto the worde of Christ. 5 Who is more worthy then Moses.

Wherefore

Therefore holy brethren, partakers of the celestial calling, consider the Apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus. A

2 Being faithfull to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in asmuch as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded of some man: but he that builded all things, is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithful in all his house as a servant, for a witnes of those things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a sonne hath rule over his owne house: whose house are wee, if we hold fast the confidence and the reioycing of that hope vnto the end. Rom 5.2

7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost saith, To day if B ye will heare his voyce.

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 Where your fathers tempted me, proued mee, and saw my workes fortie yeares.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with this generation, and said, They doe alwayes erre in heart, they verely haue not knowne my waies.

11 So that I sware in my wrath, If they shal enter into my rest.

12 Take heede brethren, least at any time there bee in any of you an euill heart of vnbeleife, to depart from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called to day: least any of you bee hardened through C the deceitfulnesse of sinne.

14 For wee are made partakers of Christ, if wee keepe sure vnto the end the beginning of the substance.

15 So long as it is said, To day if yee will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did prouoke,

howbeit, not al that came out of Egypt by Moses

17 But with whom was he displeased forty yeares not with them that had sinned, whose carkasses fell in the desart?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them that were not obedient?

19 And we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeleife.

## The iiii. Chapter.

2 The word without faith is vnprofitable. 7 The Sabboth of the rest of the Christians. 9 Punishment of the vnbeleeuers. 12 The nature of the word of God.

4 LEt vs feare therefore, least at any time by forsaking the promise of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to be defrauded.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospell preached, as well as vnto them: but the worde which they heard did not profite them, not being coupled with faith to them that heard.

3 For we which haue beleeued, doe enter into his rest, as he said, Euen as I haue sworne in my wrath if they shall enter into my rest: although the workes were made perfect from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seauenth day, on this wise. And God did rest the seauenth day from all his workes.

Gen. 2. 2 5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it followeth that some must enter therein, and they to whome the gospell was first preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefe.

7 Againe hee appointed a certaine day, by to day, saying in Dauid after so long a time (as it is said) 25 To day if yee will heare his voice: harden not your hearts.

8 For if Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not afterwarde haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore yet a rest to the peo-

ple

ple of God.

10 For he that entered into his rest, hath ceased also from his owne workes, as God did from his.

11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, least any man fall after the same example of disobedience.

12 For the word of God is quicke and mightie in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, & entereth through euen vnto the deuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit, and of the ioynts & the marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts, and of the intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in the sight of him: but all things are naked and open vnto the eyes of him of whom we speake.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great high Priest, which is entred into the heauens, Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs hold fast this confession. ℭ

15 For wee haue not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, & yet without sinne. Phil. 2a

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may obtaine mercy and finde grace to helpe in time of neede. Exod. 25

## The v Chapter

1 He compareth Iesus Christ with the Leuiticall Priestes, shewing wherein they either agree, or dissent.

FOr euery high priest taken from among men is ordeined for men in things pertaining to God, to offer gifts and sacrifices for sinne: Leuit. 9b

2 Which can sufficiently haue compassion of the ignorant, and on them that erre out of the way, forasmuch as hee himselfe also is compassed with infirmitie.

3 And for the same infirmitie hee is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for himselfe, as for the people.

4 And no man taketh the honor vnto himselfe but

he

he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

Pſal. 2. b Acts 13 Heb 1. b Pſal 110. 5 Euen ſo, Chriſt alſo glorified not himſelfe to be made the high priest: but hee that ſaid vnto him; Thou art my Sonne, to day haue I begotten thee gaue it him.

6 As hee ſaith alſo in another place, Thou art a prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchiſedech.

7 Which in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered vp prayes and ſupplications with ſtrong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to ſaue him from death, and was heard in that which he feared:

8 Though he were the ſonne, yet learned he obedience, by theſe things which he ſuffered.

9 And being perfect was made the author of eternall ſalnation, vnto all them that obey him:

10 And is called of God an high prieſt, after the order of Melchiſedech.

11 Of whom we haue many things to ſay, & hard to be vttered, ſeeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when as concerning the time, ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye need againe that wee teach you firſt the principles of the beginning of the word of God, and are become ſuch as haue need of milke, and not of ſtrong meat.

13 For euery one that vſeth milke, is vnexpert of the word of righteouſnes, for he is a babe.

¶ 14 But ſtrong meat belongeth to them that are perfect, euen thoſe which by reaſon of vſe haue their wits exerciſed to diſcerne both good and euill.

## The vi Chapter.

1. He proceedeth in reproouing them, and exhorteth them not to faint, 12 but to be ſtedfaſt and patient, 19 inaſmuch as God is ſure in his promiſe,

THerefore leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Chriſt, let vs go forth vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes and of faith toward God.

2 Of the doctrine of baptiſme, and of laying on of hands, and of reſurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And

3 And this will we doe if God permit.
4 For it cannot be that they which were once lightned, and have tasted of the heauenly gift, and were become partakers of the holy Ghost
5 And have tasted of the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come:
6 And they fall away, should be renued againe into repentance, crucifying to themselues the sonne of God a fresh, and making a mocke of him.
7 For the earth which hath dronken in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meete for them by whom also it is tilled, receiueth blessing of God:
8 But that ground which beareth thornes & briers is reprooued, and is nigh vnto cursing, whose ende is to be burned
9 Neuertheless deare friends, we are perswaded better things of you, and things which accompanie saluation, though we thus speake.
10 For God is not vnrighteous, to forget your worke and labour of loue which ye haue shewed toward his name, hauing ministred to the saintes, and doe minister.
11 Yea, and we desire that euery one of you doe shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope, vnto the end.
12 That yee faint not, but bee followers of them, which through faith and patience inherite the promises.
13 For when God made promise vnto Abraham, because he could sweare by no greater, hee sware by himselfe.
14 Saying, Surely blessing, I will blesse thee, & multiplying, I will multiply thee.
15 And so after that he had tarried patiently he obtained the promise.
16 For men verily sweare by the greater, and an oath for confirmation, is to them an ende of all strife.
17 Wherin GOD willing more abundantly to

Acts 4.b. and 18.c
Matt 12d 2. Pet. 2d Hebr. 10 26
Matt 25c
Gen. 22 b C

shew vnto the heires of promise the stablenesse of his counsaile, confirmed by another:

18 That by two immutable thinges, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might haue a strong consolation, which haue fled to hold fast the hope laid before vs:

19 Which hope wee holde as an anker of the soule both sure and stedfast, an entring into that thinge
Hebr 3.a which is within the vaile:

20 Whether the forerunner is for vs entered, euen Iesus, after the order of Melchisedech ymade a priest forever.

## The vii. Chapter.

1 Hee compareth the priesthood of Christ vnto Melchisedech, 11. also Christs priesthood with the Leuites.

A
Gen. 14. FOr this Melchisedech king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue tithe of al things first being called by interpretation king of righteousnesse: and after that also, king of Salem, which is king of peace.

3 Without father, without mother, without kin, hauing neither beginning of daies, neither end of life but likened vnto the son of God, continueth a priest for euer.

4 Now consider how great this man was, vnto whom also the Patriarch Abraham gaue tithe of the spoiles.

5 And verily they which are of the children of Leui, which receiue the office of the priesthood haue a commandement to take tithe of the people according to the lawe, that is, of their brethren, though they came out of the loynes of Abraham.

6 But he whose kinred is not named among them receiued tithe of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all controuersie, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And

8 And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he receiueth them of whom it is witnessed that hee liueth.

9 And (to say the truth) Leui also which receiued tithes payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father whē Melchisedech met Abraham. Rom. 3. c Gala. 3. c.

11 If therefore perfection was by the priesthoode of the Leuites (For vnder the priesthood the people receiued the lawe) what needeth it further more that another Priest shoulde rise after the order of Melchisedech, and not bee called after the order of Aaron?

12 For if the priesthood be translated: of necessitie also there is made a translation of the law.

13 For hee of whom these thinges are spoken pertaineth vnto another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lorde sprong out of Iuda, of which tribe spake Moses nothing, concerning priesthood. ℭ Matt. 8

15 And it is yet a farre more euident thing if after the similitude of Melchisedech there arise another Priest.

16 Which is not made after the law of the carnall commandement, but after the power of the endlesse life:

17 For he thus testified, Thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedech. Psal 110 Hebr. 4. b

18 For there is truely a disanulling of the commandement going before, for the weakenes and vnprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, but was the bringing in of a better hope, by the which wee draw nigh vnto God. Rom. 8. c. Gal. 3. c.

20 And in asmuch as that was not without an oath (For those Priests were made without an oath;

21 But this Priest with an oath, by him that sayd vnto him, The Lord sware, and will not repent him, thou

thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedech.)

22 By so much was Iesus made a suerty of a bet-
Psal 110 ter testament.

23 And among them many were made priests, because they were forbidden by death to endure:

24 But this man, because he endureth euer, hath an vnchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also euer to saue them to the vttermost, that come vnto God by him, seeing he euer liueth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became vs, which is holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, seperate from sinners, and made higher then heauens:

1. Tim. 2
1 Iohn 2. b
Leui. 9. b
Hebr. 5 a

27 Which needeth not daily, as those high priests to offer vp sacrifice, first for his owne sinnes, & then for the peoples: for that did he once, when hee offered vp himselfe.

28 For the lawe maketh men high Priests which haue infirmitie: but the word of the oath which was after the law maketh the sonne which is perfect for euermore.

## The viii. Chapter.

9 He proueth the abolishing aswell of the Leuiticall priesthood, as of the old couenant, by the spirituall and euerlasting priesthood of Christ, and by the new couenant.

NOw of the things which we haue spoken, this is the
Heb. 6. d
and 10. c
summe: We haue such an high priest, that sitteth on the right hand of the throne of the maiestie in the heauens,

2 A minister of holy things, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pight, and not man,

3 For euery high priest is ordeined to offer gifts and sacrifices: Wherefore it is of necessitie, that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

Colo. 2. c
Heb. 10.
Exod. 25
Acts 7. f

4 For he were not a priest if he were on the earth, seeing that there are Priestes, that according to the law offer gifts.

5 Who serue vnto the example and shadow of hea-
uenly

heauenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to finish the tabernacle: For see saith he that thou make all things according to the patterne shewed thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obteined a more excellent office, by how much more hee is the Mediatour of a better couenat, which was confirmed in better promises.

7 For if that first couenant had beene faultlesse, then should no place haue beene sought for the second. 23 Iere. 31.2

8 For in rebuking them he saith. Behold, the dayes is come, saith the Lord, and I will finish vpon the house of Israel, and vpon the house of Iuda, a new couenant:

9 Not like that, that I made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand, to lead them out of the land of Egypt because they continued not in my couenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the couenant that I will make with the house of Israell after those dayes saith the Lord giuing my lawes into their mind, and in their heart I will write them, and I will be to them a God, and they shalbe to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother: saying know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the little of them, to the great of them:

12 For I will bee mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and their sinnes, and their iniquities will I thinke vpon no more.

13 In that he saith a new couenant, he hath worne out the first: for that which is worne out and waxed old, is ready to vanish away.

## The ix Chapter.

1 How that the ceremonies and sacrifices of the lawe are abolished 21. by the eternitie and perfection of Christs sacrifice.

THe first couenant then had verily iustifying ordinances, seruings of God, and worldly holines.

2 For

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first trua-
Exod. 24 ly wherein was the candlestick, and the table: and
the shew bread, which is called holy.

2 But after the second vaile was a tabernacle,
which is called holiest of all.

4 Which had the golden censor, and the arke of
the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wher-
Exod 16 in was the golden pot having Manna, and Aarons
Leui. 17 g rodde that budded, and the Tables of the Cove-
Exod 40 nant:
Leui. 16

5 And over it the Cherubins of glory, shadowing
the mercy seate: Of which things we cannot now
speake particularly

6 When these things were thus ordeyned, the priests
went always into the first tabernacle accomplishing
the service of God.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone
once every yere, not without blood which he offered
for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people.

8 The holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way of
holy things, was not yet made manifest while as yet
the first tabernacle was standing.

9 Which was a similitude for the time then present
in which were offered gifts and sacrifices, that could
not make the worshipper perfect as pertaining to the
conscience,

Hebr. 6. d 10 Which only meats and drinks, and diuers wash-
1. Pet. 1 b inges, and iustifyinges of the flesh, which were laide
vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good
things that should bee, by a greater and more perfect
tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not
of this building.

12 Neither by the blood of Goats and calues, but
by his owne blood hee entred in once into the holy
place, and found eternall redemption.

13 For if the blood of oxen and of goates, and the
ashes of a young Cow, sprinkling the vncleane, sanc-
tifieth to the purifying of the flesh.

14 How much more the blood of Christ, which
through

through the eternall spirit offered himselfe without spot to God, shall purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God?

15 And for this cause he is the mediatour of the new couenant, that through death, which was for the redemption of the transgressions that were vnder the first couenant, they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where as is a Testament, there must also of necessitie be the death of him that made the testament. 1. Tim. 6

17 For a testament is confirmed when men are dead, for it is yet of no value, as long as he that made the testament is aliue:

18 For which cause also, neither the first testament was dedicated without bloud.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all the people according to the law, taking the bloud of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll, and hyssop, he sprinkled both the booke it selfe, and all the people.

20 Saying, This is the bloud of the testament, which God hath enioyned vnto you. Exod. 24

21 And likewise hee sprinckled with bloud, both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministerie. 29

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with bloud, and without shedding of bloud is no remission.

23 It is neede that the patterns of heauenly things bee purified with such things: but the heauenly things themselues be purified with better sacrifices then are those.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy place made with hands which are patterns of true things, but into heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the sight of God for vs. Acts 7. 1 Iohn 2.

25 Not that he should offer himselfe often, as the high priest entreth into the holy places euery yeare in strange bloud.

26 (For then must hee haue often suffered since

the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared, to put away sin, by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, & after this the iudgement:

28 Euen so Christ once suffered to take away the Rom. 5 b sinnes of many, the second time shalbe seene without 1. Pet. 3. sinne of them which wait for him vnto saluation.

## The x. Chapter.

a The old law had no power to cleanse away sinnes, to put Christ did it with offering of his body once for all.

10 FOr the law hauing the shadow of good things to Colos. 2. come, and not the very fashion of the things them- Heb. 8. a selues, can neuer with those sacrifices which they offer yeare by yeare continually, make the commers thereunto perfect.

2 For would not then those sacrifices haue ceased to haue bin offered, because that the offerers once purged should haue no more conscience of sinnes?

3 Neuertheless, in those sacrifices is mention made of sinnes euery yeare.

4 For it is not possible that the bloud of bulles & Leuit. 16 of Goates should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when he commeth into the world he Psal. 40. saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not haue: but a body hast thou ordeined me.

6 In burnt sacrifices and offerings for sin thou hast had no pleasure.

28 7 Then said I, loe I come, (In the beginning of the booke it is written of me) to doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue when he saith, that sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings, & offerings for sinne thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, (which are offered by the law:)

9 Then saith he, loe I come to do thy will O God: He taketh away the first to stablish the second.

10 In the which will wee are made holy, euen by the offring of Iesus Christ once for all.

11 And euery Priest standeth daily ministring and offering

offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sinnes:
12 But this man after that he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes, is set downe for ever on the right hand of God,
13 From henceforth tarrying, till his foes be made his footestoole.
14 For with one offering hath he made perfect for ever, them that are sanctified.
15 And the holy ghost also beareth us record: for after that he had said before,
16 This is the covenant that I will make unto them after those dayes (saith the Lord) giving my lawes in their heart, and in their mindes will I write them,
17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I in no wise remember any more.
18 And where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sinne.
19 Having therefore brethren liberty to enter into holy places, in the blood of Jesus.
20 By the newe and living way, which hee hath prepared for us through the vaile, that is to say, his flesh:
21 And seeing we have an high priest over the house of God:
22 Let us draw nigh with a true heart, in assurance of faith, sprinckled in our hearts from an evill conscience and washed in body with pure water.
23 Let us hold the profession of the hope without wavering (for he is faithfull that promised:)
24 And let us consider one another, to provoke unto love, and good workes.
25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together as the maner of some is, but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see the day approcheth.
26 For if we sinne willingly after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes: Matt 12. Hebr. 6. 2. Pet. 2.

27 But a fearefull looking for of iudgement, and
violent fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 He that despiseth Moses law, dieth without
mercy vnder two or three witnesses:

Deut. 19 29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye shall
Matt. 19 he be worthy, which hath troden vnder foote the
2 Cor 13 sonne of God, and hath counted the bloud of the co-
uenant wherein he was sanctified, an vnholy thing,
and hath done despite to the spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath saide, Vengeance,
Deut. 32 belongeth vnto me, I will render, saith the Lord: And
Psal. 94. againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.
Rom. 12. 31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of
the liuing God.

32 Call to remembrance the former dayes, in the
which, after ye had receiued light, ye endured a
great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly while ye were made a gasing stocke and
partly while ye became companions of them which
were so tossed too and fro.

34 For ye suffered also with my bonds, and tooke
in worth the spoiling of your goods with gladnes:
knowing in your selues how that ye haue in heauen
a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therfore your confidence, which
hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue
done the will of God, ye might receiue the promise.

37 For yet a very little while, and hee that shall
come, will come and will not tarry.

Abac. 2 a 38 And the iust shall liue by faith: and if hee
Rom. 1. a withdraw himselfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure
Gala. 3. b in him.

39 We are not of them which withdraw our selues
vnto perdition: but we pertaine vnto faith, to the
winning of the soule.

## The xi Chapter.

1 What faith is, and a commendation of the same.

FAith is the ground of things hoped for, the eui-
dence of things not seene.

2 For

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we vnderstand, that the worlds were ordered by the word of God, and that things which are seene, were made of things which were not seene.

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a more excellent sacrifice then Cain, by whom hee was witnessed to be righteous, God testifying of his gifts: by which also he being dead, yet speaketh. Acts 13.39 Rom. 1.17 Gen. 4.4

5 By faith was Enoch translated, that he should not see death, neither was he found, for God had taken him away: for afore he was taken away, he was reported of to haue pleased God. Gen. 5.24 Sap. 4.7 Eccles. 44.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that commeth to God, must beleeue that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seeke him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seene as yet, moued with reuerence prepared the Arke to the saluing of his house, through the which Arke he condemned the world, and became heyre of the righteousnesse which is by faith. Gen. 6.13 Matt. 12.

8 By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed God, to goe out into a place, which he should afterward receiue to inheritance: and hee went out, not knowing whether he should goe. Gen. 12.1 Acts 7.2

9 By faith he remoued into the land of promise as into a strange country, when he had dwelt in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, heires with him of the same promise:

10 For he looked for a citie hauing a foundation, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara herselfe receiued strength to conceiue seed, and was deliuered of a childe when she was past age, because she iudged him faithfull which had promised. Gen. 21.2

12 And therefore sprang there of one, euen of one which was as good as dead, so many in multitude as are the starres in the skie, and as the sand which is by the shore innumerable. Gen. 15.5

Iob 8.a
Gen. 47
1.Par.29

13 These all died according to faith, not having receiued the promises, but when they had seene them a farre off, & beleeued, and saluted, and confessed, that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth,

14 For they that say such things, declare that they
C seeke a countrey.
Exod.3.f
Gen.12.a
Eccle.44

15 And if they had beene mindefull of that countrey from whence they came out, they had leisure to haue returned.

16 But now they desire a better countrey, that is a heauenly: Wherefore he is not ashamed of them to bee called their God, for hee hath prepared for them a citie.

17 By faith Abraham offered vp Isahac, when hee was proued and hee that had receiued the promises offered vp his onely begotten sonne.

18 To whom it is said, that in Isahac shall thy seede be called.

19) For he considered that God was able to raise vp the dead againe, from whence also he receiued him in a certaine similitude of the resurrection.

Gen 27 d

20 By faith did Isahac bleste Iacob and Esau cõcerning things to come.

21 By faith Iacob when hee was a dying, blessed
D both the sonnes of Ioseph, and worshipped toward
Gen.49.a the top of his scepter.

22 By faith Ioseph when he died, remembred the
Gen.50. departing of the children of Israel: and gaue com-
Exod.2.b maundement of his bones.
Actes 7.a

23 By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three moneths of his father and mother, because they saw he was a proper childe, neither feared they the kings cõmaundement.

Exod.2.b

24 By faith Moses when he was great, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaos daughter:

25 Choosing rather to suffer aduersitie with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season:

26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ, greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto

the

the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, fearing not the wrath of the king: for he endured, euen as though he had seene him which is inuisible. Exod. 12

28 Through faith he ordained the Passeouer and the effusion of bloud, least he that destroyed the first borne, should touch them. Exod. 12

29 By faith they passed through the red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to doe, were drowned. Exod. 14

30 By faith the walles of Hiericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes. Iosue 6.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that were disobedient, when she had receiued the spies with peace. Iosue 6.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would faile me to rehearse of Gedeon, of Barac, and of Sampson, and of Iephte, of Dauid also and Samuel and of the Prophets, Iudg 7. Iudg 4.

33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained the promises stopped the mouthes of lions, Iudg 14 Iudg 11 1. Reg 17

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sworde, out of weaknesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliants. 1. Reg. 12. 1. Reg. 17 Dan. 6. Dan. 3.

35 The women receiued their dead, raised to life againe. Other were racked, not looking for deliuerance that they might receiue a better resurrection. Dan. 2.

36 And others were tryed with mockings, and scourgings: yea moreouer with bondes and prisonment:

37 They were stoned, were hewen asunder were tempted, were slaine with sworde, wandred about in sheepe skins, and goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted and tormented. 3. Reg. 19

38 Of whom the world was not worthie: They wandred in wildernesse and in mountaines, and in dennes and caues of the earth. 2. Reg. 18 Hier 38.

39 And these all through faith, hauing obtained

good report, receiued not the promise:

40 Whereas God hath prepared a better thing for vs, that they without vs, should not bee made perfect.

## The xii. Chapter.

1 An exhortation to bee patient and stedfast in trouble and aduersitie, vpon hope of euerlasting reward.
25 A commendation of the new Testament aboue the old.

WHerefore, seeing that wee are compassed with so great a cloud of witnesses, all laid away that
Ephes. 3 presseth downe, and the sinne that hangeth so fast on, let vs runne with patience, vnto the battell that is set before vs:

2 Looking vnto Iesus the Captaine and finisher of our faith, which for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, hauing despised the shame, & is set downe on the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking of him against sinners, least you should be wearied fainting in your mindes.

4 Yee haue not yet resisted vnto the shedding of bloud, striuing against sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortation, which
Ephes. 1. Colos. 3. Heb. 12. a speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth he chasteneth, and scourgeth euery sonne that he receiueth.

26 7 If ye endure chastening, God tendreth you as his sonnes: for what sonne is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all be partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore we haue had fathers of our flesh, which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: shall we not much rather be in subiection vnto the father of spirits, and liue?

10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened vs after

after their owne pleasure: but he for our profite, that we might be partakers of his holinesse.

11 No chastening for the present seemeth to bee joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it bringeth the quiet fruite of righteousnes, unto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Straighten therefore the handes which Esay 35. were let downe, and the weake knees:

13 And make right steppes unto your feete, least that which is halting be turned out of the way: but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow peace with all men and holinesse, ℭ without the which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Taking heede that no man fall away from the grace of God, least any roote of bitternesse springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.

16 Let there be no fornicatour or unclean person, as Esau, which for one morsell of meate sold his Gen. 25. birth right.

17 For ye know how that afterward, when hee Gen. 27. would have inherited the blessing he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though hee sought it carefully with teares.

18 For ye are not come unto the mount that is touched, and unto burning fire, and unto darkenesse and tempests of weather.

19 And sound of a trumpe, and the voice of words which voice they that heard, intreated that the word should not be spoken to them.

20 (For they did not abide that which was com- Exod. 19. manded: And if so much as a beast touch the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, and thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight that appeared ℭ that Moses said, I feare exceedingly and quake:)

22 But ye are come unto the mount Sion, and to the citie of the living God, the celestiall Hierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels.

23 And unto the congregation of the first borne, which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men perfect:

24 And

24 And to Jesus the mediatour of the new testament, and the bloud of sprinckling that speaketh better than did the bloud of Abel.

1.Pet. 1. 25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh. For
Hebr. 9.d if they escaped not which refused him that spake on
Gen. 4. b earth, much more shall wee not escape if wee turne a-
way from him that speaketh from heauen:

26 Whose voice then shooke the earth, and now
hath declared, saying, Yet once more I shake, not
the earth onely, but also heauen.

27 And this word yet once more, signifieth remo-
uing of those thinges which are shaken as of things
which are made, that the things, which are not sha-
ken, may remaine.

28 Wherefore, wee receiuing a kingdome which
Deut. 4. cannot bee moued, let vs haue grace, whereby wee
may so serue God acceptable, with reuerence and
godly feare.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

## The xiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth vs vnto loue. 2. hospitalitie. 5. to
thinke vpon such as are in aduersity, 4. to maintaine
wedlocke. 5. to auoyd couetousnes.

A Let brotherly loue continue.
Rom. 12. 2 Be not forgetfull to lodge strangers: for there-
Acts 10 by some haue lodged Angels vnawares.
1. Pet. 4.
1. tim. 4 3 Remember them that are in bonds as bound with
Gen. 19. them: & them which suffer aduersitie, as being your
selues also in the body subiect to aduersitie.

4 Wedlocke is honourable among all men: and
Eccl. 1 9. the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adul-
1. tim. 6. terers, God will iudge.
Iosua 1. a 5 Let your conuersation bee without couetous-
nes, being content with such thinges as yee haue.
For he hath said, I will in no case faile thee neither
forsake thee,

6 So that wee may boldely say, the Lord is my
helper, and I will not feare what man may doe vn-
to mee.

25 7 Remember them which haue the ouersight of
you

you, which haue spoken vnto you the word of God: whose ende of conuersation ye considering, follow their faith.

8 Iesus Christ yesterday, and to day, and the same for euer.

9 Be not carried about with diuerse and straunge doctrines, for it is a good thing that the heart be stablished with grace, & not with meats, which haue not profited them that haue beene occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar, whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue in the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beastes, whose blood is brought into the holy place, by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the tentes.

12 Therefore Iesus also, that hee might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs goe forth therefore vnto him out of the tents, bearing his reproach.

14 For here haue wee no continuing Citie: but we seeke one to come. ℭ

15 By him therefore let vs offer sacrifice of laud alwayes to God, that is, the fruite of lips, confessing his name.

16 To doe good, and to distribute, forget not, for with such a sacrifice God is well pleased. Eccle. 35 Actes 10

17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you and submit your selues for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue accounte, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you. Rom. 12 Phil. 4.d

18 Pray for vs: for we trust we haue a good conscience in all things willing to liue honestly.

19 But I desire you the more earnestly that I may doe, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 The God of peace, that brought againe from the dead our Lorde Iesus the great Shepheard of the sheepe through the blood of the euerlasting couenant. Eze. 34 Iosua 10 1. Pet. 5.

21 Make you perfect in all good worke to do his will,

will working in you that which is pleasant in his sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

22 And I beseech you brethren, suffer the worde of exhortation for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Knowe ye that our brother Timotheus is deliuered: with whom (if he come shortly) I will see you.

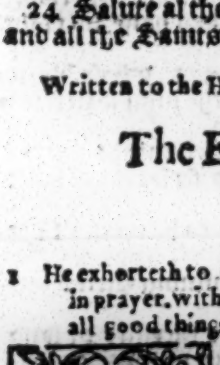
24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

Written to the Hebrewes, from Italy, by Timotheus.

# The Epistle of saint *Iames.*

## The first Chapter.

1 He exhorteth to reioyce in trouble 6 to bee feruent in prayer, with stedfast beliefe. 17 and to looke for all good things from aboue.



IAmes a seruant of God and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue tribes, which are scattered abroad, greeting.

Iob 24. Sapi. 3. 2 Reken it all ioy my brethren when ye fall into diuers temptations,

Rom. 5. 2 Iob 18. c Eccles. 7. 3 Knowing this that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

Matt. 18. Luke 11. 4 And let patience haue her perfect worke, that ye may be perfect and sound, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God that giueth to all men indifferently, and casteth no man in the teeth, and it shall be giuen him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing wauering: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tossed of the wind, and caried with violence.

7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall receiue

any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his waies

9 Let the brother of low degree, reioyce in that he is exalted.

10 Againe, the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flowre of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For as the sunne hath risen with heate, and the grasse hath withered, & his flowre hath fallen away, and the beautie of the fashion of it hath perished: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes. Esay 40. Eccles. 14. 1. Pet. 1.

12 Blessed is that man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: For God cannot be tempted with euill, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted when he is drawne away, and intised with the baite of his owne concupiscence

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth foorth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth foorth death.

16 Doe not erre my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning. Iohn 1. b

18 Of his owne will begate he vs with the word of truth, that we should be the first fruites of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath. Prou. 17. Eccles. 5.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not that which is righteous before God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of naughtinesse, and receiue with meekenes the word that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules. Rom. 13. Colos. 3.

22 And

12 And be ye doers of the worde, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne owne selues.

Rom. 2. 2 Matt. 5 d Luke 11. Matth. 7

23 For if any be a hearer of the worde, and not a doer he is like vnto a man beholding his bodily face in a glasse.

24 For he hath considered himselfe, and is gone his waye, and hath forgotten immediatly what his fashion was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect law of liberty and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, shall be blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seeme to bee deuout, & refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans deuotion is in vaine.

27 Pure deuotion and vndefiled before God and the father, is this. To visite the fatherlesse & widowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the worlde.

## The ii. Chapter.

a He forbiddeth to haue respect of persons. 5 but to regard the poore as well as the rich.

1 My brethren, haue not the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Lord of glorie, with respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your companie a man wearing a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come also a poore man in vile rayment:

3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sitte thou here in a good place: and say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole:

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are made iudges of euill thoughts?

5 Hearken my deerely beloued brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this worlde (that they might bee rich in faith, and heyres of the kingdome, which he promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Do not rich men oppresse

oppresse you but yourselues, and draw you before the
iudgement seate?
7 Do not they blaspheme that good name, by the 25
which ye are named?
8 If ye fulfill the royall law according to the
scripture, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy self,
ye do well.
9 But if ye regard one person more then another,
ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the law as trans-
gressors.
10 Whosoeuer shall keepe the whole law, and yet
faile in one point he is guiltie of all.
11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said
also, Doe not kill: Though thou doe none adultery,
yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of
the law.
12 So speake ye, and so do, as they that shall bee
iudged by the law of libertie.
13 For he shall haue iudgement without mercie,
that hath shewed no mercie: and mercy reioyceth a-
gainst iudgement.
14 What profiteth it my brethren, though a man C
say he hath faith, and hath not deedes, can faith saue
him.
15 If a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute c
of daily foode.
16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace,
be you warmed and filled: notwithstanding ye giue
them not those things which are needfull to the bo-
dy, what shall it profit?
17 Euen so faith, if it haue no deedes, is dead in
selfe.
18 But some man will say: Thou hast faith, & I
haue deedes: shew me thy faith by thy deedes, and I
will shew thee my faith by my deedes.
19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God, thou
doest well: the deuils also beleeue and tremble.
20 But wilt thou know, O thou vaine man, that
that faith which is without workes is dead?
21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through D
workes,

will working in you that which is pleasant in his sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

22 And I beseech you brethren, suffer the worde of exhortation for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Knowe ye that our brother Timotheus is deliuered: with whom (if he come shortly) I will see you.

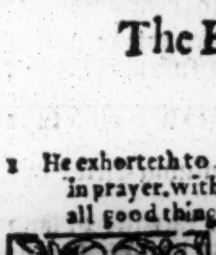
24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

Written to the Hebrewes, from Italy, by Timotheus.

# The Epistle of saint *Iames.*

## The first Chapter.

1 He exhorteth to reioyce in trouble 6 to bee feruent in prayer, with stedfast beliefe. 17 and to looke for all good things from aboue.



IAmes a seruant of God and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue tribes, which are scattered abroad, greeting.

Iob 24. Sapi. 3. 2 My brethren count it all ioy when ye fall into diuers temptations.

Rom. 5. 3 Knowing this that the trying
Iob 18. c of your faith worketh patience.
Eccles. 7. 4 And let patience haue her perfect worke, that ye
Matt. 18. may be perfect and sound, lacking nothing.
Luke 11. 5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God that giueth to all men indifferently, and casteth no man in the teeth, and it shall be giuen him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing wauering; for he that wauereth is like a waue of the sea, tost of the wind, and caried with violence.

7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall receiue

any

any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his waies

9 Let the brother of low degree, reioyce in that he is exalted.

10 Againe, the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flowre of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For as the sunne hath risen with heate, and the grasse hath withered, & his flowre hath fallen away, and the beautie of the fashion of it hath perished: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes. Esay 40. Eccles. 14. 1. Pet. 1.

12 Blessed is that man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: For God cannot be tempted with euill, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted when he is drawne away, and intised with the baite of his owne concupiscence

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth foorth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth foorth death.

16 Doe not erre my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning. Iohn 1. b

18 Of his owne will begate he vs with the word of truth, that we should be the first fruites of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath. Prou. 17. Eccles. 5.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not that which is righteous before God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of naughtinesse, and receiue with meekenes the word that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules. Rom. 13. Colos. 3.

22 And

12 And be ye doers of the worde, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne owne selues.

Rom. 2. a
Matt. 5 d
Luke 11.
Matth. 7

23 For if any be a hearer of the worde, and not a doer he is like vnto a man beholding his bodily face in a glasse.

24 For he hath considered himselfe, and is gone his waye, and hath forgotten immediatly what his fashion was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect law of libertie and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, shall be blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seeme to bee deuout, & refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans deuotion is in vaine.

27 Pure deuotion and vndefiled before God and the father, is this. To visite the fatherlesse & widowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the worlde.

## The ii. Chapter.

a He forbiddeth to haue respect of persons. 5 but to regard the poore as well as the rich.

1 My brethren, haue not the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Lord of glorie, with respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your companie a man wearing a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come also a poore man in vile rayment:

3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sitte thou here in a good place: and say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole:

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are made iudges of euill thoughts?

5 Hearken my deerely beloued brethren. Hath not God chosen the poore of this worlde (that they might bee rich in faith, and heyres of the kingdome, which he promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Do not rich men oppresse

appeale you bpt pramp, and drawe you before the
iudgement seate? 25

7 Do not they blaspheme that good name, by the
which ye are named?

8 If yee fulfill the ropall law according to the
scripture, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy self,
ye do well.

9 But if ye regard one person more then another,
ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the law as trans-
gressors.

10 Whosoeuer shall keepe the whole law, and yet
faile in one point he is guiltie of all.

11 For he that sayd, Do not commit adultery, said
also, Doe not kill: Though thou doe none adultery
yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of
the law.

12 So speake ye, and so do, as they that shall bee
iudged by the law of libertie.

13 For he shall haue iudgement without mercie,
that hath shewed no mercie: and mercy reioyceth a-
gainst iudgement.

14 What profiteth it my brethren, though a man
say he hath faith, and hath not deedes, can faith saue C
him.

15 If a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute
of daily foode.

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace,
be you warmed and filled: notwithstanding ye giue
them not those things which are needfull to the bo-
dy, what shall it profit?

17 Euen so faith, if it haue no deedes, is dead in
selfe.

18 But some man will say: Thou hast faith & I
haue deedes; shew me thy faith by thy deedes, and I
will shew thee my faith by my deedes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God, thou
doest well: the deuils also beleeue and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O thou vaine man, that
that faith which is without workes is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through D
workes,

Gen. 22. b

workes, when he had offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

22 Seest thou not how that faith wrought with his deedes, & through the deedes was the faith made perfect?

Gen. 15. Rom. 4. 2 Galat. 3. a

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham beleeued God, and it was reputed vnto him for righteousnesse: and he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then, how that of deedes a man is iustified, and not of faith only.

Iosue 2. a

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, when she had receiued the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the bodie without the spirit is dead, euen so faith without workes is dead also.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 He forbiddeth all ambition & sekie honour about his brethren. 3 He declareth the properties of the tongue.

MY brethren, be not many maisters, knowing how that we shall receiue the greater condemnation.

Matt. 23. Prou. 16.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle all the bodie.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey vs, and we turne about their whole bodie.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helme, whersoeuer the lust of the gouernour will.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member also, and boasteth great things. Behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is fire, yea a world of wickednesse. So is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole bodie, & setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 All the nature of beasts and of birds, and of ser-

pents

nuts, and things of the sea, is mocked and tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. Gen. 3. d

9 Therewith blesse we our God, and father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountaine send forth at one hole sweet water and bitter also?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, beare Olive berries: either a vine figges? so can no fountaine give both salt water and fresh also.

13 Who is a wise man, and endued with knowledge among you? let him shewe his workes out of good conversation with meekenesse of wisedome.

14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, neither be lyars against the truth.

15 For this wisedome descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensuall, and devilish.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is sedition and every evil worke.

17 But the wisedome that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle and easie to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without judging and without dissimulation.

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sowen in peace of them that make peace.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to love God, and submit themselves to him.

2 From whence commeth warres and fightings among you? come they not here of your lustes that fight in your members?

3 Ye lust and have not: ye envie and have indignation, and cannot obtayne: ye fight and warre, yet have not, because ye aske not.

4 Ye aske and receive not, because ye aske amisse, even to consume it upon your lustes.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, knowe you not how that the friendship of the world is enmitie with God? Whosoeuer therefore will bee a friend of the world, is made an enemie of God.

5 Either doe yee thinke that the Scripture sayth in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth to enuie.

6 But the scripture offereth more grace, and therefore sayth, God resisteth the proud, but giueth grace vnto the lowly.

Pro. 3 b

7 Submit your selues therefore to God: but resist the deuill, and he will flee from you.

1. Pet. 5 b

8 Draw nigh vnto God, and hee will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands ye sinners, & purifie your hearts ye double minded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and mourne, and weepe: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your ioy to heauinesse.

10 Humble your selues in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you vp.

1. Pet. 5 a

11 Backebite not one another, brethren: He that backbiteth his brother, and he that iudgeth his brother, backbiteth the law, and iudgeth the law: but and if thou iudge the law, thou art not an obseruer of the law, but a iudge.

Rom. 14

12 There is one law giuer, which is able to saue, and to destroy. What art thou that iudgest another?

13 Goe to now, yee that say, To day and to morrow let vs goe into such a Citie, and continue there a yeare, and buy, and sell, and winne:

14 (And yet canst ye tell what shall happen on the morrow: for what thing is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a little time and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, and if we liue let vs do this, or that.

Actes 17
Hebr. 6 a
Luk 12 b

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth howe to doe good

good and doth it not, to him it is sinne.

The v Chapter

1 He threateneth the wicked rich men, 7 exhorteth vnto patience, 12 to beware of swearing.

GOe to now, ye rich men, weepe, & howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you. 13

2 Your riches is corrupt, your garmentes are moth eaten.

3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shalbe a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesshe as it were fire. Ye haue heaped treasure together in the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of labourers which haue reaped downe your fieldes, which hire is of you kept backe by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabboth. Leui. 19

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and beene wanton: Ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned and killed the iust, and he doth not resist you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord, beholde, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience thereupon, vntill hee receiue the early & latter raine. 26

8 Be also patient, and settle your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, least ye be damned: behold, the iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an example of suffering aduersitie, & of patience, which spake in the name of the Lord.

11 Beholde wee count them happy which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue seene the end of the Lord, for the Lord is very pitifull and mercifull. Matt 5.

12 But aboue all things, my brethren, sweare not

Matt 5.f neither by the heauen, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: let your yea, bee yea, and your nay, nay, least ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is any diseased among you? let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him and annoint him with oyle in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if hee haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Knowledge your faults one to another, & pray one for another, that yee may be healed: For the feruent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man vnder infirmities euen as we are, and hee prayed in his prayer that it might not
3.Reg 17 raine: and it rained not on the earth by the space of
Luke 4. c three yeares and sixe moneths.

18 And he prayed againe, & the heauen gaue raine and the earth brought forth her fruite.

19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the truth and another conuert him.

20 Let the same know, that he which conuerteth the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide the multitude of sinnes.

The end of the Epistle of Saint Iames.

# The first Epistle of Saint Peter the Apostle.

## The first Chapter.

¶ He sheweth that through the abundant mercy of God, we are elect and regenerate to a liuely hope, 7 and how faith must be tried.

Peter

PEter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that dwell heere and there as straungers, throughout Pontus, Galatia, Capadocia, Asia, Bithynia: A Actes 8 a

2 Elect according to the foreknowledg of God the father, vnto the sanctifying of the spirit through obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you.

3 Blessed bee God the father of our Lorde Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercie begate vs againe vnto a liuely hope, by the rising of Jesus Christ from the dead. Rom. 1. e 1. Co. 15 a 2. Cor. 1 Gala. 1. a

4 To an inheritance incorruptible and vndefiled and that fadeth not away, reserued in heauen for you.

5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith vnto saluation, ready to bee shewed in the last time.

6 In the which ye reioyce, though now for a season (if need require) yee are in heauinesse through manifold temptations:

7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then gold that perisheth: though it be tried with fire, might be found to bee vnto you vnto laud, honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ. 25 Iob 23 d Sapi. 2. c Iames 1. Rom. 5 b

8 Whom ye haue not seene, and yet loue him, in whom euen now though yee see him not, yet doe yee beleeue him, and reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable and glorious: Iohn 10.

9 Receiuing the end of your faith, euen the saluation of your soules.

10 Of which saluation haue the prophets enquired and searched diligently which prophecied of the grace that should come vnto you: Actes 10 Esay 9. c

11 Searching when, or at what time the spirite of Christ which was in them shewed, when it testified before the passions that should happen vnto Christ, and the glory that should follow after. Dan. 2. g Agge. 2 b

Acts 2.a 12 Vnto which Prophetes it was also reuealed, that not vnto themselues, but vnto vs, they shulde minister the thinges which are now shewed vnto you of them, which by the holy Ghost sent downe from heauen haue in the Gospell preached vnto you the thinges which the Angels desire to behold.

Luke 12 13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your mind, be sober, & trust perfectly, on the grace that is brought Ephes. 6. vnto you by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues vnto the formerlustes of your ignorance.

Leuit. 11 15 But as hee which called you is holy, euen so Matt. 16 be ye holy also in all maner of conuersation.

Psal. 18. c 16 Because it is written, Be yee holy, for I am Rom. 12. b holy.

17 And if so be that you call on the father, which without respect of person iudgeth according to euery mans worke, see that yee passe the time of your dwelling here in feare:

Heb. 9. a 18 Forasmuch as ye know, how that ye were not 1. Iohn 1 redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and gold Apoc. 1. b from your vaine conuersation, which ye receiued by the tradition of the fathers:

19 But with the precious bloud of Christ, as of a lambe vndefiled, and without spot:

20 Which was ordeined before hand, euen before the worlde was made, but was declared in the last times for your sakes:

Philp. 1. b 21 Which by his meanes do beleeue on God that raised him from the dead and gaue him glory, that ye might haue faith and hope toward God:

22 Euen ye which haue purified your soules, thorow the spirite in obeying the truth, with brotherly loue vnfained, see that yee loue one another with a pure heart feruently:

23 For ye are borne a new, not of corruptible seed but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liueth and lasteth for euer.

24 For all flesh is as grasse, & all the glory of man is as the flowre of grasse: The grasse withereth and

the

the flowre falleth awap.
25 But the word of the Lord endureth ever: And this is the word which by the Gospell was preached vnto you.

Esai 40.b
Eccle. 14
Iam. 1.b

The ii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth them to lay aside all vice, 4. shewing that Christ is the foundation whereupon they build.

WHerefore all naughtinesse, and all guile, and fainednes, and enuie, and backbiting layde aside.

1 Matt. 18

2 As new borne babes, desire ye the milke of the worde, which is without deceit: that ye may grow thereby vnto saluation.

3 If so be that ye haue tasted how gratious the Lord is.

4 To whō ye come as vnto a liuing stone, disalowed of men, but chosen of God and precious.

5 And ye as liuely stones, be you made a spirituall house, and holy priesthood, for to offer vp spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

6 Wherefore it is contained also in the scripture, Behold, I put in Sion a stone to be layd in the chefe corner, elect and precious, and he that beleeueth on him, shall in no wise be confounded.

Esay 28.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, he is precious: but vnto them which beleeue not, the stone which the builders disalowed, the same is made the head of the corner:

25 Psa. 118 Matt. 21

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rocke of offence which stumble at the word, and being disobedient, vnto the which thing they were ordeined.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shewe foorth the vertues of him that called you out of darkenesse, into his marueilous light.

Exod. 19. Deut 7.a

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which sometime had not obteined mercy, but now haue obteined mercy.

Osee 2.d Rom. 9.a

11 Wearely beloued, I beseech you as strangers

and pilgrimes, abstaine from fleshly lustes, which fight against the soule:

Gala. 5 d
Rom. 13
Matt. 5. b
12 And see that ye haue honest conuersation amõg the Gentiles: that where as they backbite you as euill doers, they may by your good workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

Rom 13
Titus 32
13 Submit your selues therefore vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lords sake: whether it be vnto the king, as hauing the preeminence:

14 Either vnto rulers, as vnto them that are sent by him for the punishment of euill doers, but for the laud of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may stop the ignorance of foolish men:

16 As free, and not hauing the liberty for a cloake of naughtinesse, but euen as the seruants of God.

Rom. 12
Ephe. 6. a
Colos. 3
1 Tim 6
Titus 2. b
17 Honour all men, Loue brotherly fellowshippe. Feare God, Honour the king.

18 Seruants obey your maisters with all feare, not onely if they bee good and courteous, but also though they be froward:

19 For it is thanke worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe, and suffer wrong vnde-serued.

Matt 5. a
20 For what praise is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? But if when ye doe well and suffer wrong, and shall take it patiently, then is there thanke with God.

21 For hereunto verily were ye called: for Christ also suffered for vs, leauing vs an example, that wee should follow his steps.

Iohn 1 3.
Ephe. 5 a
22 Which did no sinne, neyther was there guile found in his mouth.

23 Which when he was reuiled, reuiled not again when he suffered he threatned not, but committed the vengeance to him that iudgeth righteously.

Matt. 8. c
Esay 53.
24 Which his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his bo die on the tree, that wee being deliuered from sinne, should liue vnto righteousnesse: by whose stripes ye

are

are healed.

25 For ye were as sheepe going astray: but are nowe turned vnto the shepherd and Bishop of your soules.

## The iii. Chapter.

1 How wiues ought to order themselues toward their husbands. 3. and in their apparell.

LIkewise ye wiues be in subiection to your husbands that euen they which obey not the word, may with out the word be wonne, by the conuersation of the wiue: Ephe.5.c Colo.3.c

2 After that they haue beholden your chast conuersation coupled with feare.

3 Whose apparell let it not be that which is outward, with braided haire, and hanging on of golde, either in putting on of gorgious apparell.

4 But let the hidman which is in the heart, bee without all corruption, of a meeke and quiet spirite, which spirit is before God a thing much set by.

5 For after this manner in the old time did the holy women also, which trusted in God, trym themselues being obedient vnto their husbands.

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well and are not afraid for any terrour.

7 Like wise ye husbandes dwell with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife, as vnto the weaker vessell and as vnto them that are heyres also of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred. 25

8 In conclusion be ye al of one mind, hauing compassion one of another, loue as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous,

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, euen that ye should be heires of the blessing.

10 For he that doth long after life, and loueth to see good dayes, let him refrayne his tongue from euill, and his lips that they speake no guile. Psal.34.c

11 Let

11 Let him eschew euill, and do good, let him seke peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous and his eares are open vnto their prayers: again, the face of the Lord is ouer them that do euill.

13 Moreouer who is it that will harme you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 Yea happy are ye if any trouble happen vnto you for righteousnesse sake, be not ye afrayd for any
Matt. 5 h
Esay 8. c
Matt. 10
terror of them, neither be ye troubled:

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts. Be ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you.

16 And that with meekenesse and feare, hauing a good conscience: that whereas they backbite you as
1. Pet. 2.
Titus 2 c
euill doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.
matt. 5 a

18 For asmuch as Christ hath once suffered for sins the iust for the vniust, to bring vs to God, and was
Rom. 5 a
killed as pertaining to the flesh, but was quickened in the spirit.

19 In which spirit he also went and preached vnto the spirites that were in prison.

20 Which sometime had bin disobedient, when once
Gen. 6. a
Gen. 7. c
the long suffering of God abode in the dayes of Noe while that the Arke was a preparing, wherein few (that is to say, eight soules) were saued in the water.

21 To the which also the figure agreeth that now
Rom. 6 a
saueth vs, euen baptisme, (not the putting away the filth of the flesh, but in that a good conscience maketh request to God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

22 Which is on the right hand of God, & is gone
Heb 12 b
into heauen, Angels, powers and might subdued vnto him.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth men to cease from sinne, 7 to be sober, & apt to pray. 11

For asmuch

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme yee your selues likewise with the same minde: for he which suffereth in the flesh, ceaseth from sinne:

2 That hee henceforth should liue, as much time as remaineth in the flesh, not after the lustes of men, but after the will of God.

3 For it as sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time that is past of the life, after the will of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnes, lustes, in excesse of wines, in excesse of eating, in excesse of drinking, and abhominable idolatry. Rom. 1. & Ephes. 4.

4 And it seemeth to them a strange thing, that ye runne not also with them vnto the same excesse of ryot, and therefore speake they euil of you:

5 Which shall giue accounte to him that is readie to iudge the quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose herein was the Gospell preached also vnto the dead, that they should be iudged like other men in the flesh, but should liue before God in the spirit,

7 The end of all things is at hand. Be yee therefore sober, and watch vnto prayer.

8 But aboue all thinges, haue feruent charitie among your selues, for charitie shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

9 Be ye harberous one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gifte, euen so minister the same one to another, as good stewardes of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, let him talke as the wordes of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as of the abilitie which God ministreth vnto him, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whome bee prayse and dominion for euer and euer Amen. Gen. 18.2

12 Deerely beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery tryal, which thing is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you. Actes 20. Phil. 1.

13 But

13 But reioyce, in as much as yee are partakers of Christs passions: that when his glory appeareth ye may be merry and glad.

14 If yee bee rayled vpon for the name of Christ, happy are ye, for the spirit of glory & of God resteth vpon you: on their part he is evill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 See that none of you bee punished as a murderer, or as a theefe, or an evill doer, or as a busie bo-
Rom. 12. dy in other mens matters.
2 Cor 8c
Matt. 5b 16 If any man suffer as a christian man, let him not
1. Pet. 1. bee ashamed, but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.

17 For the time is come, that iudgement must begin at the house of God. If it first begin at vs, what shall the end of them be, which beleeue not the Gospell of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where
Prou 11. shall the vngodly & the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that are troubled according to the will of God, cõmit the keeping of their soules to him with well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creatour.

## The v. Chapter.

a The dutie of pastors is to feede the flocke of Christ, and what reward they shall haue if they be diligent.

THe Elders which are among you I exhort which also am an Elder, and a witnes of the afflictions of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be opened:

2 Feede you Gods flocke, which is committed
Actes 21 vnto you, taking the oversight of them, not as com-
2 Cor 1c pelled thereto, but willingly not for the desire of fil-
1. Tim. 4 thy lucre, but of a chearefull mind.
Titus 2. d
2. Tim. c 3 Not as though ye were lords ouer Gods her i-
1. Cor 9. tage: but that ye be an ensample to the flocke.
2. Tim. 4 4 And when the cheife shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glory.

5 Likewise yee younger, submit your selues vnto

the

the Elder: Submit your selues euery man one to another, decke your selues inwardly in lowlinesse of mind: For God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Submit your selues therefore vnder the mighty hand of God, that hee may exalt you when the time is come.

7 Cast all your care vpon him, for hee careth for you.

8 Be sober and watch: for your aduersary the deuill, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whō he may deuoure.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith: knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace himselfe, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a little affliction, make you perfect, settle, strengthen, and stablish you.

11 To him bee glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you (as I suppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting & testifying how that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete ye one another with a kisse of charitie. Peace bee with you all which are in Christ Iesus, Amen.

B
Matt. 6 d
Luk 12 c
Iohn. 1 b
Iames 4 d

C
Rom. 16
1 Cor. 16

# The second Epistle of Saint Peter.

The

4 Forasmuch as the power of God hath given them all things pertaining vnto life, hee exhorteth them to flee the corruption of worldy lustes.

SImon Peter, a seruant and an Apostle of IESVS Christ to them which haue obtained like precious faith with vs, through the righteousnes of our God and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

1.Pet.1.a

2 Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you through the knowledg of God, and of Iesus our Lord.

3 According as his godly power hath giuen vnto vs all things that pertaine vnto life, and godlines through the knowledge of him that hath called vs vnto glory and vertue:

4 By the which are giuen vnto vs excellent and most great promises, that by the meanes thereof, ye might be partakers of the godly nature, if ye flee the corruption of worldly lust.

5 And hereunto giue all diligence, in your faith minister vertue, in vertue knowledge,

Iohn 1.d
Colo.2.d
3.Cor.8

6 In knowledge temperance, in temperance patience, in patience godlinesse,

7 In godlines, brotherly kindenesse, in brotherly kindenesse charitie.

8 For if these things be among you, and be plenteous, they make you that ye neither shalbe idle, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our LORD Iesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind and cannot see far off, & hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherefore brethren, giue the more diligence for to make your calling and election sure: for if ye doe such things, ye shall neuer fall.

11 For and by this meanes, an entring in shall be ministred

ministred vnto you abundantly, into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of such things, though yee know them your selues, and bee stablished in the present truth.

13 Notwithstanding I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, euen as our LORD Iesus Christ shewed me. C
Iohn 21.

15 I will endeuer also giue my diligence, that ye may haue wherewith to stirre vp the remembrance of these things after my departing.

16 For wee haue not followed deceitfull fables, when we opened vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but with our eyes we saw his maiestie: 1. Iohn 1.

17 Euen then verily, when he receiued of God the father honour and glory, and when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory: This is my dearely beloued sonne in whom I delight.

18 This voice we heard comefrom heauen, when we were with him in the holy mount. Matt. 17

19 Wee haue also a right sure worde of prophecy, Mark. 1.b whereunto if ye take heede, as vnto a light that shi- Luke 1.b neth in a darke place, ye doe well, vntill the day dawn and the day starre arise in your hearts, 2. Cor. 4.b

20 So that yee first know this, that no prophecie in the scripture, is of any priuate motion.

21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of GOD spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

## The ii. Chapter.

The prophecieth of false teachers, and sheweth their punishment.

There

and pilgrimes, abstaine from fleshly lustes, which fight against the soule:

Gala. 5 d Rom. 13 Matt. 5. b 12 And see that ye haue honest conuersation amõg the Gentiles: that where as they backbite you as euill doers, they may by your good workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

Rom 13 Titus 3 a 13 Submit your selues therefore vnto all manner ordinance of man for the Lords sake: whether it be vnto the king, as hauing the preeminence:

14 Either vnto rulers, as vnto them that are sent by him for the punishment of euill doers, but for the laud of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may stop the ignorance of foolish men:

16 As free, and not hauing the liberty for a cloake of naughtinesse, but euen as the seruants of God.

Rom. 12 Ephe. 6. a Colos. 3 1 Tim 6 Titus 2 b 17 Honour all men, Loue brotherly fellowshippe, Feare God, Honour the king.

18 Seruants obey your maisters with all feare, not onely if they bee good and courteous, but also though they be froward:

19 For it is thanke worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure greife, and suffer wrong vnde-serued.

Matt 5. a 20 For what prayse is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? But if when ye doe well and suffer wrong, and shall take it patiently, then is there thanke with God.

21 For hereunto verily were ye called: for Christ also suffered for vs, leauing vs an example, that we should follow his steps.

Iohn 1 3. Ephe. 5 a 22 Which did no sinne, neyther was there guile found in his mouth.

23 Which when he was reuiled, reuiled not again when he suffered he threatned not, but committed the vengeance to him that iudgeth righteously.

Matt. 1. c Esay 53. 24 Which his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that we being deliuered from sinne, should liue vnto righteousnesse: by whose stripes ye

are

are healed.

25 For yee were as sheepe going astray: but are now turned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

## The iii. Chapter,

1 How wiues ought to order themselues toward their husbands. 3. and in their apparell.

LIkewise ye wiues be in subiection to your husbands, 1
that euen they which obey not the word, may with Ephe.5.c
out the word be wonne, by the conuersation of the Colo.3.c
wiues:

2 After that they haue beholden your chast conuersation coupled with feare.

3 Whose apparell let it not be that which is outward, with braided haire, and hanging on of golde, either in putting on of gorgious apparell.

4 But let the hidman which is in the heart, bee without all corruption, of a meeke and quiet spirite, which spirit is before God a thing much set by.

5 For after this manner in the old time did the holy women also, which trusted in God, trymme themselues being obedient vnto their husbands.

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well and are not afraid for any terrour.

7 Like wise yee husbandes dwell with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife, as vnto the weaker vessell and as vnto them that are heires also of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred. 23

8 In conclusion be ye al of one mind, hauing compassion one of another, loue as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous,

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blesse, knowing that ye are thereunto called, euen that ye should be heires of the blessing.

10 For he that will loue life, and see good dayes, let him refrayne his tongue from euill, and his lips that they speake no guile. Psal.34.c

11 Let

11 Let him eschew euill, and do good, let him seeke peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous and his eares are open vnto their prayers: again, the face of the Lord is ouer them that do euill.

13 Moreouer who is it that will harme you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 But happy are ye if any trouble happen vnto you for righteousnesse sake, be not ye afraid for any terror of them, neither be ye troubled:

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts. Be ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you.

16 And that with meekenesse and feare, hauing a good conscience: that whereas they backbite you as euill doers, they may bee ashamed that falsly accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 For asmuch as Christ hath once suffered for sins the iust for the vniust, to bring vs to God, and was killed as pertaining to the flesh, but was quickened in the spirit.

19 In which spirit he also went and preached vnto the spirits that were in prison.

20 Which sometime had bin disobedient, when once the long suffering of God abode in the dayes of Noe while that the Arke was a preparing, wherein few (that is to say, eight soules) were saued in the water.

21 To the which also the figure agreeth that now saueth vs, euen baptisme, (not the putting away the filth of the flesh, but in that a good conscience maketh request to God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

22 Which is on the right hand of God, & is gone into heauen, Angels, powers and might subdued vnto him.

C
Matt. 5 h
Esay 8. c
Matt. 10

1. Pet. 2.
Titus 2 c
matt. 5 a

Rom. 5 a

Gen. 6. a
Gen. 7. c

Rom. 6 a

Heb 12 b

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth men to cease from sinne, & to be sober, & apt to pray.

For asmuch

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme yee your selues likewise with the same minde: for he which suffereth in the flesh, ceaseth from sinne: B

2 That hee henceforth should liue, as much time as remaineth in the flesh, not after the lustes of men, but after the will of God.

3 For it as sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time that is past of the life, after the will of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnes, lustes, in excesse of wines, in excesse of eating, in excesse of drinking, and abhominable idolatry. Rom. 1. & Ephes. 4.

4 And it seemeth to them a strange thing, that ye runne not also with them vnto the same excesse of ryot, and therefore speake they euill of you:

5 Which shall giue accounte to him that is readie to iudge the quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose verily was the Gospell preached also vnto the dead, that they should bee iudged like other men in the flesh, but should liue before God in the spirit,

7 The end of all things is at hand. Be yee therefore sober, and watch vnto prayer.

8 But aboue all thinges, haue feruent charity among your selues, for charitie shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

9 Be ye harborous one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gifte, euen so minister the same one to another, as good stewardes of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, let him talke as the wordes of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as of the abilitie which God ministreth vnto him, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whome bee prayse and dominion for euer and euer Amen. Gen. 18. 3

12 Dearely beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery tryal, which thing is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you. Acts 20. Phil. 1. b

13 But

13 But reioyce, in as much as yee are partakers of Christs passions: that when his glory appeareth ye may be merry and glad.

¶ 14 If yee bee rayled vpon for the name of Christ, happy are ye, for the spirit of glory & of God resteth vpon you: on their part he is euill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 See that none of you bee punished as a murderer, or as a theefe, or an euill doer, or as a busie bodie in other mens matters.

Rom. 12. 2 Cor 8c Matt. 5b 1. Pet. 1.

16 If any man suffer as a christian man, let him not bee ashamed, but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.

17 For the time is come, that iudgement must begin at the house of God. If it first begin at vs, what shall the end of them be, which beleeue not the Gospell of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly & the sinner appeare?

Prou 11.

19 Wherefore let them that are troubled according to the will of God, cõmit the keeping of their soules to him with well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creatoure.

## The v. Chapter.

a The dutie of pastors is to feede the flocke of Christ, and what reward they shall haue if they be diligent.

a THe Elders which are among you I exhort which also am an Elder, and a witnes of the afflictions of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be opened:

2 Feede you Gods flocke, which is committed vnto you, taking the ouersight of them, not as compelled thereto, but willingly not for the desire of filthy lucre, but of a chearefull mind.

Actes 21. 2 Cor 1c 1. Tim. 4 Titus 2. d 2. Tim. 2c

3 Not as though ye were lords ouer Gods heritage: but that ye be an ensample to the flocke.

1. Cor 9. 2. Tim. 4

4 And when the chiefe shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glory.

5 Likewise yee younger, submit your selues vnto

the

the Elder: Submit your selues euery man one to another, decke your selues inwardly in lowlinesse of mind: For God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Submit your selues therefore vnder the mighty hand of God, that hee may exalt you when the time is come.

7 Cast all your care vpon him, for hee careth for you.

8 Be sober and watch: for your aduersary the deuill, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whō he may deuoure.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith: knowing that the same afflictions are accōplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace himselfe, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a little affliction, make you perfect, settle, strengthen, and stablish you.

11 To him bee glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you (as I suppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting & testifying how that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete ye one another with a kisse of charitie Peace bee with you all which are in Christ Iesus, Amen.

B
Matt. 6 d
Luk 12 c
Iohn. 1. b
Iames 4 d

C
Rom. 16
1 Cor. 16

# The second Epistle of *Saint Peter.*

The

2 THere were false Prophets also among the people euen as there shall bee false teachers among you, Actes 20. 1. Tim. 4 2. Tim. 3 1. Pet. 3 Iude 1. which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lorde that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation.

2 And many shall follow their damnable wayes, by whome the way of truth shall bee euill spoken of.

3 And through couetousnesse, shall they with fained words make marchandise of you, whose iudgement now of long time tarieth not, and their damnation slepeth not.

4 For if GOD spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darknes to be kept vnto iudgmēt

5 Neither spared the old world, but saued Noe the eight person a preacher of righteousnes, & brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly.

6 And turned the Cities of Sodome & Gomorrhe into ashes, ouerthrew them, damned them, and made them an ensample vnto those that after should liue vngodly: Gen. 7. a 26 Gen 19. a

7 And iust Lot vexed with the vncleane conuersation of the wicked, deliuered he.

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, with their vnlawfull deedes.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuer the godly out of temptation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement for to be punished. Iob. 15. b 1. Cor 10

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh in the lust of vncleanesse, and despise authoritie. Presumptuous are they, and stand in their owne conceit which feare not to speake euill of them that excell in worship.

11 When the Angels which are greater both in power & might, giue not railing iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these are brute beastes led with sensualitie and made to be taken and destroyed, speake euill of

the thinges which they vnderstand not, and shall perish thorough their owne corruption:

13 And receiue the reward of vnrighteousnes: they count it pleasure to liue delitiously for a season, spots they are and blots, delighting themselues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you:

14 Hauing eyes full of adultery, and that can not cease from sin, laping baite for vnstable soules: hearts they haue exercised with robbery, they are cursed children.

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam, the sonne of Bosor, which loued the reward of vnrighteousnesse: Num. 22

16 But was rebuked of his iniquitie. The dumb beast, and vsed to the yoke, speaking with mans voice rebuked the madnesse of the prophet.

17 These are welles without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darkenesse is reserued for euer. Iude d

18 For when they speake the great swelling words of vanitie, they entice thorough lusts with the baite of wantonnesse of the flesh, them that were cleane escaped from them, which are wrapped in errour. Iohn 3 d

19 Whiles they promise them libertie, whereas they themselues are the bondseruants of corruption. For of whom a man is ouercome, vnto the same is he brought in bondage. Rom. 6 c

20 For if they, after they haue escaped from the filthinesse of the world, thorough the knowledge of the Lord and the sauiour Iesus Christ are yet entangled againe therein, and ouercome, then is the latter ende worse with them then the beginning, Heb. 6. 2 and 10. 6 Mat. 12.

21 For it had beene better for them not to haue knowne the way of righteousnes, then after they haue knowne it, to turne from the holy commaundement that was giuen vnto them. ℣

22 But the same is happened vnto them that is written to bee spoken by the true prouerbe, The dogge is turned to his owne vomit againe, and the Sow Pro. 2

that was washed, is turned againe to her wallowing in the myre.

The iii. Chapter.

3 He sheweth the impietie of them which mocke at Gods promises, 7 After what sort the end of the world shalbe 8. That they prepare themselues thereunto, 16 who they are which abuse the writings of Saint Paul, and the rest of the scripture, 18. Concluding with eternall thankes to Christ Iesus.

THis is the second Epistle that I now write vnto you, dearely beloued, wherewith I stirre vp and warne your pure mindes.

2 To be mindfull of the words which were tolde before of the holy Prophets, and also the commaundement of vs, which be the Apostles of our Lorde and Sauiour.

Actes 20
2. Pet. 2.
Iude 1. 2
1. Tim 4
2. tim. 22

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes mockers, walking after their owne lustes,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers fell a sleepe, all thinges continue alike from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they know not (and that wilfully) how that the heauens were of old, and the earth consisting of the water, and by the water, by the worde of God.

6 By the which things the world that then was, perished, being then ouerrunne with water.

7 But the heauens and earth which are nowe by the kept by his word in store, and reserued vnto fire, against the day of iudgement, and perdition of vngodly men.

2 8
Iohn 14
Esay 51
Psal. 90. 2
2. Cor 7. c

8 Dearely beloued, bee not ignorant of this one thing, how that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeares as one day.

9 The Lorde that hath promised, is not slacke (as some men count slacknesse) but is patient to vs ward, for as much as he would haue no man lost, but will come all men to repentance.

10 Neuertheless the day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall

passe

passe away with a great noyse, and the elements shall melt with fervent heate, the earth also, & the workes that are therein, shalbe utterly burned. Matt. 24. 1. Thes. 5. Apoc. 3. 9

11 Seeing then that all these thinges shall perish, what manner persons ought ye to be in holy conversation and godlines,

12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of the day of God, by whom the heauens shall perish with fire, and the Elements shall melte with fervent heate?

13 Neuertheless we according to his promise looke for a new heauen, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnes. Apoc. 21

14 Wherefore dearely beloued, seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that yee may be found of him in peace, without spot, and vndefiled.

15 And suppose that the long suffering of the Lord is saluation, euen as our dearely beloued brother Paul also, according to the wisdome giuen vnto him, hath written vnto you. ℭ

16 Yea almost in euery Epistle speaking of such things, among which are many things hard to bee vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable peruert, as they doe also the other Scriptures, vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye be warned afore hand, beware least ye also being led away, with the error of the wicked, fall frō your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in peace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and saviour Iesus Christ: To whom bee glory both now and euer. Amen.

The end of the second Epistle of S. Peter.

# The first Epistle of saint Iohn the Apostle.

## The first Chapter.

1 The true witnes of the euerlasting word of God. 7 The bloud of Christ is the purgation of sinnes, 12 no man is without sinne.

A THat which was from the beginning, which wee haue heard, which wee haue seene with our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and our handes haue handled of the word of life,

Matt. 17 2 (And the life appeared and we haue seene, and beare witnes, and shew vnto you, that eternall life which was with the father) and appeared vnto vs,

3 That which we haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that yee also may haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship may be with the father, and his sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that your ioy may be full.

5 And this is the tidings which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkenesse at all.

6 If wee say that wee haue fellowship with him, & walke in darkenes, we lie and do not the truth.

7 But if we walke in the light, euen as he is in
B the light then haue we fellowship one with another, and the bloud of Iesus Christ his sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

3. Reg. 8 8 If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue our
2. Par. 6. selues, and the truth is not in vs.

Iohn 13. 9 If we knowledge our sinnes, he is faithful and
Psal. 32. iust to forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from
Luke 15. all vnrighteousnes,

10 If we say that we haue not sinned, wee make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

## The ii. Chapter.

a Christ is our aduocate. 10 Of true loue, and how it is tryed. 12 To beware of Antichrist.

A MY little children, these things write I vnto you, that yee sinne not. And if any sinne, wee haue an aduocate with the father, Iesus Christ the righteous.

2 And he is the attonement for our sinnes, not for our

our sinnes onely, but also for the sinnes of al the world.

3 And hereby we are sure that we know him, if we keepe his commaundements.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a liar, and the veritie is not in him. Iohn 1 3

5 But who so keepeth his word, in him is the loue of God perfect indeede: Hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himselfe to walke, euen as he walked.

7 Brethren I write no new commandement vnto you, but an old commandement which yee haue heard from the beginning. The old commandement, is the word which yee haue heard frō the beginning. 2 B

8 Againe, a new commaundement I write vnto you, that is true in him, and the same is true also in you, for the darkenes is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith how that he is in the light, and yet hateth his brother, is in darkenes, euen vntil this time.

10 He that loueth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of euill in him.

11 He that hateth his brother is in darkenes, and walketh in darkenes and cannot tell whither he goeth, because the darkenes hath blinded his eyes. 1 Iesu. 1 9

12 Babes I write vnto you, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his names sake.

13 I write vnto you fathers, because yee haue knowne him that is from the beginning, I write vnto you yong men, because yee haue ouercome the wicked.

14 I write vnto you little children, because yee haue knowne the father. I haue written to you fathers, because you haue knowne him that is from the beginning I haue written vnto you yong men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you and ye haue ouercome the wicked. C Iohn 17.

15 See that yee loue not the world, neither the

things that are in the world: If any man loue the world, the loue of the father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, as the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the father, but of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth for euer.

18 Little children it is the last time: & as ye haue heard how that Antichrist shal come, euen now there are many Antichristes: whereby we know that it is the last time.

Acts 20. 19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: For if they had bin of vs they would no doubt haue continued with vs: But that it might appeare that they are not all of vs.

20 Neuertheless, ye haue an vnction of him that is holy, and ye know all things.

D 21 I haue not written vnto you as though ye knew not the truth: but because ye know it, & that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a lyar, but hee that denieth Iesus is Christ? the same is Antichrist, that denieth the father and the sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the sonne, the same hath not the father, but he that knowledgeth the sonne, hath the father also.

24 Let therefore abide in you, the same which ye heard from the beginning: if that which ye haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the sonne, and in the father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, euen eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you concerning them that deceiue you.

27 And the anointing which ye haue receiued of May 14. him dwelleth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you, but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and not lying: and as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in it.

28 And

28 And now babes abide in him: that when he shall appeare, we may be bold, and not be ashamed of him at his comming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, know also that every one which doth righteousnes is borne of him.

The iii. Chapter.

1 The singuler loue of God towards vs, 7 and how wee againe ought to loue one another.

BEhold what charitie the father hath shewed vs, euen that we should be called the sonnes of God: for this cause the world knoweth vs not, because it hath not knowne him. M Luke 10. Iohn 1. b

2 Dearely beloued, now are we the sons of God, and yet it doth not appeare what wee shall be: But we know that when he shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath his hope in him, purgeth himselfe, euen as he also is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the law, for sinne is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he appeared, to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 As many as abide in him, sinne not: whosoeuer sinneth, hath not seene him neither knowne him.

7 Babes, let no man deceiue you: hee that doth righteousnes, is righteous, euen as he is righteous. B

8 He that committeth sinne is of the deuill: for the deuill sinneth since the beginning: For this purpose appeared the sonne of God, to loose the workes of the deuill. Gen. 3. a Iohn 8. f

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sinne because he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowne, and the children of the deuill: whosoeuer doth not righteousnesse is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the tidings that ye haue heard frō the beginning, that ye should loue one another.

12 Not as Cain which was of that wicked, and Gen. 4. b

slew

slew his brother: And wherefore slew he him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers righteous.

13 ¶ Marueil not my brethren, if the world hate you,

14 We know that wee are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: he that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a manslear: and ye know that no manslear hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceiue we loue, because he laid down his life for vs: & we ought to laie downe our liues for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worldes good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from him: how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My babes, let vs not loue in word, neyther in tongue, but in deede and verite.

19 Hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

Deut 15. 20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

Matt. 7. 21 Dearly beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldnesse toward God.

Iohn 15. 22 And whatsoeuer we aske, we receiue of him,

Iames 3. because we keepe his commaundements, and doe those things that are pleasing in his sight.

1. Iohn 5 23 And this is his commaundement, that wee

Iohn 13. should beleeue on the name of his sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as hee gaue vs commaundement.

24 And hee that keepeth his commaundements, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that hee abideth in vs, euen by the spirite which hee hath giuen vs.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 Difference of spirites. 2 how the spirite of God may be knowen from the spirit of errour.

Dearely

DEarely beloued, beleeue not euery ſpirite, but ꝓoue the ſpirites whether they are of God or not: for many falſe Prophets are gone out into the world. B

2 Hereby ſhall ye know the ſpirit of God: Euery ſpirit that confeſſeth that Ieſus Chriſt is come in the fleſh, is of God:

3 And euery ſpirit which confeſſeth not that Ieſus Chriſt is come in the fleſh, is not of God, and this is that ſpirit of Antichriſt, of whō ye haue heard how that he ſhould come: and euen now already is he in the world.

4 Little children, ye are of God, and haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world, therefore ſpeake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby know we the ſpirite of veritie, and the ſpirit of errour.

7 Dearely beloued, let vs loue one another, for loue commeth of God: and euery one that loueth is borne of God, and knoweth God. B

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue. Iohn 13. 1. Theſſ. 4

9 In this appeared the loue of God to vs ward, becauſe God ſent his onely begotten ſonne into the world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that we loued GOD, but that he loued vs, and ſent his ſonne to be the agreement for our ſinnes. Iohn 3. c Rom. 5. b

11 Dearely beloued, if God ſo loued vs, we ought alſo to loue one another.

12 No man hath ſeene God at any time, If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs. Exod. 33 Iude 5. c

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and hee in vs, becauſe he hath giuen vs of his ſpirit. C

14 And we haue ſeene, and doe teſtifie that the father

father sent the sonne to be the sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And wee haue knowne and beleeued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is the loue perfect in vs, that wee should haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paine. He that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, for he loued vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and yet hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loueth not his brother whom he hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 And this commaundement haue wee of him, that hee which loueth God, should loue his brother also.

## The v. Chapter.

### Of the fruites of faith.

1 WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him.

1 Iohn 12, 2 By this wee know that wee loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commaundements.

Matt. 11. 3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commaundements: and his commaundements are not grieuous.

2 Cor 15 4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth the world: and this is the victorie that hath ouercome the world, euen our faith.

5 Who is that ouercommeth the world, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is the sonne of God?

6 This Iesus Christ is he that came by water & bloud: not by water onely, but by water and bloud: and it is the spirit that beareth witnesse, because the

spirit

spirit is truth.

7 For there are three which beare record in heauen, the father, the word, and the holy Ghost, & these three are one. B

8 And there are three which beare record in earth, the spirit, and water, and blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: For this is the witnes of God, which he testifieth of his sonne.

10 He that beleeueth on the sonne of God, hath the witnesse of himselfe: He that beleeueth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeued not the record that God gaue of his sonne.

11 And this is the record, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in his sonne.

12 He that hath the sonne hath life, and hee that hath not the sonne of God, hath not life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you that beleeue on the name of the sonne of God, that ye may know that ye haue eternall life, and that yee may beleeue on the name of the sonne of God.

14 And this is the trust that we haue in him that if wee aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs. C Matt. 7. 8 Mark. 11 Luke 11. Iohn 14.

15 And if we know that hee heare vs whatsoeuer we aske, wee know that we haue the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne which is not vnto death, he shall aske, and he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that he should pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne: and there is sin not vnto death.

18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not, but he that is begotte of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked toucheth him not.

19 We know that we are of God, and the whole world lyeth in wickednesse.

So We

20 Wee know that the ſonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs a minde to know him which is true: and we are in him that is true, through his ſonne Ieſus Chriſt: This ſame is very God, and eternall life.

21 Babes, keepe your ſelues from idols, Amen.

The end of the firſt Epiſtle of Saint Iohn.

# The ſecond Epiſtle of *Saint Iohn.*

1 Hee writeth to a certaine Ladie. 4 reioycing that her children walke in the trueth, 7 and exhorteth them vnto loue.

THe Elder vnto the elect Ladie and her children, whom I loue in the truth, and not I onely, but alſo all that haue knowne the truth.

2 For the truthes ſake which dwelleth in vs, and ſhalbe with vs for euer.

3 Grace be with you, mercie, and peace from God the father, & from the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, the ſonne of the father in truth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we haue receiued a commaundement of the father.

5 And now I beſeech thee, Ladie, not as though I wrote a new commaundement vnto thee: but that ſame which wee haue had from the beginning, that we ſhould loue one another.

Iohn 13. 1. Iohn 5 6 And this is the loue, that we ſhould walke after his commaundements: This is the commandement, that as yee haue heard from the beginning, ye ſhould walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entered into the world, which confeſſe not that Ieſus Chriſt is come in the flesh,

flesh. This is a deceiuer, and an Antichrist.
8 Looke on your selues, that we loose not that we haue wrought: but that we may haue a full reward.
9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ hath not God: he that endureth in the doctrine of Christ, hath both the father and the sonne.
10 If there come any vnto you and bring not this learning, him receiue not to house, neither bid him God speede.
11 For he that biddeth him God speede, is partaker of his euill deeds.
12 Hauing many thinges to write vnto you, I would not write with paper and inke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake with you mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.
13 The sonnes of thy elect sister greete thee, Amē.

The end of the second Epistle of Saint Iohn.

# The third Epistle of Saint Iohn.

1 He is glad of Gaius that he walketh in the truth. 8 He exhorteth to be louing vnto the poore Christians in their persecution.

THe Elder vnto the welbeloued Gaius, whom I loue in the truth.
2 Beloued I wish in all things that thou prosperedst and faredst well euen as thy soule prospereth.
3 For I reioyced greatly, when the brethren came, and testified of the truth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the truth.
4 I haue no greater ioy, then for to heare how that my sonnes walke in verite.
5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully whatsoeuer thou doest

doest to the brethren and to strangers:

6 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charitie before the Church: whom if thou bring forwards on their iourney after a godly sort, thou shalt doe well.

7 Because that for thy names sake they went forth taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will declare his deeds which he doth, ietting on vs with malicious words, and not content therewith, neither he himselfe receiueth the brethren, & forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good. He that doeth well, is of God: but he that doth euill hath not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it selfe: yea and we our selues also beare record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with inke and pen write vnto thee.

14 I trust I shall shortly see thee, & we shall speake mouth to mouth. Peace be vnto thee. The louers salute thee. Greete our friendes by name.

# The Epistle of Saint Iude.

Saint Iude admonisheth all Churches generally to take heede of all deceiuers, which goe about to drawe away the harts of the simple people, from the truth of God.

1 IVde the seruant of Iesus Christ, the brother of Iames, to them which are called and sanctified in GOD the father, and preserued in Iesus Christ:

2 Mercy

2 Mercy vnto you, & peace, & charitie be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needfull for me to write vnto you, exhorting you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once giuen vnto the saints.

4 For there are certaine vngodly men crept in, which were before of old ordeined to this condemnation, turning the grace of our God vnto wantonnesse and denying God, which is the onely Lord and our Lord Iesus Christ.

5 My minde is therefore to put you in remembrance hereof, forasmuch as ye once know this, how that the Lord after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, destroyed them which afterward beleeued not.

6 The Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darkenes, vnto the iudgment of the great day.

7 Euen as Sodome and Gomorrhe, and the Cities about them, which in like maner defiled themselues with fornication, and followed strange flesh, are set forth for an ensample, and suffer the paine of eternall fire. 23 Gen. 19. ſ

8 Likewise these filthie dreamers, defile the flesh, despise rulers, and speake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michael the Archangell, when he strone against the deuill, and disputed about the body of Moses, durst not giue railing sentence, but said, the Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euill of those things which they know not: and what things they know naturally, as beastes which are without reason, in those things they corrupt themselues.

11 Woe be vnto them for they haue gone in the Gen. 4. b
way of Cain, and are vtterly giuen to the errour of Num. 22.
Balaam for hire sake, and haue perished in the gainsaying of Core.

12 These

12 These are spots in your feastes of charite, when they feast with you, without all feare feeding themselues: cloudes they are without water, caried about with winds, trees withered at fruite gathering, and without fruite twise dead, and plucked vp by the rootes.

13 They are the raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame: they are wandring starres, to whom is reserued the mist of darkenesse for euer.

14 Enoch the seuenth from Adam, prophesied before of these, saying, behold, the Lord shall come with thousand of saints.

15 To geue iudgement against all men, and to rebuke all that are vngodly among them, of all their vngodly dedes which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their cruell speakings which vngodly sinners haue spoken against him.

Apoc. 1 b
Iday 3. c

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lustes, whose mouths speake proud things, they haue men in great reuerence because of aduantage.

17 But yee beloued, remember the wordes which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ,

Actes. 20
1. Tim. 4
2. Tim 3
2. Pet. 2.

18 How that they told you, that there should be mockers in the last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly lustes.

19 These are makers of sectes, sensuall, hauing not the spirit.

20 But yee, dearely beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost.

21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life.

22 And haue cõpassion of some, seperating them:

23 And others saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire: hating euen the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Vnto him that is able to keepe you free from sinne, & to present you faultlesse before the presence

of

of his glory with ioy.

25 To God our Sauiour, which onely is wise, be glory, and maiestie, dominion, and power, now and euer. Amen.

The end of the Epistle of Saint Iude.

# The Reuelation of Saint Iohn *the Diuine.*

## The first Chapter,

1 The cause of the Reuelation, 3. Of them that reade it. 4. Iohn writeth to the seuen churches. 5. The maiestie and office of the sonne of God. 20. The vision of the candlesticks and starres.

THe Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vnto him, for to shew vnto his seruants things which must shortly come to passe and when he had sent, hee shewed by his Angell vnto his seruant Iohn.

2 Which bare record of the word of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Happie is he that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophecie and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn to the seuen Churches in Asia, Grace bee vnto you, and peace from him which is, and which was, and which is to come, & from the seuen spirits which are before his throne:

5 And from Iesus Christ which is a faithfull wit-

nesse and first begotten of the dead, and Lord ouer the kings of the earth: vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his owne bloud.

Hebr 11. 1. Pet. 2. 1. Iohn. 1

6 And made vs kings and priests vnto God, and his father: to him be glory and dominion for euermore, Amen.

Matt. 24 Dan 7. d

7 Behold, he commeth with the cloudes, and all eies shall see him, and they also which pearced him: and all kinreds of the earth shall waile before him: euen so, Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the ending, saith the Lord almighty, which is, and which was, and which is to come.

9 I Iohn your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the Ile that is called Pathmos, for the word of God, & for the witnessing of Iesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirite on the Lordes day, and heard behind mee a great voice, as it had beene of a trumpe.

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: that thou seest write in a booke, and sende it vnto the seuen churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamos, & vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, & vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 And I turned backe to see the voice that spake to me. And when I was turned, I saw seuen golden candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the feete, and girt about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head and his haires were white, as white ℭ woolll, and as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire.

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, as though they burnt in a furnace: and his voyce as the sound of many waters.

Matt. 17

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out

out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged swoorde: and his face shone euen as the Sun in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete euen as dead: and he laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, feare not, I am the first and the last. Esay 44.

18 And am a liue, and was dead: and beholde I am aliue for euermore, Amen, and haue the keies of hell and of death. Rom. 5.b

19 Write therefore the things which thou hast seen and the things which are, and the things which shall be fulfilled hereafter.

20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen candlesticks. The seuen starres, are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

## The ii Chapter.

1 He exhorteth foure Churches. 5. To repentance. 10. to perseuerance, patience and amendment. 14. 20. 21. 22 well by threatnings. 7. 10. 17. 26. as by promises of reward.

VNto the Angell of the Church of Ephesus, write ✠ These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, & that walketh in the midst of the seuen golden candlesticks.

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and patience. and how thou canst not forbeare them which are euil. and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them lyers:

3 And hast suffered, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheless, I haue somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen and repent, and doe the first workes: or else I will come vnto thee shortly, & will remoone thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, because thou hatest the deedes

of the Nicolaitanes which deedes I also hate.

26 7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the spirit
saith vnto the churches: to him that ouercõmeth, will
Gen. 2. b I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the midst
of the paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angell of the church of Smyrna
write. These things saith he that is first and the last,
which was dead, and is aliue:

9 I knowe thy workes, and tribulation, and po
uertie (but thou art rich:) and I know the blaspheme of them which call themselues Iewes, and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those thinges which thou shalt
suffer: behold the deuill shall cast some of you into pri
son, to tempt you, and ye shall haue tribulation ten
dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will
giue thee a crowne of life.

11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the spirit
saith vnto the Churches. He that ouercommeth, shall
not be hurt of the of the second death.

12 And to the Angell of the church in Pergamos,
write, These things saith he which hath the sharpe
sword with two edges:

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest,
euen where Satans seate is, and that thou holdest
fast my name, and hast not denyed my faith, euen in
those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was
slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

C 14 But I haue a few things against thee, because
Num. 31 thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of
Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling
blocke before the children of Israell, that they should
eate of meate sacrificed vnto Idols, and commit for
nication.

15 Euen so hast thou them that maintaine the doc
trine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee shortly,
and will fight against them with the sworde of my
mouth.

17 Let him that hath an eare heare what the spirit
saith

saith vnto the churches. To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eate of Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiueth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the church of Thyatira write, These things saith the sonne of God, who hath eyes like a flame of fire, and his feete are like fine brasse:

19 I know thy workes, and thy charity, seruice, & faith, and thy patience, & thy deedes which are moe at the last then at the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee because thou suffrest that woman Iesabel which called her selfe a prophetesse, to teach, and to deceiue my seruantes, to make them commit fornication, and to eate meate sacrificed vnto Idols. 3. Reg. 16. 4 Reg. 9.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great aduersitie, except they repent of their deedes.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shal know that I am he which searcheth the raines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according to his workes. Iere. 17.

24 Vnto you I say & vnto other of them of Thiatira, as many as haue not this learning, and which haue not knowne the deepenes of Satan, as they say I will put vpon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye haue already, hold fast til I come.

26 And whosoeuer ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes vnto the end, to him I will giue power ouer nations:

27 And hee shall rule them with a rod of iron and as the vessels of a potter, shall they be broken to shiuers: Psal. 2.

28 Euen as I receiued of my father, so will I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the spirit
saith to the Churches.

The iii. Chapter.

1 He exhorteth the Churches or ministers to the true pro-
fession of faith, and to watching.

A AND write vnto the Angel of the church that is at
Sardis, These thinges saith he that hath the seuen
spirits of God, and the seuen starres, I knowe thy
workes, euen that thou hast a name that thou liuest, & thou art dead.

2 Be awake, and strength the thinges which remaine, that are readie to die: For I haue not found thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast receiued and heard, and hold fast, & repent. If thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a theefe, & thou shalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that ouercommeth, shall be thus clothed in white aray, and I will not blot out his name out of the booke of life: and I will confesse his name before my father, and before his Angels.

6 Let him that hath an eare heare what the spirit saith vnto the Churches.

B 7 And write vnto the Angell of the Church of
Philadelphia these things saith hee that is holy and
Esa. 22. f true, which hath the key of Dauid, which openeth
Iob 12. c & no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth:

8 I know thy workes: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my sayings: and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselues Iewes and are not but doe lie: behold, I will make them, that they shall come, and worship before thy feete, and shall knowe

that

that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the wordes of my patience, therefore I will kepe thee from the houre of temptacion, which will come vpon all the worlde to try them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come shortly, hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take away thy crowne

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a piller in the temple of my God, and hee shall goe no more out, and I will write vpon him the name of my God and the name of the citie of my God, which is newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God: and I will write vpon him my newe name.

13 Let him that hath an eare heare what the spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church which is in Laudicea, write, these things saith Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creatures of God. D

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither cold nor hote: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then, because thou art luke warme and neyther cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and encreased with goods, and haue neede of nothing: and knowest not how that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blind, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, that thy filthy nakednes doe not appeare, and annoint thine eyes with eye salue, that thou mayest see. 2. Cor. 5.a

19 As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten be fruent therefore and repent.

20 Beholde I stand at the dooze, and knocke, if my man heare my voice, and open the dooze, I will come into him, and will sup with him, and hee with me. Pro. 3. b Heb. 12.

21 To him that ouercommeth, will I grant to sit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame and haue sitten with my father in his throne.

22 He that hath an eare, heare what the spirit saith to the Churches.

## The iiii. Chapter.

1 The vision of the maiestie of God. 2. He seeth the throne and one sitting vpon it. 8. and 24. seates about it, with xxiiii elders sitting vpon them, and foure beasts praising God day and night.

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heauen: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me, which said, Come vp hither, and I will shewe thee thinges which must be fulfilled hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit: & behold a throne was set in heauen, and one sate on the throne

3 And hee that sate, was to looke vpon like a Iasper stone, and a Sardine stone: and there was a rainebow about the throne in sight like vnto an Emeralde,

4 And about the throne were foure and twentie seates, and vpon the seates I saw foure and twentie elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold.

5 And out of the throne doe proceed lightenings and thunderings, and voices: and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are seuen spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse, like vnto Christall: and in the middest of the throne, and round about the throne, were foure beastes full of eyes before and behind.

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the se-
25 cond beast like a Calfe and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Eagle.

8 And the foure beastes had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they had no rest day neither night, saying, Holy, holy,

holy, Lord God almightie, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beastes gaue glory, and honor and thanke to him that sate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer.

10 The foure and twentie elders fel downe before him that sat on the throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euer and for euer, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying,

11 Thou art worthy O Lord, to receiue glory, & honour, and power: For thou hast created all thinges, and for thy pleasures sake they are & were created.

## The v. Chapter.

1 He seeth the Lambe opening the booke. 8. 14. and therefore the foure beasts the 24. Elders. And the Angels prayse the Lambe. and doe him worship, 9. for their redemption and other benefites.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the throne, a booke written within, and the backside sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong Angell preaching with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the booke and to loose the seales thereof.

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open & to read the booke neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith vnto me, Weepe not behold: that Lyon that is of the tribe of Iuda, the roote of Dauid, hath obtained to open the booke, & to loose the seuen seales thereof.

6 And I beheld, and loe in the midst of the throne and of the foure beastes, & the midst of the elders stood a lambe as though he had beene killed, hauing seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirites of God, sent into all the earth.

7 And

7 And hee came, and tooke the booke out of the
Ps right hand of him that sate vpon the throne.
8 And when hee had taken the booke, the foure beastes, and foure and twentie elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one of them harpes, & golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of Saints.
9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the booke, & to open the seales thereof: for thou wast killed, & hast redeemed vs to GOD by thy blood, out of al kindreds, and tongues, and people, and nation:
10 And hast made vs vnto our God kinges and priests: and we shall raigne on the earth.
11 And I beheld, and heard the voyce of many angels about the throne, and about the beastes and the elders, and heard thousand thousands.
12 Saying with a loud voice, worthy is the Lambe that was killed, to receiue power, and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.
13 And all creatures which are in heauen, and on the earth and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power be vnto him that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore.
C 14 And the foure beastes said, Amen. And the foure and twentie Elders fell vppon their faces, and worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

## The vi. Chapter.

The Lambe openeth the six seales, and many things follow the opening thereof.

A 1 AND I saw when the Lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beasts say, as it were the noyse of thunder, Come, and see.
2 And I saw, and beheld, there was a white horse and he that sate on him had a bow, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering, and for to ouercome.
3 And when he had opened the seconde seale, I heard

heard the second beast say, Come, and see. Esay 8.7

4 And there went out another horse that was red and power was given to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when hee had opened the third seale I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a blacke horse: & he that sate on him had a payre of ballances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the middes of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheate for a peny, and three measures of barly for a peny, and oyle and wine see thou hurt not.

7 And when hee had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see. 23.

8 And I looked, and beheld, a pale horse and his name that sate on him was death, and hell followeth with him: and power was given unto them over the the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when hee had opened the fifth seale, I saw under the altar the soules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they had. Iohn 2.

10 And they cryed with a loud voice, saying, How long tarriest thou Lord holy and true, to iudg and to auenge our blood on them, that dwell on the earth?

11 And long white garments were given unto euery one of them: and it was saide unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow seruants, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld, when hee had opened the sixth seale, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the Sun was as blacke as sackecloth made of hayre and the moone was all euen as bloud.

13 And the starres of heauen fell unto the earth,

Euen as a figge tree casteth her vntimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

14 And heauen vanished away as a scroule when it is rouled together, and all mountaines and Iles were moued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the cheife captaines and the mightie men, and euery bondman, and euery freeman hid themselues in the dens, and in the rockes of the hilles:

16 And sayd to the hilles and rockes, Fall on vs and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who is able to endure?

The vii. Chapter.

9 He seeth the seruants of God sealed in their foreheads out of all nations and people. 15. which though they suffer trouble, yet the Lambe feedeth them, leadeth them to the fountaines of liuing water. 17 and God shal wipe away all teares from their eyes.

AFter that, I saw foure Angels standing on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree,

2 And I saw another Angell ascending from the rising of the sun, hauing the seale of the liuing God and hee cryed with a loud voyce to the foure Angels to whom power was giuen to hurt the earth and the sea.

3 Saying hurt not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, till we shall haue sealed the seruantes of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred and fortie and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the Children of Israell.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thou-

sand

Osee 10 d
Luk. 23. d

sand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Nepthalp were sealed twelue
thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed
twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thou- 23.
sand. Of the tribe of Isachar were sealed twelue thou-
sand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelue thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue
thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo a great multitude
which no man could number, of all nations, & kin-
reds, and people, & tongues stood before the throne
and before the Lambe, clothed with white garments,
and palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loud voice, saying, Saluati-
on be ascribed vnto him that sitteth vpon the throne
of our God, and vnto the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stoode in the compasse of
the throne, and of the elders, and of the foure beasts,
and fell before the throne on their faces, and wor-
shipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wise-
dome, and thankes, and honour, and power, & might,
be vnto our God for euermore, Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying vnto me
What are these which are arayed in white garmentes
and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him Lord thou wotest. And he c
said to me, These are they which came out of greate
tribulation and haue washed their long robes, and
made them white by the bloud of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne
of God, and serue him day and night in his temple:
and hee that sitteth in the throne will dwell among
them.

16 They shal hunger no more, neither thirst, nei-
ther

ther shall the sunne light on them, neither any heate.

17 For the Lambe which is in the middes of the throne shall feede them, and shall lead them vnto liuing fountaines of water, and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

## The viii. Chapter.

1 The seuenth seale is opened, there is silence in heauen. 6 The foure Angels blow their trumpets & great plagues follow vpon the earth.

AND when he had opened the seuenth seale; there was silence in heauen about the space of halfe an houre.

2 And I saw the seuen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angell came and stood before the altar, hauing a golden censer, & many odours were giuen vnto him, that he should offer with the prayers of all saints vpon the golden altar, which was before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours which came with the prayers of saints, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angell tooke the Censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, & cast it into the earth: & voices were made, and thundrings, and lightenings, & earth quake.

6 And the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blow.

23 7 The first Angel blew and there was made haile and fire mingled with bloud, and they were cast into the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt.

8 And the second Angell blew, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire, was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea turned to bloud.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, dyed, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angell blewe, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampe

and

and it fell into the third part of the riuers and into the fountaines of waters:

11 And the name of the starre is called wormwood and the third part was turned to wormwood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angell blew, and the third part of the sunne was smitten, and the third parte of the moone, and the third parte of starres, that the third part of them should be darkned: and the day was smitten that the third part of it should not shine, and likewise the night.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flieng through the mids of heauen, saying, with a loud voice Woe, woe, woe to the inhabiters of the earth, because of the voices to come of the trumpe of the three Angels which were yet to blow.

The ix. Chapter.

1. 2 The first woe is past. 14. The foure Angels that were bound are loosed. 18, And the third part of men is killed.

AND the fifth Angell blew, and I sawe a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth: and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and the smoke of the pit arose, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the Sunne and the ayre were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locustes vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power as the Scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commaunded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was giuen, that they should not kill them, but that they should be vexed fiue moneths and their paine was as the paine that commeth of a Scorpion when he shall haue stricken a man.

6 And in those daies shall men seeke death, and shall

Esay 2.d Osee. 10. Luke 23. 30 shall not find it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the similitude of the locustes was like vnto horses prepared vnto battaile, and on their heades were as it were crownes like vnto gold, and their faces were as it had beene the faces of men.

8 And they had hayre, as the hayre of women, & their teeth were as the teeth of Lyons.

9 And they had habergions as it were habergions of yron, And the sound of their winges was as the sound of the Charets, when many horses runne to battell.

10 And they had tailes like vnto scorpions, & there were stinges in their tailes: and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Appollion, that is to say a destroyer.

12 One woe is past, and behold two woes come yet after this.

13 And the sixth Angel blew, and I heard a voice from the foure hornes of the golden altar which is before God.

14 Saying to the sixt Angel which had the trumpe loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeere, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the horsemen of the armies were twenty thousand times ten thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, hauing fiery habergions of a iacint colour and brimstone, & the heades of the horses were as the heades of lions, & out of their mouths commeth forth fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 And of these three was the third parte of men killed, that is to say, of the fire, and of the smoake, and

of the brimstone, which proceeded out of the mouths of them.

19 For their powers be in their mouths, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, hauing heads and with them they do hurt.

20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the deeds of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, and Idols of gold, and siluer, & brasse, & stone, & of wood, which neither can see, neither heare, neither goe.

21 Also they repented not of their murders, and of their sorceries, neither of their fornication, neither of their thefts.

## The x. Chapter.

1 The Angell hath the booke open. 6. He sweareth there shal bee no more time, 9 Hee giueth the booke vnto Iohn which eateth it vp.

AND I saw another mightie Angell come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloude, and the raine-bow vpon his head: and his face as it were the Sun and his feete as it were pillers of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little booke open and he put his right foote vpon the sea, and his left foot vpon the earth:

3 And cryed with a loude voice, as when a Lion roareth: and when he had cryed, seuen thunders vttered their voices.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice frō heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders vttered and write them not.

5 And the Angell which I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euermore which created heauen, and things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which therein are, that there should be no longer time.

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seuenth angel, when he shall begin to blow, and the mysterie of

God shalbe finished, as he declareth to his seruantes the prophets.

Ezech 2 a 8 And the voice which I heard from heauen spake vnto mee againe, and sayde, Goe and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angell which standeth vpon the sea and vpon the earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angell and said vnto him, Giue me the little booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, and eat it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth as sweet as hony.

Ezec 3 a 10 And I tooke the little booke out of the angels hand, and eate it vp, & it was in my mouth as sweet as hony: and assoone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto me, Thou must prophecie againe among the people, and nations, and tongues, and to many kings.

## The xi Chapter.

1 The temple is measured. 3. Two witnesses raysed vp by the Lord, are murthered by the beast.

AND then was giuen me a reede like vnto a rod, & the Angell stood by, saying, Rise, and mete the temple of God, and the altar and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they tread vnder foote fourtie and two moneths.

3 And I will giue power vnto my two witnesses and they shall prophecie a thousand, two hundred, & threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two Olyue trees, & two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth,

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and consumeth their enemies, and if any man will hurt them, thus wise must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecying: and haue power ouer waters, to turne them to bloud, and to smite

the

the earth with all maner of plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomles pit, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them. 25

8 And their bodies shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kinreds, & tongues and they of the nations, shall see their bodies three dayes and a halfe, and shall not suffer their bodies to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shall reioyce ouer them, and bee glad, and shall sende giftes one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and a halfe, the spirite of life comming from God, entered into them: & they stood vp vpon their feete, and great feare fell vpon al them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a cloud, And their enemies sawe them.

13 And the same houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie fell, and in the earthquake were slaine names of men seuen thousand and the remnant were afraid, and gaue glory to God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe commeth anon. ℭ

15 And the seuenth Angell blewe, and there were made great voices in heauen, saying, The kingdoms of this world are our Lords, and his Christs and he shall raigne for euermore.

16 And the xxiiii. Elders which sit before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God.

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, O Lord God

almightie, which art and wast, and art to come: for thou hast receiued the great might and hast raigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should bee iudged, and that thou shouldest giue rewards vnto thy seruants the Prophets and Saints, and to them that feare thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heauen and there were seene in his temple the Arke of his Testament: and there followed lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and earthquake, and much haple.

## The xii. Chapter.

1 There appeareth in heauen a woman clothed with the sunne.

A AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen, a woman clothed with the Sunne, and the Moone vnder her feete, vpon her head, a crowne of twelue starres:

2 And she being with childe crieth trauailing in birth, and pained ready to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen, for behold a great red Dragon hauing seuen heads and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

4 And his taile draweth the third part of the starres of heauen, and he cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuour her child assoone as it were borne.

5 And she brought forth a man child, which shall rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her sonne was taken vp vnto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where shee hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousand, two hundred, and threescore dayes.

B 7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his angels fought with the dragon, and the dragon

gon fought and his angels.

8 And preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great Dragon, that old serpent called the Deuill and Satanas, was cast out, which deceiueth all the world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voyce saying in heauen, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of his brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they ouercame him by the blood of the lambe, and by the word of his testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuil is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, because he knoweth that hee hath but a short time.

13 And when the Dragon sawe that he was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

14 And to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that she might flee into the wilderneſſe, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the Serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, as it had beene a flood: that hee might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

16 And the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the riuer which the Dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the Dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made warre with the remnant of her seede, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stood on the sand.

The

The xiii. Chapter.

1, 8. The beast deceiueth the reprobate. 2. 4. 12. and is confirmed by another, 17. The priuiledge of the beasts marke.

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw was like a Leopard, & his feete were as the feete of a Beare, & his mouth as the mouth of a Lyon: and the Dragon gaue him his power, and his seat, and great authoritie.

3 And I sawe one of his heads as it were wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: And all the world wondred after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the Dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, & blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to doe fortie and two moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth to blaspheme against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saintes, and to ouercome them: And power was giuen him ouer all kindreds, and tongues and nations.

8 And all that dwelt vpon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, which was killed from the beginning of the world.

Gen. 9 b 9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

Mat. 26 c 10 He that leadeth into captiuitie, shall goe into captiuitie: He that killeth with a sword, must be killed with a sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and he had two hornes like a Lambe, and

he spake as did the Dragon.

12 And he doth all that the first beast could doe in his presence, and hee causeth the earth & them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire to come from heauen on the earth in the sight of men,

14 And deceiueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of those signes which he had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwel on earth that they should make an image to the beast which hath the wound of a sword, and did liue.

15 And hee had power to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast, should both speak, & should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich & poore, free & bond, that he should giue them a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is sixe hundred threescore and sixe.

## The xiiii. Chapter.

1 The notable companie of the Lambe. 6 One announceth the Gospell. 8 Another, the fall of Babylon. 9 And the third warneth to flee from the beast. 13. Of the Lores Harvest.

AND I looked, and lo a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fortie and foure thousand, hauing his fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauen as the sound of many waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harping with their harpes.

3 And they ſing as it were a newe ſong, before the throne, and before the foure beaſts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that ſong but the hundred and fortie and foure thouſand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 Theſe are they which were not defiled with women, for they are virgines: Theſe are they which follow the lambe whether ſoeuer he goeth: Theſe were redeemed from men, being the firſt fruites vnto God and to the lambe.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without ſpot before the throne of God.

6 And I ſaw an other angell flee in the middeſt of heauen, hauing the euerlaſting goſpell to preach on them that dwell on earth, and to all nations, and kinreds, and tongues, and people.

7 Saying with a loude voyce. Feare God, and
28 giue glory to him, for the houre of his iudgement is
Actes 14 come: and worſhip him that made heauen and earth, and the ſea, and fountaines of waters.

8 And there followed an other Angel, ſaying, Ba-
Iſay 21. bilon, is fallen, is fallen that great Citie, for ſhe made
Iere. 51. all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And the third Angel followed them, ſaying with a loude voyce. If any man worſhip the beaſt and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The ſame ſhall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God: yea, of the pure wine which is powred in the cup of his wrath, and he ſhall be puniſhed in fire and brimſtone before the Angels, and before the lambe.

11 And the ſmoke of their torment aſcendeth vp euermore: And they haue no reſt day nor night, which worſhip the beaſt and his image, and whoſoeuer receiueth the print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the Saints: Here are they that keepe the commaundements of God, and the faith of Jeſus.

13 And

13 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, write, Blessed are the dead, which hereafter die in the Lord. Euen so saith the spirite, that they may rest from their labour, and their workes follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and vpon the cloud one sitting like vnto the sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, & in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another angell came out of the temple, crying with a loud voyce to him that sate on the cloud, Ioel 3. Thrust in his sickle and reape, for the time is come to reape, for the haruest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sate on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another Angell came out of the temple which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another angell came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cried with a loude crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth, for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vineyard of the earth, & cast it into the great winefat of the wrath of God.

20 And the winefat was troden without the citie, and bloud came out of the fat euen vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundred furlongs.

## The xv. Chapter.

3 The song of them that ouercame the beast.

AND I sawe another signe in heauen great and marueilous, seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues, for in them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a glassie sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victorie of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, & of the number of his name, stand on the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God.

3 And

Esay 22. Ierem. 51.

3 And they sing the songe of Moses the seruaunt of God, and the song of the lambe, saying, Great & marueylous are thy woorkes, Lord God almightie: iust and true are they wayes, thou king of saints.

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy name? for thou art onely holy: And all Gentiles shall come & worship before thee, for thy iudgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the seuen angels came out of the temple hauing the seuen plagues, clothed impure and white linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

26 7 And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto the seuen angels seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God which liueth for euermore,

8 And the temple was full of the smoke of the glory of God, and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen angels were fulfilled.

## The xvi. Chapter.

1 The angels powre out their vials full of wrath 6 and what plagues follow thereof, 15 Admonition to take heede and watch.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seuen angels, Goe pour vpon the earth.

2 And the first angel went and powred out his vial vpon earth, and there fell a noysome and a sore botch vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel shed out his vial vpon the sea, and it turned as it were into the bloud of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the sea.

4 And the third angel shed out his vial vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, and they turned to bloud.

5 And

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Lord which art, and wast, thou art righteous, and that holy one, because thou hast given such iudgements.

6 For they haue shed out the bloud of Saints and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen them bloud to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so Lord God almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements. 25

8 And the fourth angel powred out his vial on the Sunne, and power was giuen vnto him to vexe men with feruent heate of fire.

9 And men boiled in great heate, and blasphemed the name of GOD, which hath power ouer these plagues, and they repented not, to giue him glory.

10 And the fift angell powred out his viall vpon the seate of the beast, and his kingdome waxed darke, and they gnew their tongues for sorrow.

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen, for their sorrowes, and for their sores, and repented not for their deedes.

12 And the sixth angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that the way of the kings of the east should be prepared.

13 And I sawe three vncleane spirites like frogs come out of the mouth of the Dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirites of deuils working miracles, to go out vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God almightie. C

15 Behold, I come as a theefe. Happy is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, least hee walke naked, and men see his filthinesse. Matt. 24. 2. Pet. 3. 1. Thess. 5.

16 And he gathereth them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue Armagedon.

17 And the seuenth angell powred out his viall into the ayre: and there came a great voyce out of

the

the temple of heauen, from the throne saying, It is done.

18 And there followed voices, thundrings, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great citie was deuided into three partes, and the cities of the nations fell: And great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

20 Euery Ile also fled away, and the mountaines were not mooued.

21 And there fell a great hayle, as it had beene talents out of heauen, vpon the men, and the men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile, for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

## The xvii. Chapter.

3 The description of the great whore, 8 and her sinnes, and punishment.

1 AND there came one of the seuen Angels which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come, I will shewe vnto thee the iudgement of the great whore, that sitteth vpon many waters.

2 With whom haue committed fornication the kings of the earth and the inhabiters of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried me away in the spirit into the wildernesse: And I saw a woman sit vpon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, hauing seuen heads, and tenne hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour and decked with gold, precious stone, and pearles, hauing a cup of gold in her hand, full of abhominations and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead was a name written a mystery, great Babylon the mother of whoredome and abhominations of the earth.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood

of the saints, and with the bloud of the martyrs of Jesus: And when I saw her, I wondred with great marualle.

7 And the angel said vnto mee, Wherefore marueilest thou? I will shewe thee a mysterie of the woman and of the beast that beareth her, which hath seuen heads and ten hornes. 25

8 And the beast which thou sawest was & is not, & shall ascend out of the bottomles pit, & goeth into perdition & they that dwell on the earth shall wonder (whose names are not written in the booke of life from the beginning of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is a meaning that hath wisedome, The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, on which the woman sitteth: They are also seuen kings.

10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight: and is one of the seuen, and goeth into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten kings, which haue receiued no kingdome as yet: but receiue power as kings at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power and strength to the beast.

14 These shall fight with the Lambe, & the Lambe shall ouercome them: For hee is the Lord of Lords, & 1. Tim. 6
and king of kings, and they that are on his side, are called, and chosen, and faithfull.

15 And he saith vnto me, The water which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are people, and folke, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that will hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to doe with one consent for to giue their kingdome

kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God shalbe fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great Citie which raigneth ouer the kinges of the earth.

## The xviii. Chapter.

a. 9. The louers of the world are sory for the fall of the whore of Babylon. 20 But they that be of God, haue cause to reioyce for her destruction.

1 AND after that, I sawe another angell come from heauen, hauing great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voyce, saying, Great Babylon is fallen, is fallen, & is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of all foule spirites, and a cage of all vncleane and hurtfull birdes.

Esay 21. Ierem. 51. a

3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the aboundance of her pleasures.

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen say, come away from her my people, that yee be not partakers of her sinnes, and that yee receiue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are gone vp to heauen, and God hath remembred her wickednesse.

6 Reward her euen as shee rewarded you, and giue her double according to her workes: and powre in double to her in the same cup which shee filled vnto you.

7 And as much as shee glorified her selfe, and liued wantonly, so much powre yee in for her of punishment and sorrow: for she sayth in her heart, I sit being a Queene, and am no widdow, and shall see no sorrow.

Esay 46.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and sorrow, and hunger, and shee shall be vterly burnt with fire, for strong is the Lord which iudgeth her.

9 And

9 And they shall bewaile her, and the kings of the earth shall lament for her, which haue committed fornication with her, and haue liued wantonly with her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning.

10 Standing a farre off for feare of her punishment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mightie citie, for at one houre is thy iudgement come. Iere. 51.

11 And the marchants of the earth doe weepe and waile ouer her, for no man buyeth their ware any more.

12 The ware of gold, and siluer, and precious stone, and pearles, and cenes, and purple, and silke, & scarlet, and all Thin wood, and all maner vessels of yuorie, & all maner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse and yron, and marble,

13 And Cinamone, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine flowre, and wheat, and beasts, and sheepe, and horses, and charets and bodies, and soules of men,

14 And the apples that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were daintie and had in price, are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all. ℂ

15 The marchants of these things which were wared rich, shall stande a farre off from her for feare of the punishment of her, weeping and wailing.

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in lenen, & purple, and scarlet, and decked, with gold, and precious stones and pearles: Iere. 51.

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to naught. And euery ship gouernour, and all they that occupie ships, and shipmen, and as many as worke in the sea, stood a farre off.

18 And cried when they sawe the smoke of her burning, saying, What citie is like vnto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heades, & cried, weeping, and wailing, and saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the Iere. 51.

sea,

Sea by reason of her costlines, for at one houre is he made desolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets, for God hath giuen your iudgement on her.

21 And a mightie angel tooke vp a stone like a great milstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, With such violence shall the great citie Babylon bee cast, & shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voyces of harpers & musitions, & of pipers, and trumpetters, shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftesman, of whatsoeuer craft he be, shalbe found any more in thee: and the sound of a mill, shall be heard no more at all in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee, and a voyce of the bridegroome and of the bride, shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth, & with thine inchantment were deceiued all nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophetes, and of the Saintes, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

## The xix. Chapter.

Prayses are giuen vnto God for iudging the whore.

AFter these thinges, I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: saluation, and glory, and honor, and power, be ascribed to the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous are his iudgements, for he hath iudged the great whore which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath throughly auenged the blood of his seruants of her hand.

3 And againe they said, Alleluia, and her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure and twentie elders and the foure beastes fell downe and worshipped God that sate on the throne saying Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne saying, Prayse our Lord God all ye that be his seruants, and ye that feare him both small and great.

6 And

6 And I heard as it were the voice of much people, euen as the voice of many waters, & as the voice of strong thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord our God omnipotent raigneth.

7 Let vs be glad, and reioyce, and giue honour to him: for the marriage of the Lambe is come, & his wife hath made herselfe ready. 25

8 And to her was graunted that she should be arayed with pure and goodly raines: for the raines is the righteousnesse of saints. Matt. 22

9 And he said vnto me, Write: Happie are they which are called vnto the supper of the Lambes marriage. And he said vnto me, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feete to worship him: and he said vnto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow seruant, & of thy brethren that haue the testimony of Iesus. Worship God: for the testimony of Iesus is the spirit of prophecy.

11 And I sawe heauen open, and beholde a white horse: and he that sat vpon him, was called faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse he doth iudge & make battaile.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, & on his head were many crownes, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himselfe.

13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in bloud and his name is called the word of God

14 And the armies which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horses, clothed with white and pure raines.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe sworde, that with it he should smite the heathen and hee shall rule them with a rod of iron, & he treadeth the winefat of the fierceness and wrath of almightie God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, King of kings and Lord of lords.

17 And I saw an Angell stand in the sunne and he cryed with a loud voice, saying to all the fowles that fly by the mids of heauen, come & gather your selues

together vnto the supper of the great God.

18 That they may eat the flesh of kinges, and the flesh of high captaines and the flesh of mighty men, & the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men, and bondmen, and of small & great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kinges of the earth and their armies gathered together, to make battaile against him that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 And the beast was taken and with him that false Prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceiued them that receiued the beasts marke, and them that worshipped his Image. These both were cast quicke into a ponde of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sate vpon the horse, which proceedeth out of his mouth: & all the foules were filled with their flesh.

## The xx. Chapter.

1 Satan being bound for a certaine time. 7. And after let loose, vexeth the Church grieuously.

AND I saw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand,

2 And he tooke the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satanas, and bound him a thousand yeares.

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp, and set a seale on him, that he should deceiue the nations no more, till the thousand yeares should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed for a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate vpon them, & iudgement was giuen vnto them: & I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnes of Iesus and for the worde of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neyther his image, neyther had taken his marke vpon their foreheades, or in their handes

handes, and they liued & raigned with Christ a thousand yeares.

5 But the other of the dead men did not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeares were finished, this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: for on such the second death hath no power, but they shalbe the preists of God & of Christ and shall raigne with him a thousand yeares.

7 And when the thousand yeares are expired Satan shall be loosed out of prison. Esay 38.

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth Gog & Magog to gather them together to battell, whose number is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went vp in the plaine of the earth and compassed the tents of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: and fire came downe from God out of heauen and deuoured them:

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet shall be tormented day and night for euermore.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on it from whose face fled away both the earth & the heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I saw the dead both small and great stand before God: and the bookes were opened: and another booke was opened which is the booke of life: and the dead were iudged of those things which were written in the bookes according to their deedes.

13 And the Sea gaue vp her dead which were in her: and death and hell deliuered vp the dead which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to his deedes.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

The xxi. Chapter

14 The blessed estate of the godly, & 17. and miserable condition of the wicked.

1 AND I sawe a newe heauen and a newe earth: for the first heauen and the first earth were vanished away, and there is no more sea.

Esay 45. 2. Pet. 3.

2 And I Iohn sawe the holy citie new Hierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride garnished for her husband.

Esay 25.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shall bee with them, and bee their God.

4 And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes, and there shalbe no more death, neither sorow, neither crying, neither shall there be any more paine, for the former things are gone.

Esay 43. 2. Cor. 5.

5 And he that sate vpon the throne, said behold I make all things new, And he said vnto mee, write: for these words are true and faithfull.

6 And he said vnto mee, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, I will giue vnto him that is a thirst of the well of the water of life freely.

7 He that ouercommeth shall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he shalbe my sonne.

8 But the fearfull and vnbeleeuing, & the abhominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and Idolaters, and all lyars, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death:

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues and talked with mee, saying: Come hether, I will shew thee the bride, the lambes wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great high mountaine, & shee shewed me the great city holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God.

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her shining was like

like vnto a stone most precious, euen like a Iasper, cleare as Chrystall.

12 And had a wall great and high, and hath twelue gates, and at the gates twelue angels, and names written, which are the names of the twelue Tribes of Israel.

13 On the East side three gates, and on the north side three gates, and towards the south three gates, and from the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the twelue names of the Lambes twelue Apostles.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lyeth foure square, and the length was as large as the breedth: and hee measured the citie with the reede twelue thousand furlongs, and the length and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof an hundred, and fourtie and foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is of the angell.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper: & the city was of pure gold, like vnto clear glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie was garnished with all maner of precious stones. The first foundation was Iasper, the second Saphyre, the third a Chalcedonie, the fourth an Emerald.

20 The fift Sardonix, the sixt Cardius, the seuenth Chrysolite, the eight Beril, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chrysoprasus, the eleuenth a Iacint, the twelfth an Amethyst.

21 ¶ The twelue gates were twelue pearles, euery gate was of one pearle, and the streete of the citie was pure gold, as it were shining glasse. Esay 40.

22 And I saw no temple therein, for the Lord God almighty, and the lambe are the temple of it.

23 And the citie had no need of the sunne, neither of the Moone to lighten it, for the glory of God did Esay 60.

lighten it, and the lambe is the light of it.

24 And the nations of them which are saued shall
Esay 60. walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour vnto it.

25 And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day, for there shalbe no night.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the Gentiles vnto it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter vnto it any vnsleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination, or maketh lies: but they only which are written in the lambs booke of life.

## The xxii. Chapter.

1 The riuer of water of life. 9 The Angell will not be worshipped.

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life,
A cleare as Christall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe:

2 In the middest of the street of it, and of either side of the riuer, was there wood of life, which bare twelue manner of fruites, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the wood serued to heale the people withall.

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but the throne of God and the Lambe shall be in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

Esay 42. 4 And they shall see his face, and his name shalbe in their foreheads.

5 And there shalbe no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the Sunne, for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall raigne for euermore.

6 And he said vnto mee, These things are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his angell to shewe vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be fulfilled.

B 7 Behold I come shortly: happy is he that keepeth the saying of the prophecy of this booke.

Apoc. 1. 8 I Iohn saw these things, and heard them. And
Apoc. 19. when I had heard & seene, I fell downe to worship
before

before the feete of the Angell which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he vnto me, See thou doe it not for I am thy fellow seruant, and the fellow seruant of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke, but worship God.

10 And he saith vnto me, Seale not the sayings of the prophecie of this booke, for the time is at hand.

11 He that doth euill, let him doe euill still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and hee that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and hee that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come shortly, and my reward is with me to giue euery man according as his deedes shalbe.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning & the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandements that their power may be in the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without shalbe dogs and inchanters, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth or maketh leasings.

16 I Iesus sent mine Angell to testifie vnto you these things in the Churches. I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, And the bright morning starre.

17 And the spirit and the bride say, Come, And let him that heareth say also, Come. And let him that is a thirst, Come. And whosoeuer will, let him take of the water of life freely.

18 I testifie vnto euery man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this booke. If any man shall adde vnto these sayings, GOD shall adde vnto him the plagues that are written in this booke.

19 And if any man shall take away frō the words of the booke of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy Citie, and from the things which are written in this

booke.

20 He which testifieth these thinges sayth, surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen so, come Lorde Iesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

# A Table to find the Epistles and *Gospels read in the Church of England*, Whereof the first line is the Epistle, and the other the Gospell.

The first sunday in Aduent.

Owe nothing to, Rom. 13. verse. 8
And when the, Mat. 21. verse. 1

The ii. sunday in Aduent.

For whatsoeuer things, Rom 15.4
And there shall be signes, Luke 21.25

The iii. sunday in Aduent.

Let a man so esteeme of, 1. Cor. 4.1
When Iohn heard the, Mat. 11.2

The iiii. sunday in Aduent.

Reioyce in the Lord, Phil. 4.4
And this is the record, Iohn 1.19

Christmas day.

God which in time past, Heb. 1.1
In the beginning was, Iohn. 1.1

Saint Stevens day

But he being full of the, Acts 7.55
Wherefore behold I, Mat. 23. 34

Saint Iohn Euangelists day.

That which was from, 1. Iohn 1.1
Iesus saith vnto Peter, Iohn 21.19

Innocents day.

And

And I looked and loe. Apoc. 14.1
The Angell of the Lord, Mat.2.13
Sunday after Chriſtmas day.
And I ſay that the heyre, Gal.4.1
This is the booke of the, Mat.1.1
The circumciſion of Chriſt,
Bleſſed is that man to, Rom 4.8
And it came to paſſe as, Luke 2.15
The Epiphanie.
For this cauſe I Paul, Epheſ.3.1
When Jeſus was borne, Mat.2.1
The firſt ſunday after the Epiphany.
I beſeech you therefore, Rom.12.6
The father and mother. Luke 2.42
The ii. ſunday after the Epiphany.
Seeing that we haue, Rom.12.6
And the third day was, John 2.1
The iii. ſunday after the Epiphany.
Be not wiſe in your: Rom. 12.16
When he was come, Mat.8.1
The iiii. ſunday after the Epiphany.
Let every ſoule be ſubiect. Rom.13.1
And when he entred into, Mat.8.23
The v. ſunday after the Epiphany.
Put on therefore as, Coloſ.3.12
The kingdome of heauen, Mat.12 24
On the ſixth ſunday (if there bee ſo many) ſhall haue the ſame Epiſtle and Goſpell, that was appointed for the fifth ſunday.
Septuageſima ſunday.
Know ye that they, 1.Cor.9.24
For the kingdome of, Mat. 20.1
Sexageſima ſunday.
For ye ſuffer fooles, 2.Cor.11 9
When much people, Luke 8.4
Quinquageſima ſunday.
Though I ſpeake with, 1.Cor.13.1
Jeſus tooke vnto him, Luke 18.31
The firſt day of Lent.
Turne you vnto me with all, Ioel.2.12
Mozeoure

Moreouer, when ye fast, Mat.6.16

The first sunday in Lent.

We also as helpers exhort, 2 Cor.6.1
Then was Jesus led vp, Mat 4.1

The ii. sunday in Lent.

Furthermore I beseech, 1. Thes 4.1
And Jesus when he, Mat 15.21

The iii. sunday in Lent.

Be ye therefore followers, Ephe.5.1
And he was casting out, Luke 11,15

The iiii. sunday in Lent.

Tell me ye that desire to, Gal.4 21
Jesus went his way ouer, John 6.1

The v. sunday in Lent.

But Christ being come, Heb.9.11
Which of you rebuketh, Luke 8

Sunday next before Easter.

Let the same minde be, Phil 2.5
And it came to passe when Mat.26.1

Munday next before Easter.

What is he that, Esay 63.1
After two dayes was, Marke 15.1

Tuesday next before Easter.

The Lord God hath Esay 50.5
And anon in the dawning. Marke 14.1

Wednesday next before Easter.

For where a testament is, Heb 9.16
The feast of sweete bread Luke 22.1

Thursday next before Easter.

This I warne you of. 1. Cor.11.17
And the whole multitude. Luke 23.1

On good Friday.

For the law hauing the, Heb.10.1
When Jesus had spoken. John 18.1

Easter euen.

For it is better, if the will 1 Pet 3.17
When the euen was, Mat.27.57

Easter day.

If ye then be risen with, Col.3.1
The first day of the John 20.1

Munday

Munday in Easter weeke.

| | |
|---|---|
| Then Peter opened his, | Acts 10.34 |
| And behold, two of, | Luke 24.13 |

Tuesday in Easter weeke

| | |
|---|---|
| Ye men and brethren, | Acts 13.26 |
| Jesus himselfe stood in, | Luke 24.37 |

The first sunday after Easter

| | |
|---|---|
| For all that is borne of, | 1. John. 5.4 |
| The same day at night, | John 20.19 |

The ii. sunday after Easter

| | |
|---|---|
| For it is thanke worthy, | 1. Pet. 2.19 |
| I am the good shepheard, | John 10.11 |

The iii. sunday after Easter.

| | |
|---|---|
| Deerely beloued, I | 1. Pet. 2.11 |
| After a while, and ye, | John 16.16 |

The iiii. sunday after Easter

| | |
|---|---|
| Euery good gyuing, | James 1.17 |
| But now I go my, | John 16.5 |

The v. sunday after Easter

| | |
|---|---|
| And ye be doers of the, | James 1.22 |
| Verily, verily I say, | John 16.23 |

Ascention day.

| | |
|---|---|
| The former booke haue I, | Acts 1.1 |
| Afterward he appeared | Mat. 16.14 |

Sunday after Ascention day.

| | |
|---|---|
| The end of all things is, | 1. Pet. 4.7 |
| But when the comforter | John 15.26 |

Whitsunday.

| | |
|---|---|
| And when the day of, | Acts 2.1 |
| If ye loue me, keepe my, | John 14.15 |

Munday in Whitsun weeke.

| | |
|---|---|
| Then Peter opened his, | Acts 10.34 |
| For God so loued the, | John 3.16 |

Tuesday in Whitsun weeke

| | |
|---|---|
| When the Apostles which, | Acts 8.14 |
| Verily, verily I say vnto, | John 10.1 |

Trinity sunday

| | |
|---|---|
| After this I looked and, | Apoc. 4.1 |
| There was a man of the | John 3.1 |

The first sunday after Trinity


Deerely

Dearely beloued, let vs 1. Iohn 4.7
There was a certaine. Luke 16.19
The second sunday after Trinity.
Marualle not my bre. 1. Iohn 2.12
A certaine man ordayned. Luke 14.16
The iii. sunday after Trinity.
Submit your selues. 1. Pet. 5.5
Then resorted vnto him. Luke 15.1
The iiii. sunday after Trinity.
For I am certainly per. Rom 8.18
Be ye therefore mercifull. Luke 6.36
The v. sunday after Trinity.
In conclusion, be ye all of. 1. Pet. 3.8
And it came to passe that when. Luke 5.1
The vi sunday after Trinity.
Know ye not that all we. Rom. 6.3
For I say vnto you, Matt. 5.20
The vii. sunday after Trinity.
I speake after the manner. Rom. 6.19
In those dayes the Marke 8.1
The viii. sunday after Trinity.
Therefore brethren we are Rom. 8.12
Beware of false Prophets Matt. 7.15
The ix. sunday after Trinity.
Brethren I would not 1. Cor. 10.1
And he said vnto his Luke 16.1
The x. sunday after Trinity.
Concerning spirituall 1 Cor. 12 1
And when he was come Luke 19.11
The xi sunday after Trinity.
Moreouer, brethren I, 1. Cor, 15.1
And he told this parable, Luke 18.9
The xii. sunday after Trinity.
Such trust haue we, 2. Cor. 3.4
And when he was departed. Matt. 7.1
The xiii. sunday after trinity.
To Abraham and his Gal 3,16
Happy are the eyes. Luke 10.23
The xiiii. sunday after trinity.
Then I say, walke in the, Gal. 5.16

And

And so it was as he went, Luke 17.11
The xv. sunday after trinity.
Ye see how large a letter, Gal.6.11
No man can serue two, Matt.6,24
The xvi sunday after trinity.
Wherefore I desire that, Ephes 3.13
And it came to passe, Luke 7.11
The xvii sunday after trinity.
I therefore a prisoner in, Eph.4,1
And it came to passe as, Luke 14.1
The xviii sunday after trinity.
I thanke my God alwayes. 1.Cor.1.1
But when they Pharisees, Matt.22.34
The xix. sunday after trinity.
This I say therefore, and Ephes.4.17
And he entred into a Matt.9.1
The xx. sunday after trinity.
Take heede therefore, Ephes.4,15
The kingdome of hea. Matt.22,1
The xxi. sunday after trinity.
Finally my brethren be, Ephes.6 10
And there was a cer. John 4.46
The xxii sunday after trinity.
I thanke my God with, Phil.1.3
Then came Peter vnto Matt.18.21
The xxiii. sunday after trinity.
Brethren be you followers, Phil.3.17
Then went the Phari. Matt.22.15
The xxiiii. sunday after trinity.
We giue thankes to God, Col.1.3
While he spake these, Matt.9,18
The xxv. sunday after trinity.
Behold the time commeth Iere.23.5
When Iesus then lift vp. John 6.5

If there be any moe sundayes before Aduent sunday to supply the same shalbe taken the seruice of some of those sundayes that were omitted betweene the Epiphany and Septuagesima.

Here endeth the table of the Epistles and Gospels for the Sundaies.

Here

# Here followeth the Table of the *Epistles and Gospels, which are vsed* to be read on diuers Saintes dayes in the yeare.


Saint Andrewes day.

For if thou shalt know, Rom. 10,9
And Iesus walking by. Mat. 4,18

Saint Thomas Apostle.

Now therefore ye are, Ephes. 2,19
But Thomas one of, Iohn 20,24

Conuersion of S. Paule.

And Saul yet breathing, Actes 9 1
Then answered Peter, Matt. 9 27

Purification of S. Mary the virgin

The same Epistle appointed the Sunday before.
And when the day of her Luke 2,22

Saint Matthias day.

And in those dayes Peter, Acts 1,15
At that time Iesus. Matt. 11,15

Annuntiation of the virgin Mary.

Moreouer God spake. Esay 7,10
And in the sixt moneth Luke 1,26

Saint Markes day.

But vnto euery one of vs. Ephes. 4,7
I am the true vine and my Iohn 15.1

Saint Phillip and Iames day.

Iames the seruant of. Iames 1.1
And he said vnto his. Iohn 14 1

Saint Barnabe the Apostle.

Then ridinge of those. Actes 12,1
This is my commaund. Iohn 15,12

Saint Iohn Baptist.

Comfort my people (O ye. Esay 40,1
Elizabeths time came. Luke 1,57

Saint Peters day.

At the same time Herod. Actes 12,1
When Iesus came in. Matt, 16,13

Saint

Saint Iames Apoſtle.

In thoſe dayes came, Actes 11,27
Then came to him the. Matt. 20,20

Saint Bartholomew Apoſtle.

And by the hands of the. Actes 5,12
And there was a ſtrife. Luke 22,24

Saint Matthew Apoſtle.

Therefore ſeeing that we. 2. Cor. 4,1
And as Ieſus paſſed forth. Matt. 9,9

Saint Michaell and all Angels.

And there was a great, Apoc. 12,7
At the ſame time came. Matt. 18,1

Saint Luke Euangeliſt.

But watch thou in all. 2. Tim. 4,5
After theſe thinges the. Luke 10,1

Simon and Iude Apoſtles.

Iude the ſeruant of Ieſus. Iude 1,1
This commaund I you. Iohn 15,17

All Saints day

And I ſaw an other angell. Apoc. 7,2
When he ſaw the multitude. Matt. 5,1

FINIS.